

the living and dead prince





# **The Living**

and Dead

# **Prince**

a collaborative novel

by Nicolo Machiavelli,

Luigi Ricci,

W. K. Marriott,

Gemini,

and Edward Wells

for nanogenmo 2025

published by pleasepress



## **Table of Contents**

Table of Contents .....	5
CHAPTER I .....	10
CHAPTER II .....	16
CHAPTER III .....	26
CHAPTER IV .....	128
CHAPTER V .....	161
CHAPTER VI .....	177
CHAPTER VII .....	221
CHAPTER VIII .....	313
CHAPTER IX .....	366
CHAPTER X .....	412
CHAPTER XI .....	438
CHAPTER XII .....	468
CHAPTER XIII .....	531
CHAPTER XIV .....	570
CHAPTER XV .....	601
CHAPTER XVI .....	619
CHAPTER XVII .....	649
CHAPTER XVIII .....	687

CHAPTER XIX .....	724
CHAPTER XX.....	843
CHAPTER XXI .....	899
CHAPTER XXII.....	944
CHAPTER XXIII.....	961
CHAPTER XXIV .....	987
CHAPTER XXV.....	1006
CHAPTER XXVI .....	1048

# THE PRINCE



22 November 2025

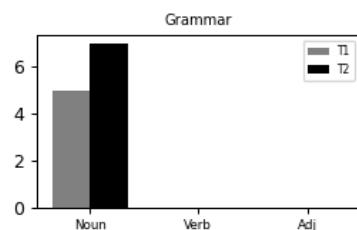
Herein is a completed draft manuscript of a touch analysis of two translations of *The Prince* by Nicolo Machiavelli, one by W. K. Marriott and the other by Luigi Ricci.

The work uses a chapter-bound convergence/divergence analysis. Convergent text blocks ( $\geq 2$  words) appear centered. Divergent text from the two translations of *The Prince* appears in two columns and are followed by NLP-based analysis.

# CHAPTER I

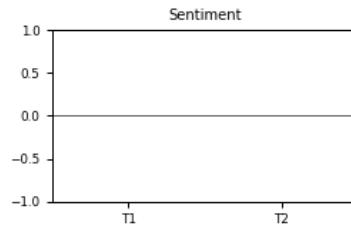
# THE VARIOUS KINDS OF GOVERNMENT AND THE WAYS BY WHICH PRINCIPALITIES THERE ARE, AND BY WHAT MEANS

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



and dominions which hold or , all powers, that

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



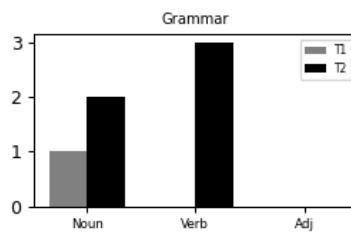
have held

sway over mankind

and hold rule over men have been

and

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



are

either republics or

monarchies. Monarchies

principalities.

Principalities

are either hereditary

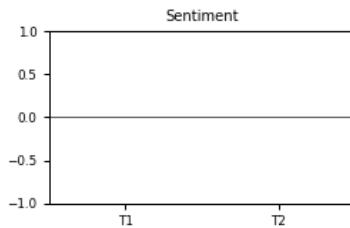
ones,

,

in which the

rulers have been for many years of the same family has been long family, or established; or else

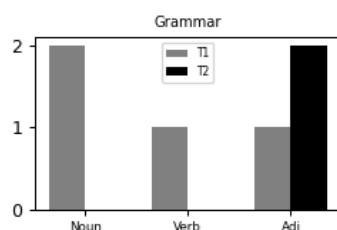
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



they are

those of recent foundation. The newly new.  
founded ones The new

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



are

either entirely new, as was Milan to Francesco Sforza, or

else

they

are, as it were

, new members grafted on

, members annexed

to the hereditary

possessions

state

of the prince

that annexes

who has acquired

them, as

is

was

the kingdom of Naples to

that of

the

King of Spain

. The

.

Such

dominions thus acquired

have either been previously

accustomed to

are either

the rule of another

live under a

prince, or

else have been free

to live in freedom; and are acquired

states, and they are annexed

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



either by

force of

the

## arms of the prince

,

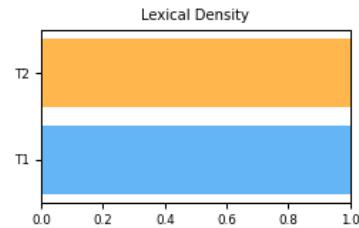
himself,

or

of others, or else

fall to him by good by

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



fortune or

merit. by ability.

## CHAPTER II

OF HEREDITARY MONARCHIES

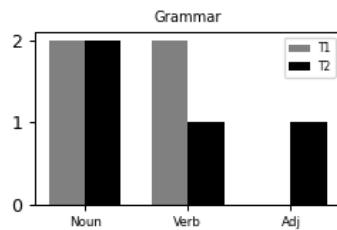
CONCERNING HEREDITARY  
PRINCIPALITIES

I will

not here speak of republics, having already  
treated of them  
fully

leave out all discussion on republics,  
inasmuch as

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

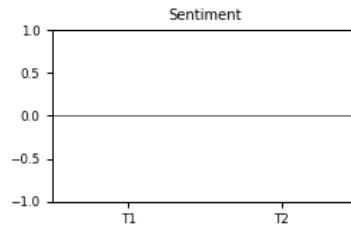


in another place. I

will deal only with monarchies,

have written of them at length,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

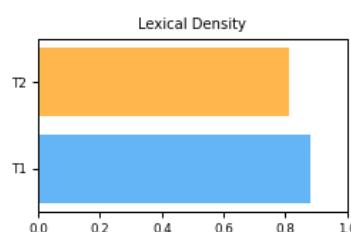


and will

show address myself only to  
how the various kinds described above can principalities. In doing so I will keep to the  
be governed and maintained. order indicated above,  
In the first place, in and discuss how such principalities are to be  
ruled and preserved.

I say at once there are fewer difficulties in holding

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



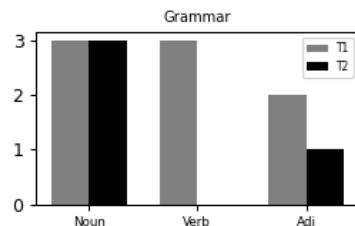
hereditary states

, and those long

accustomed to the

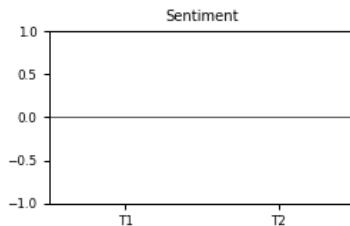
reigning family of their prince, than  
 family the difficulty of maintaining them is new ones;  
 far less than in new  
 monarchies;

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



for it is sufficient  
 only  
 not to  
 exceed the ancestral usages, transgress the customs of  
 his ancestors,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

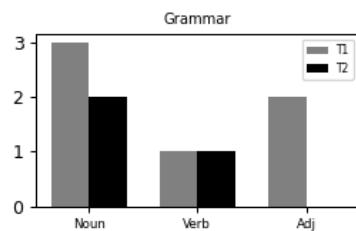


and to

accommodate one's self to accidental  
circumstances; in this way  
such

deal prudently with circumstances as they  
arise,  
for

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

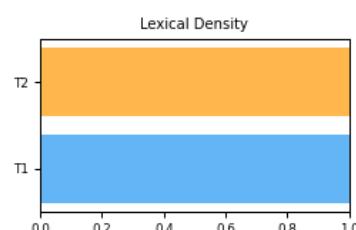


a prince

, if of ordinary ability, will always be able

of average powers

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to maintain

his position, unless some very exceptional

himself in his state, unless

he be deprived of it by some extraordinary

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

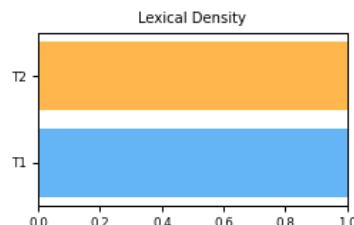


and excessive force

deprives ; and

him of it; and even

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



if he

be thus should be so

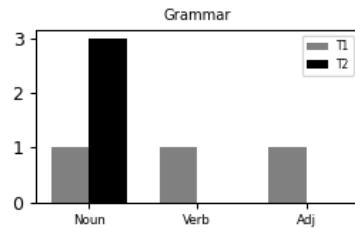
deprived of it

, on the slightest

, whenever anything sinister happens

misfortune happening

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to the

new occupier,

usurper,

he will

be able to

regain it.

We have in Italy

the example of

, for example,

the Duke of Ferrara, who

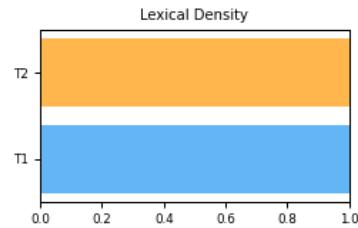
was able

could not have

to withstand the assaults

withstood the attacks

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of the Venetians in

the year '84, and

'84, nor those

of

Pope Julius in

the year '10, for no other reason than because

'10, unless he had been long established in

of the

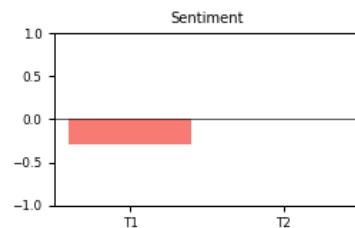
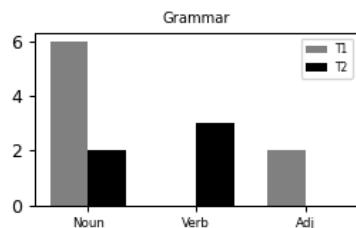
his dominions. For the

antiquity of his family in that dominion. In as

hereditary

much as the legitimate

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



prince has less cause and less necessity to

give offence, it is only offend; hence it  
natural happens

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



that he

should will

be more loved; and

, if no unless  
extraordinary vices

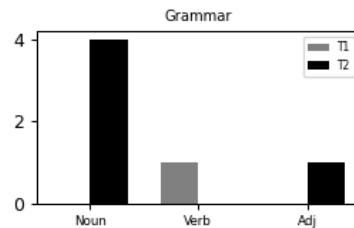
make him cause him to be  
hated, it is

only reasonable for reasonable to expect that  
his subjects

to will  
be naturally

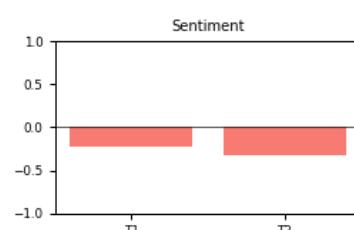
attached to him, well disposed towards him; and in the antiquity and duration of his rule

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the memories and causes of innovations being forgotten motives that make for change are in the long period over which his rule has lost, for existed; whereas

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

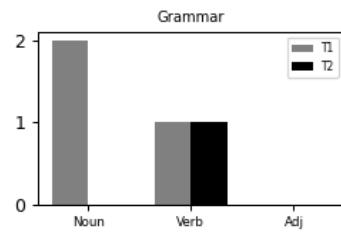


one change  
always leaves the

way prepared for the introduction of another.

toothing for another.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



## CHAPTER III

OF MIXED MONARCHIES

CONCERNING MIXED PRINCIPALITIES

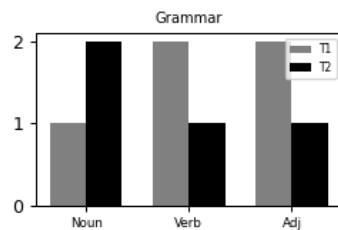
But it is in the new monarchy that difficulties

But the difficulties occur in a new

really exist.

principality. And

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



Firstly,

if it

is

be

not entirely new, but

a member

is,

as it were

, a member

of a

mixed state,

state which, taken

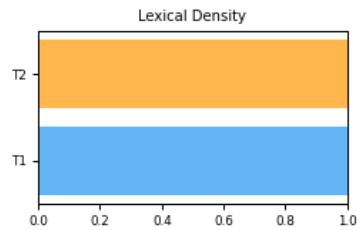
its disorders spring at first from a natural

collectively, may be called composite, the

changes arise chiefly from

an inherent

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



difficulty which

exists

there is

in all new

dominions, because

principalities; for

men change

masters

their rulers

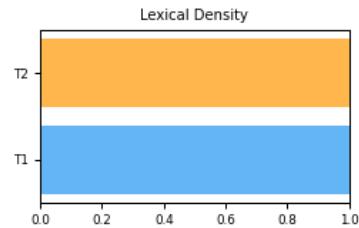
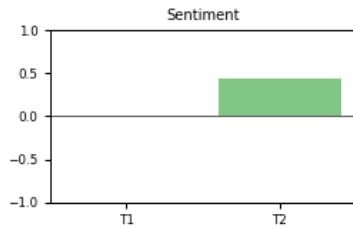
willingly, hoping to

better themselves; and this

belief makes them take

hope induces them to take up

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



arms against

their

him who rules: wherein

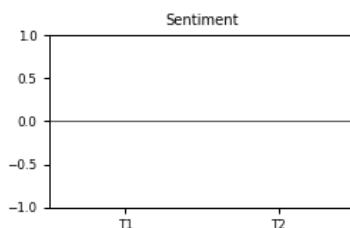
rulers, in which

they are deceived

, as experience shows them that

, because they afterwards find by experience

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



they

have gone from bad to worse. This

is the result of another very natural cause, which is the necessary harm inflicted on those over whom the prince obtains dominion, both by his soldiers and by an infinite number of other injuries unavoidably caused by his occupation.

Thus you find

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



enemies in all those whom you have injured

by occupying

that dominion,

in

seizing that principality, and you are not able

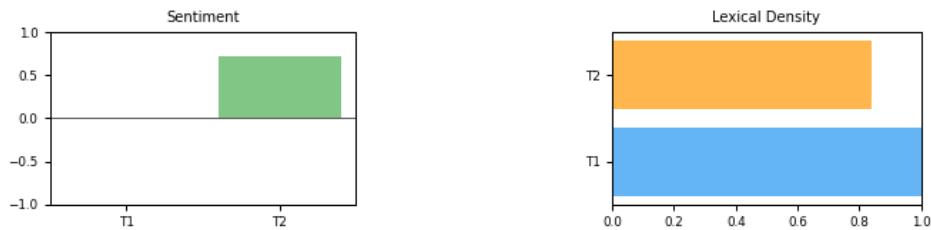
to keep those friends

who put you there because of your not being

able to satisfy them in the

way they expected,

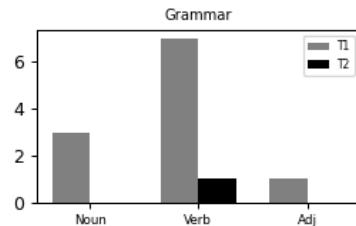
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



and you cannot

maintain the friendship of those who have take  
helped you to obtain this possession, as you  
will not be able to fulfil  
their expectations, nor can you use

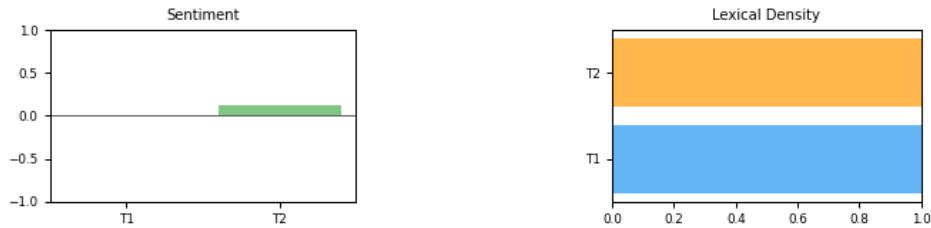
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



strong measures

with them, being against them,  
under an obligation feeling bound

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to them; for

which reason, however strong your , although one  
armies

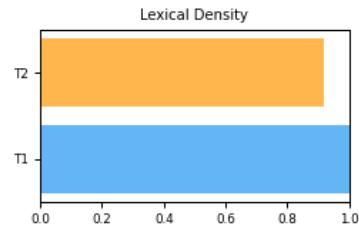
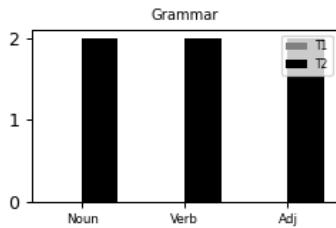
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



may be

, you will very strong in armed  
forces, yet in entering a province one has

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



always need

the favour

of the

inhabitants to

goodwill

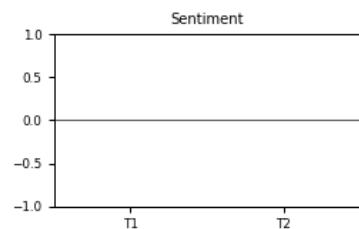
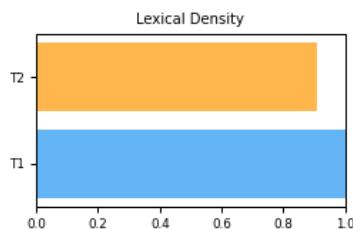
take possession of a province. It was from

of the natives.

these causes that Louis XII.

For these reasons Louis the Twelfth, King

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



of France

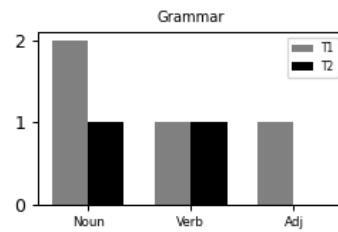
, though able to occupy Milan without

, quickly occupied

trouble, immediately

Milan, and as quickly

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



lost it, and

the forces of Ludovico alone were sufficient to turn him out  
to take it  
from him

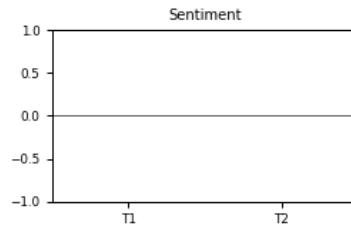
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the first time

, for the inhabitants it  
only needed Lodovico's own forces; because  
those

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



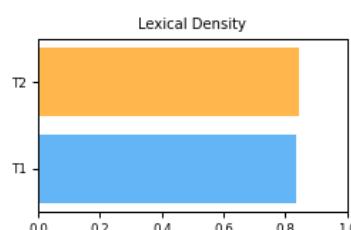
who had

willingly opened the  
their

gates to him, finding themselves

deluded in the hopes they had deceived in their hopes of future  
cherished and not obtaining those benefits benefit, would not endure the ill-treatment of  
that they had anticipated, the  
could not bear the vexatious rule of their

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



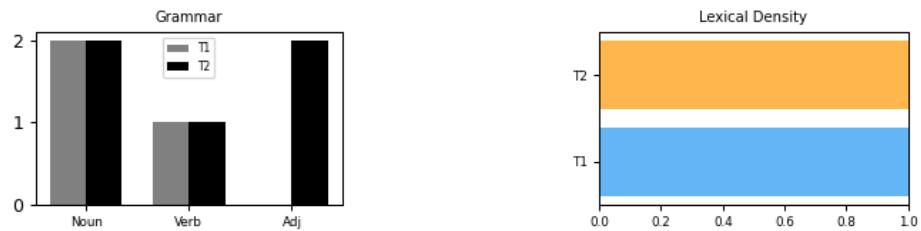
new prince.

It is

indeed very  
true that, after

reconquering the rebel territories acquiring rebellious provinces a second time,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



they

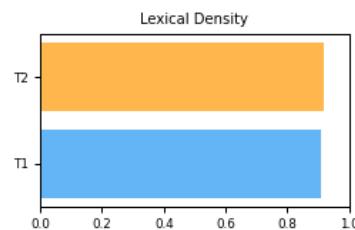
are not so

easily lost again, for the ruler is now, by the fact lightly lost afterwards, because the prince, with

lightly lost afterwards, because the prince,  
with

little reluctance, takes the opportunity

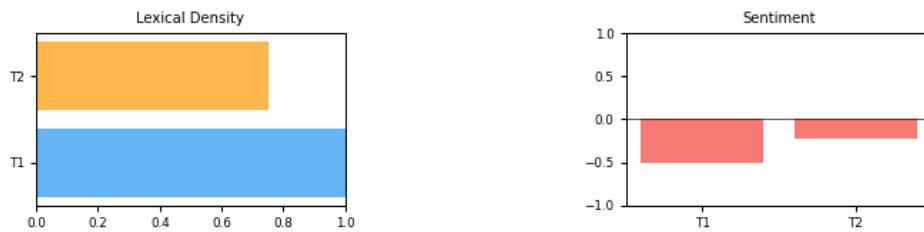
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of the  
rebellion

, less averse to secure his position by to punish the  
punishing offenders, delinquents, to clear out the suspects, and to  
investigating any suspicious circumstances, strengthen  
and strengthening

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

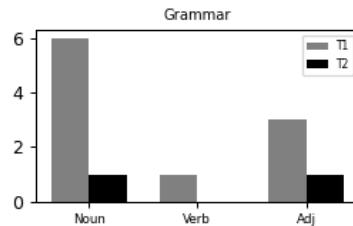


himself

in

weak places. So that although the mere the weakest places. Thus  
appearance of such a person  
as Duke Ludovico on the frontier was  
sufficient

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



to cause France to lose

Milan the first time

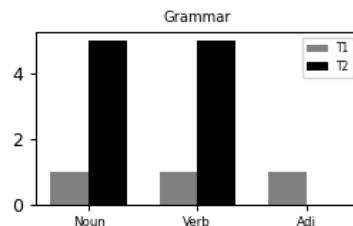
, to make her lose her grip of it the

it was enough for the Duke Lodovico[1] to

raise insurrections on the

borders; but to cause him to lose it a

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



second time

was only possible when all the world was

it was necessary to

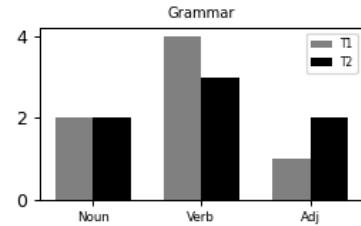
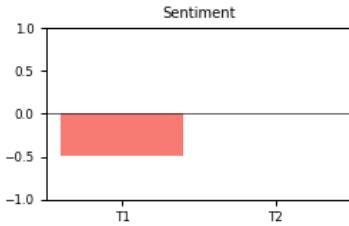
against her, and after her

bring the whole world against him, and that

enemies had been

his armies should be

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



defeated and driven out of Italy; which

was the result

followed from

of

the causes above mentioned

. Nevertheless it

[1] Duke Lodovico was Lodovico Moro, a

son of Francesco Sforza, who

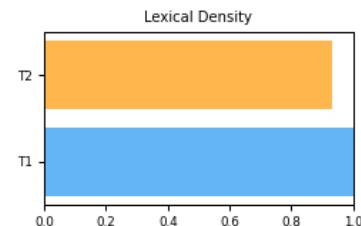
married Beatrice d'Este. He ruled over

Milan from 1494 to 1500, and

died in 1510.

Nevertheless Milan

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



was taken from

her

France

both

the first and the second time. The general

causes of

reasons for

the first

loss

have been

already

discussed; it remains

now to be seen what were the

to name those for

causes of

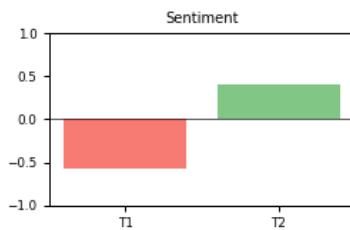
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the second

loss and by what means France could have avoided it, or what measures might have been taken by another ruler in that position which were not taken by , and to see what resources he had, and what any one in his situation would have had for maintaining himself more securely in his acquisition than did

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the King of France

. Be it observed,

therefore,

Now I say

that those

states which on annexation are united to a

dominions which, when acquired, are added

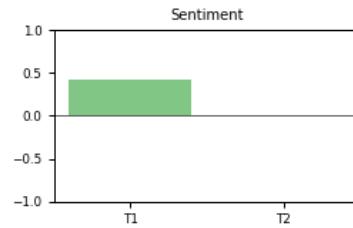
previously existing state may or may not be

to an

ancient state by him who acquires them, are

either

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of the same

nationality

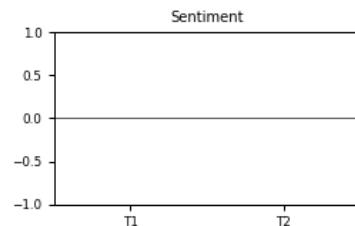
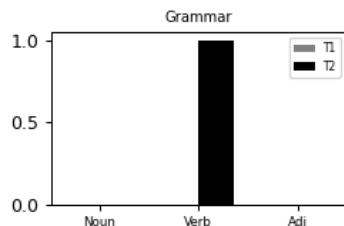
country

and language

. If

, or they are not. When

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



they are, it is

very easy

easier

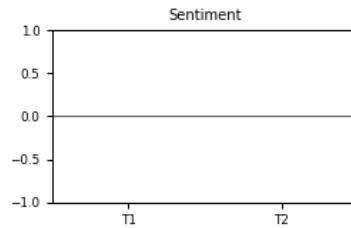
to hold them, especially

if

when they have not been

they are not

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



accustomed to

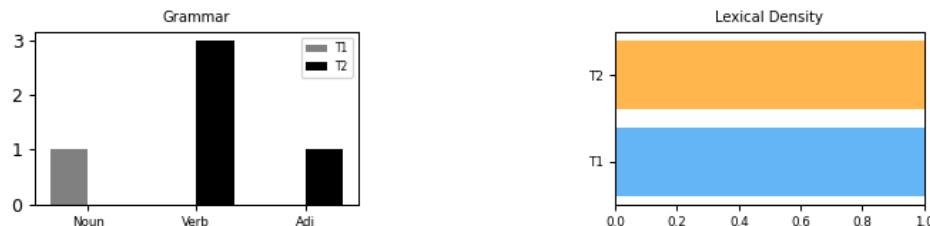
freedom; self-government;

and to

possess hold  
them securely it

suffices that is enough to have destroyed

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the family of the

princes which formerly governed them  
be extinct. For the rest, their old condition

prince who was ruling them; because the two  
peoples, preserving in  
other things the old conditions, and

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

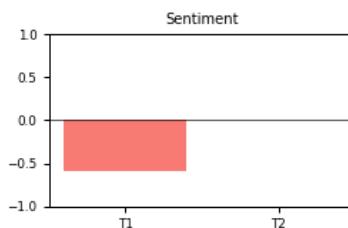


not being

disturbed, and  
there being no dissimilarity of customs, the  
people settle down quietly  
under their new rulers, as is

unlike in customs, will  
live quietly together, as one has

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

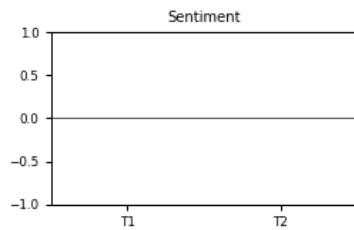
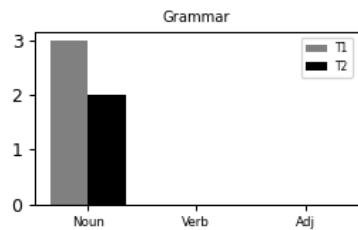


seen in

the case of Burgundy, Brittany,

Brittany, Burgundy,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



Gascony, and Normandy, which have been

bound to France for

so long

united to France;

a time:

and

although there may be some

slight differences of language,

difference in language, nevertheless

the customs

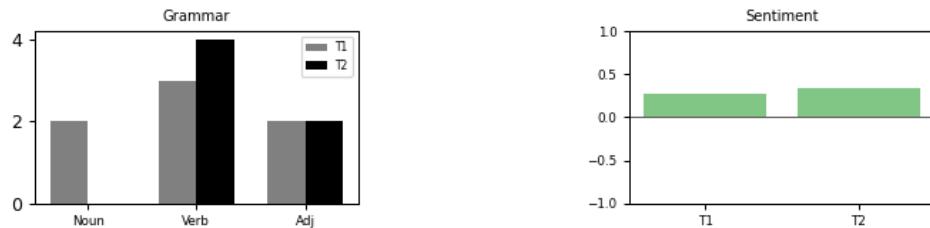
of

are alike, and

the people

are nevertheless similar, and they can get along well together, and whoever obtains possession of them and

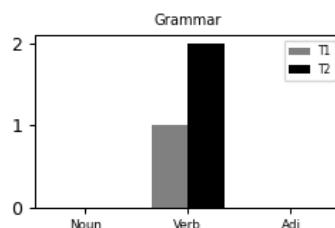
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



wishes to

retain hold them, has  
them must only to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



bear in mind two

things: considerations:  
the one, that the

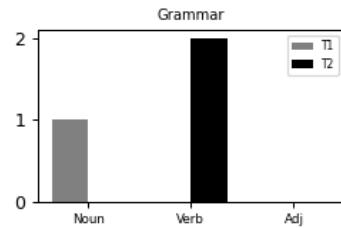
blood family  
 of their  
  
 old former lord is extinguished;  
 rulers is extinct;  
 the other  
  
 , to make no alteration either in , that neither

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



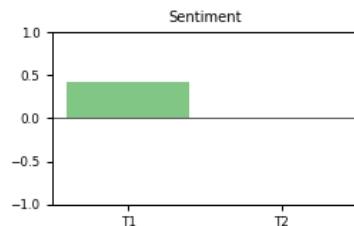
their  
 laws  
  
 or in nor  
 their taxes  
  
 ; in this way they will are altered, so that

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



in a very short  
space of time they will  
time become united with their old  
become entirely one body with the old  
possessions and form one state.  
principality.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



But  
when  
  
dominions states  
are acquired in a

## province

## country

differing in language

, laws,

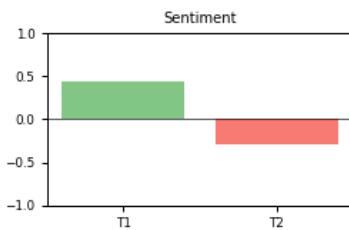
,

and customs, the difficulties to be overcome

customs, or laws, there are difficulties, and

are great, and it requires

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



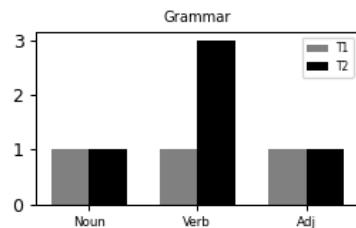
good fortune

as well as great industry to retain them;

and great

energy are needed to hold them, and

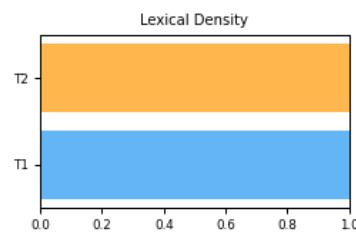
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



one of the

best	greatest
	and most
certain means of doing so	real
	helps

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



would be	
for the new ruler to take	that he who has acquired them should go and
up his residence in them.	reside
	there.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



This would

render their possession

make his position

more

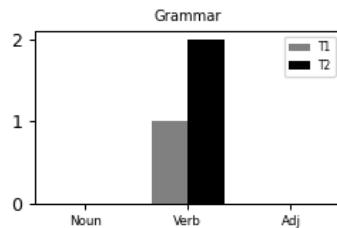
secure and durable

, it is what

, as it has

made that of

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the Turk

has done

in Greece

; in spite of

, who, notwithstanding

all the other measures taken by him

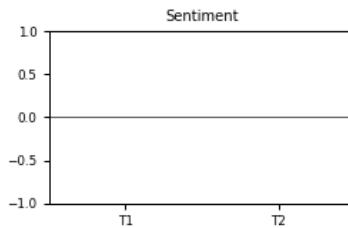
to hold

for holding

that state

, it , if he had not settled  
there,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

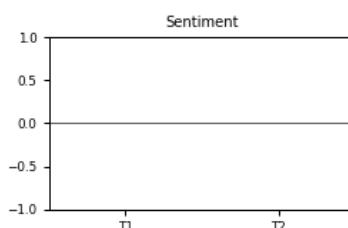


would not

have been

possible to retain it had he not gone to live able to keep it. Because, if one is  
there. Being

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



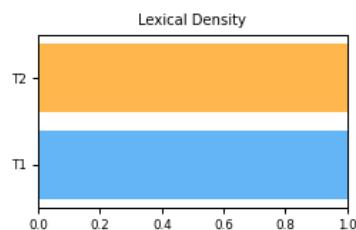
on the spot, disorders

can be are  
seen as they

arise and spring up, and one  
can quickly

be remedy  
remedied, but living at a distance, them; but if one is not at hand,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



they are

only heard of

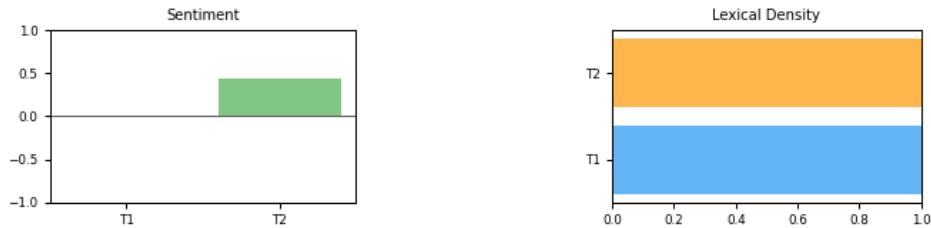
only

when they

get beyond remedy. Besides which, the are  
province great, and then one can no longer remedy  
them. Besides this, the

country

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



is not

despoiled

pillaged

by

your officials, the subjects are

pleased with the easy accessibility

satisfied

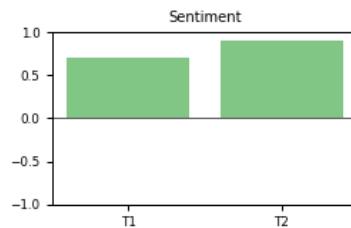
of their prince;

by prompt recourse to the prince; thus,

wishing to be good, they have

more cause to love him,

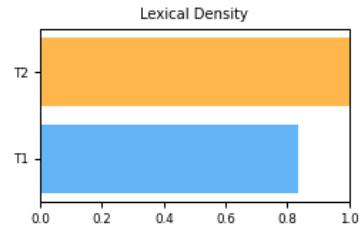
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



and wishing to be

loyal they have more reason to love otherwise,  
him, and should they be otherwise they will  
have greater cause

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to fear

him

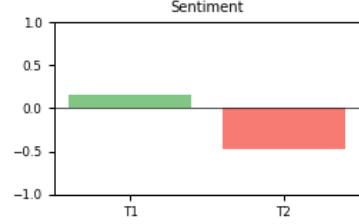
. He

Any external Power who wishes to assail  
who would attack

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

A bar chart titled "Sentiment" with a y-axis labeled "10". The x-axis categories are "Positive", "Neutral", and "Negative". The "Positive" bar reaches approximately 8.5, the "Neutral" bar reaches 10, and the "Negative" bar reaches approximately 1.5.

Sentiment	Value
Positive	~8.5
Neutral	10
Negative	~1.5

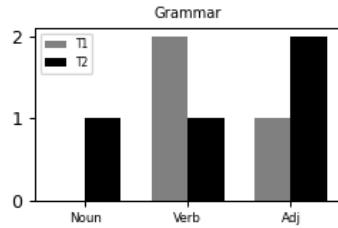


that state

will be less  
disposed to do so; so that

from the outside must have the utmost  
caution;

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



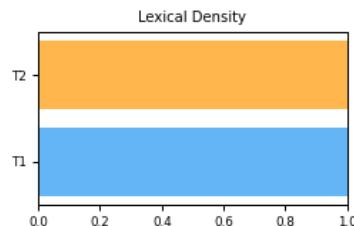
as long as

he  
resides there

the prince

he will be very  
hard to dispossess.  
it can only be wrested  
from him with the greatest difficulty.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



The other and better

remedy course

is to

plant colonies send colonies to

in

one or two

of those

places which

form as it were the keys of the may be as keys to that state,  
land,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



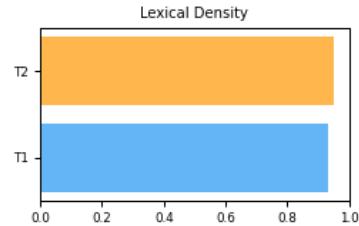
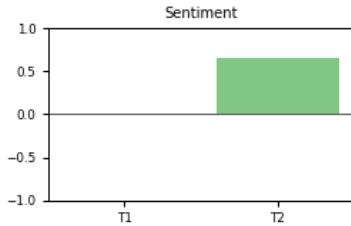
for it is necessary either to do this or

to maintain a large else to keep there a great number of cavalry  
force of armed men. The colonies will cost and infantry. A

the prince little;

prince does not spend much on colonies, for

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



with

little or no expense

on his part,

he can send

and maintain them; he

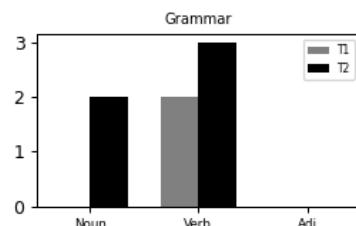
them out and keep them there, and he offends

only injures those whose

a minority

only of the citizens from whom he takes

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



lands and houses

are taken

to give

them

to the new

inhabitants, and

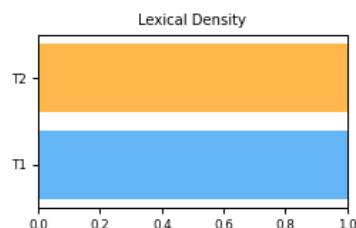
these form but a small proportion of the state,

those whom he offends,

and

those who are injured,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



remaining poor and scattered

, can never do any

, are never able to injure him; whilst the rest

harm to him, and all the others are, on the

being

one hand, not injured and

uninjured are easily kept quiet, and at the

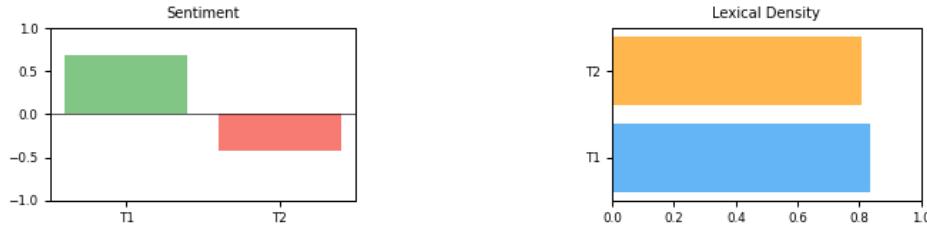
therefore easily pacified; and, on the other,

same time are anxious not

are fearful of offending  
lest they should be treated like

to err for fear it should happen to them as it  
has to

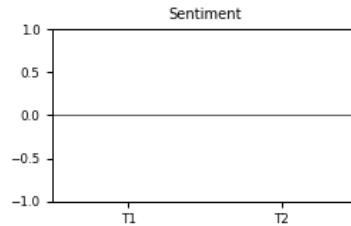
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



those who have been  
dispossessed of  
their property. To conclude,

despoiled. In conclusion, I say that

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



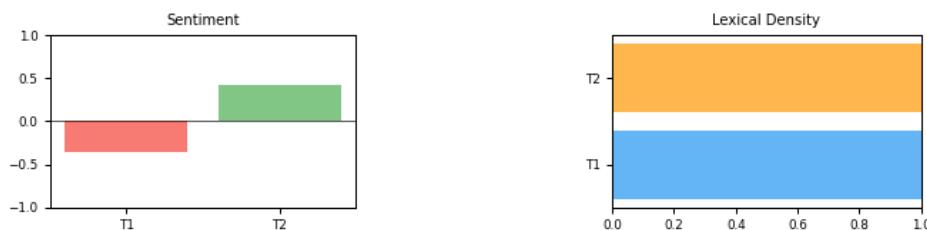
these colonies  
cost nothing,  
are more  
faithful  
are not  
costly, they

, and give less offence; , they injure less,  
and the injured

parties , as  
has been said,  
being poor  
and scattered

are unable to do mischief, as I have shown. , cannot hurt. Upon this, one  
For it must has to remark  
be noted,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

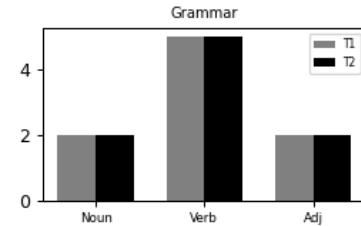
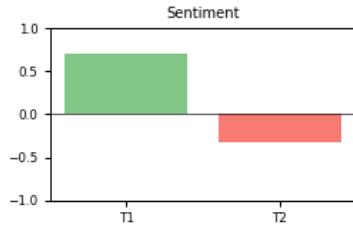


that men  
must either be caressed or else annihilated; ought either to be well treated or crushed,  
they because they can avenge themselves of  
will revenge themselves for small injuries, lighter injuries, of more serious

but cannot do so for great  
ones;

ones they cannot; therefore

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.

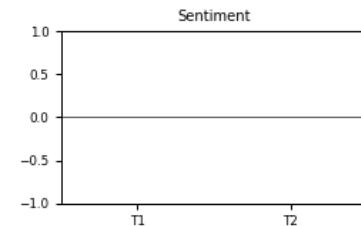
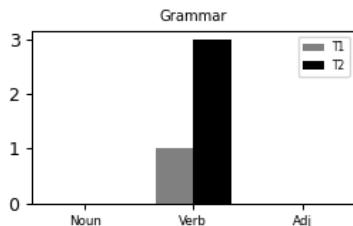


the injury

therefore that we do

that is to be done

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



to a man

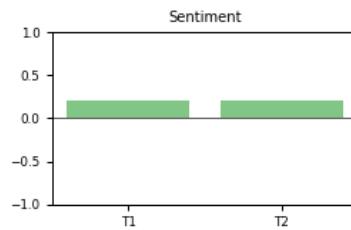
must be such that we

ought to be of such a kind that one does not

need not fear his vengeance. But by  
maintaining a garrison instead of  
colonists, one will spend

stand in fear of revenge.  
But in maintaining armed men there in place  
of colonies one spends

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

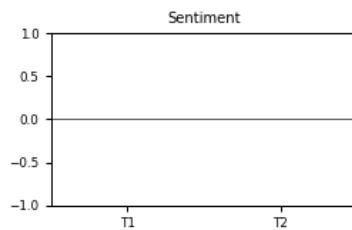
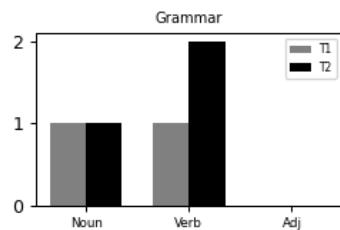


much more

, and consume in guarding it

, having to consume on the garrison

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



all

the

revenues of that

income from the

state, so that the acquisition

will result in

turns into

a loss

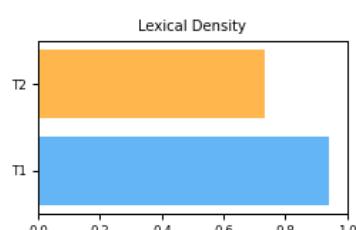
, besides giving much greater offence, since , and many more are it injures every exasperated, because the whole state is one in that state with the quartering injured; through the shifting

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of the  
army on it; which being garrison up and down all become acquainted  
an inconvenience felt, by all, every one with hardship, and  
becomes an enemy, and these all become hostile, and they

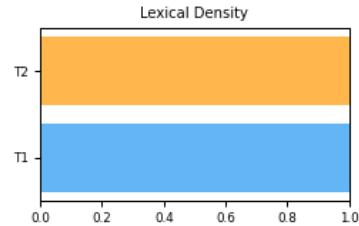
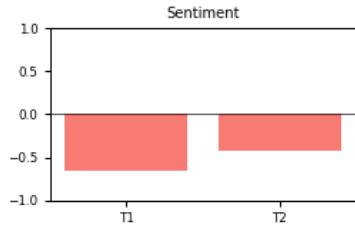
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



are enemies

which can do mischief, as, though beaten,  
they remain in

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



their own

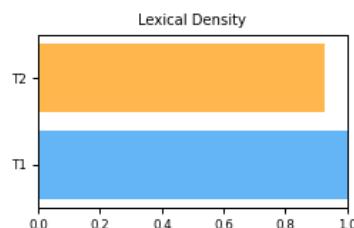
homes. In every way, therefore, a garrison is

ground, are yet able to do hurt. For every

reason, therefore, such

guards are

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



as useless

as

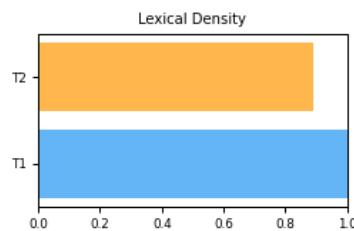
colonies are useful. Further, the ruler of a

a colony is useful.

foreign province as  
described, should

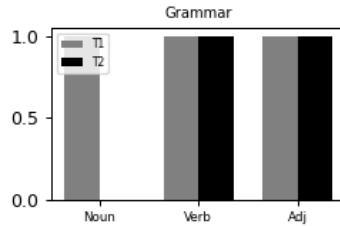
Again, the prince who holds a country  
differing in the above respects  
ought to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



make himself the  
leader head  
and defender of his less  
powerful neighbours, and  
endeavour  
to weaken the  
stronger ones, and more powerful amongst them, taking  
take

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



care that

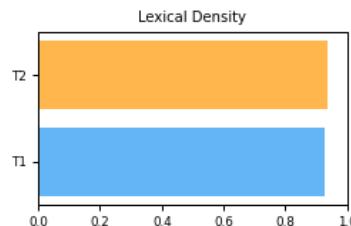
his possessions are not entered by some  
foreigner not

less powerful than himself, who

no foreigner as powerful as himself shall, by  
any accident, get a

footing there; for it

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



will always

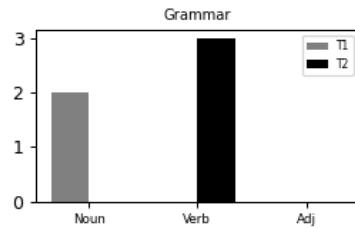
intervene at the request

of

happen that such a one will be

introduced by

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



those who are discontented either through

excess of

ambition or

through

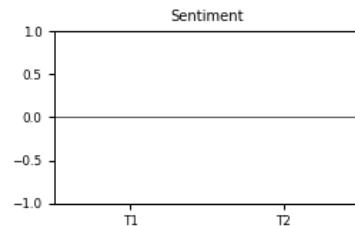
fear, as

was

one has seen already.

seen when the *Aetoli* invited

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the Romans

were

brought

into Greece

;

by the *Ætolians*;

and in

whatever

every other country where

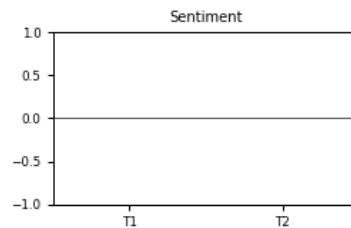
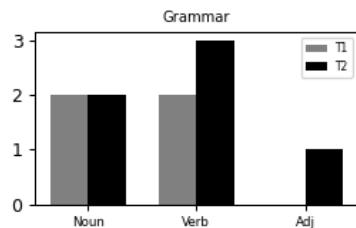
province they entered, it was always at the

they obtained a footing they were brought in

request of

by

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the inhabitants.

And the

rule

usual course of affairs

is that

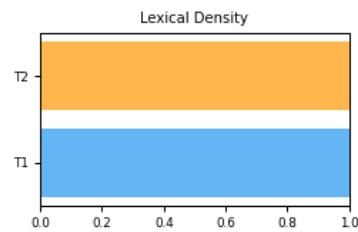
when

, as soon as

a powerful foreigner enters a

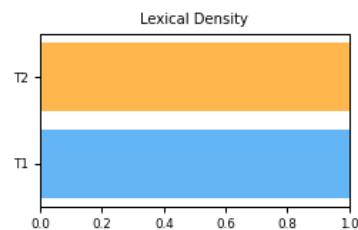
province,  
 country,  
 all  
 the  
 less powerful inhabitants become his  
 subject states are drawn to him,  
 adherents,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



moved by the  
 envy  
 they bear  
 hatred which they feel against the ruling  
 power. So that in respect

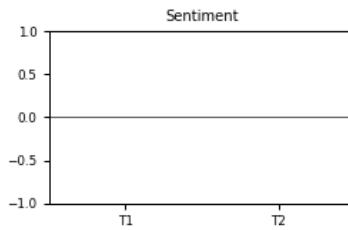
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to those

ruling over them; so much so that with regard to these minor potentates subject states

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



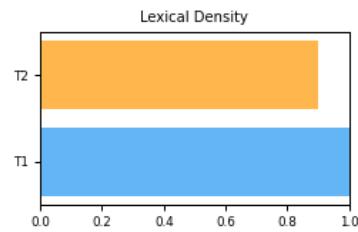
he has  
no trouble whatever in winning not to take any trouble to gain

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



them over  
, to himself, for the whole of them quickly  
for they willingly join forces with rally to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the state

that

which

he has acquired

.

there.

He has

merely to be careful

only to take care

that they do not

assume

get hold

of

too much power

and

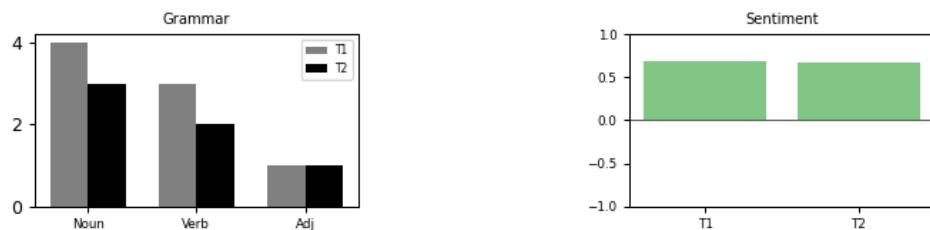
too much

authority, and

he can easily then  
with his own forces and

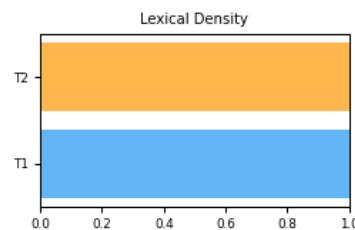
their favour with their goodwill, he can easily keep down  
put down those that are powerful and remain the more powerful of  
in everything the arbiter them, so as to remain entirely master in the  
of that province. country.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



And he who does not govern well in this way properly manage this business

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

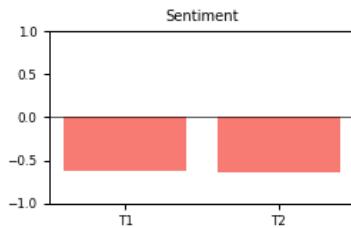


will  
soon lose what he has acquired, and

while he holds it will meet with  
infinite difficulty and trouble.

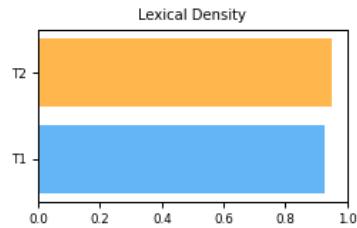
whilst he does hold it he will have endless  
difficulties and  
troubles.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



The Romans in the  
provinces they took, always followed this  
policy; countries which they annexed, observed  
closely these  
they established colonies, flattered the less  
powerful measures; they sent colonies and maintained  
friendly relations with[2]  
the minor powers,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



without  
increasing their strength

, put ; they kept

down the

most powerful greater,

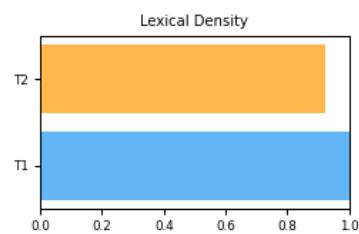
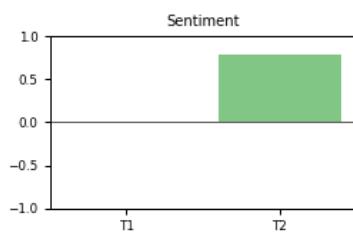
and did not allow

foreign rulers to obtain influence in them. I any strong foreign powers to gain authority.

will let the single Greece appears to me sufficient for

province of Greece suffice as

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

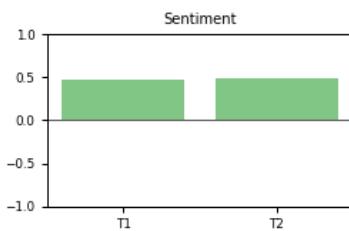


an example

. They made friends with the Achæi and the Ætolis,

. The Achaeans and Ætolians were kept friendly by them,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the kingdom of Macedonia was

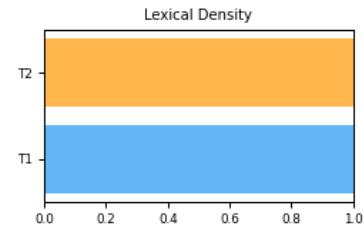
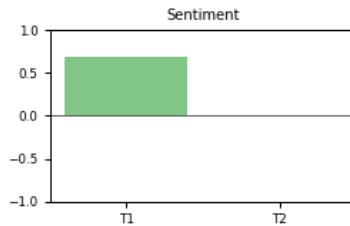
cast down, and  
Antiochus

humbled, Antiochus was  
driven out

, nor did they allow ; yet  
the merits of the

Achæi or the Achaeans and  
Ætolis to gain them any increase of territory, Ætolians never secured for them permission  
to increase their power,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



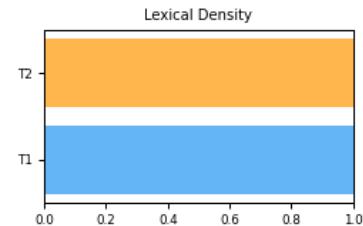
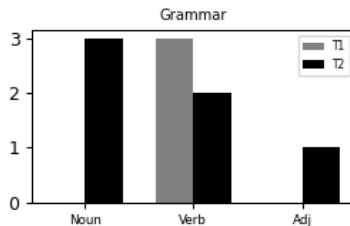
nor did the persuasions

of Philip

induce them to befriend him without  
lowering

ever induce the Romans to be his friends  
without first humbling

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



him, nor

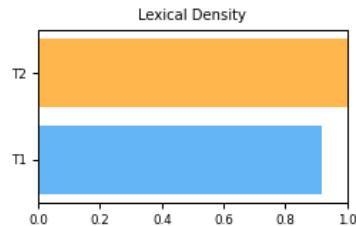
could  
the power  
of Antiochus make them

consent to allow him to hold any state  
agree that he should retain any lordship over

in that province.

For

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the Romans did in

this case

these instances

what all

wise princes should

prudent princes ought to

do, who

look

have to regard

not only

at present dangers

present troubles,

but also

at

future ones

and diligently , for  
 guard against them; for being foreseen they which they must prepare with every energy,  
 can easily be remedied, because, when foreseen, it  
 is easy to remedy them;

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



one waits till they are at hand, you wait until they approach,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the medicine is no longer in  
 time

as because

the malady has become incurable

; it happening with ;

for it happens in

this as

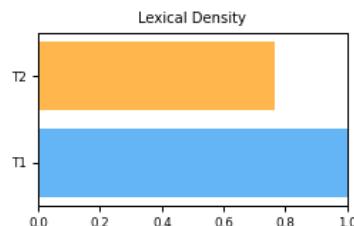
with the physicians say it happens in hectic

those hectic fevers spoken of by doctors, fever, that in the beginning of the malady it is

which at their beginning

are

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



easy to cure but difficult to

recognise, detect,

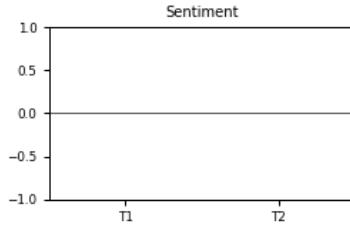
but in

the

course of time

when they have not at first been recognised , not having been either  
and treated, become detected or treated in the beginning, it  
becomes

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



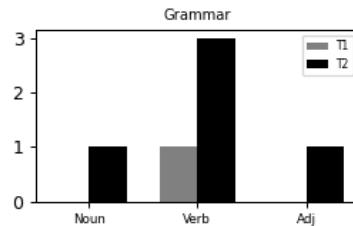
easy  
to  
recognise and detect but  
difficult to cure. Thus it happens in

matters affairs

of  
state; for

knowing afar off ( when the  
evils that arise have been foreseen (

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

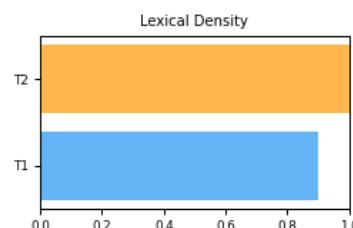


which it is only given to a

prudent wise  
man to

do) the evils that are brewing, they are easily cured.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

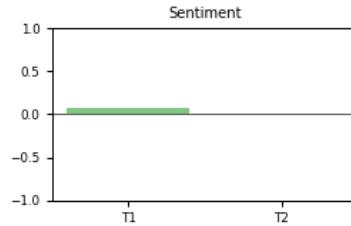


But when

, through not  
for want of such knowledge, they are allowed having been foreseen, they have been

permitted

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



to grow

so

in a way

that every

one can

recognise

see

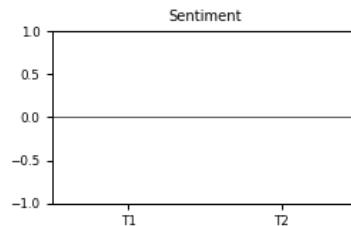
them, there is no longer

any remedy to be found.

a remedy. Therefore,

However,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the Romans

, observing these disorders while yet remote, , foreseeing troubles, dealt with them at once,  
were and, even  
always able to find a remedy, and never  
allowed them to proceed in  
order

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to avoid a war

; , would not let them come to a head,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



for they knew that war

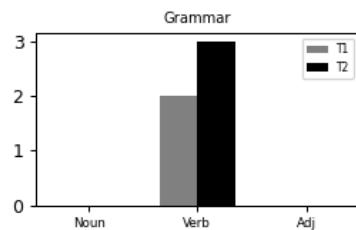
was is

not to be avoided

, but is only to be put off

and could be deferred only

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

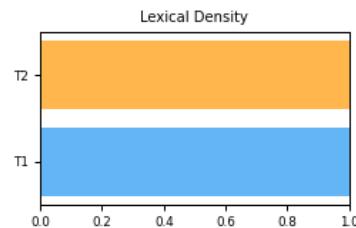


to the advantage of

the other side; they others; moreover they wished to fight with

therefore declared war against

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

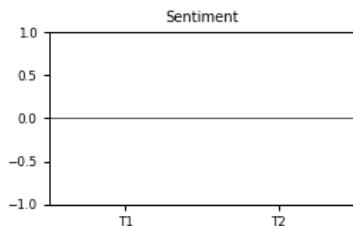


Philip and Antiochus in Greece, so as

not to have to

, though they might at the time ; they could

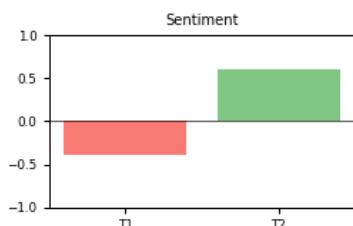
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



have avoided

either; both, but  
this they did not

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.

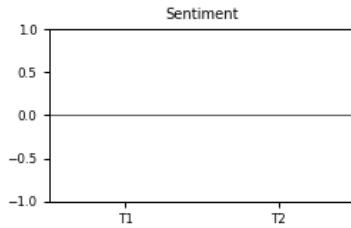


which is

now every day to be heard

forever

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



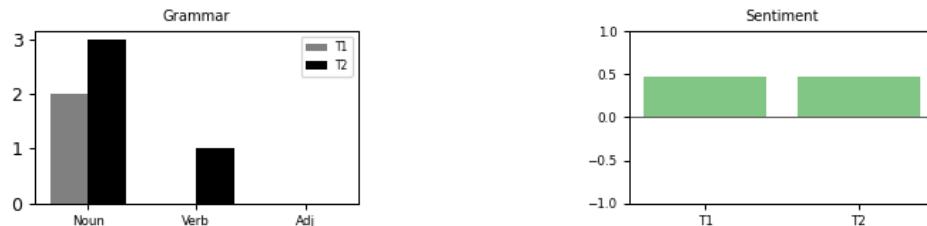
in the mouths of

our wise

the wise ones of our time:—Let us

men, to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



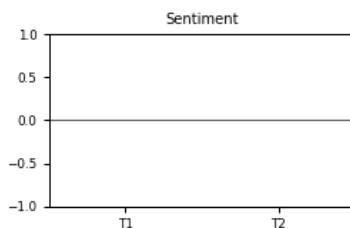
enjoy the benefits of

the

time, but

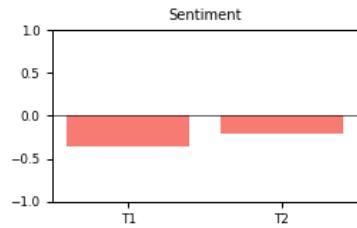
preferring those rather the benefits  
 of their own  
 virtue valour  
 and prudence, for time  
 brings drives everything before it, and is able to  
 bring

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



with it  
 all things, and may good as well as evil, and evil as well as good.  
 produce indifferently either good or evil. [2] See remark in the introduction on the  
 word “intrattener.”

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



But let us

return turn

to France

and

examine inquire

whether she

did has done

any of

these things; and the

things mentioned.

I will speak

of Louis[3] (and

not

of Charles

, but of Louis )[4]

as the one whose

proceedings can be better conduct is the better to be observed, he  
seen, as he having

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



held possession

in of  
Italy for

a longer time; the longest period; and  
you will

then

see that he

did has done  
 the opposite

of all to  
 those things which

must ought to  
 be done to

keep possession of a foreign state. retain  
 a state composed of divers elements.

[3] Louis XII, King of France, “The Father of  
 the People,” born 1462,  
 died 1515.

[4] Charles VIII, King of France, born 1470,  
 died 1498.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



King Louis was

called  
into Italy by  
the ambition of the Venetians, who

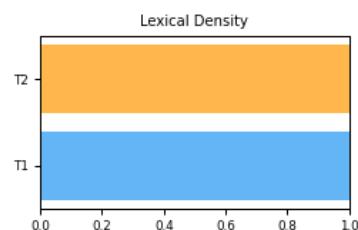
wished desired to obtain half the state of Lombardy

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



by his  
coming to gain half intervention.  
of Lombardy.

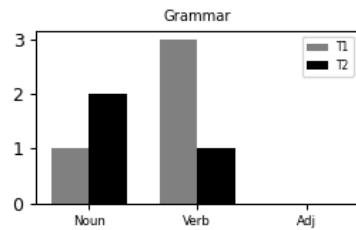
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



I will not blame the

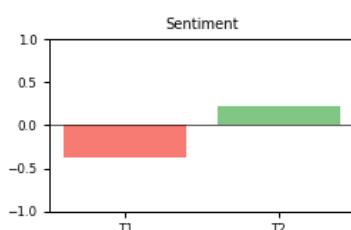
king for coming nor for the part course taken by the king,  
he took,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



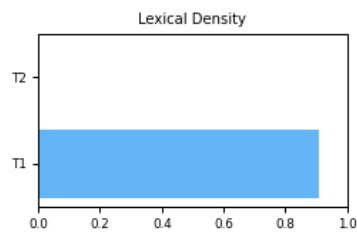
because wishing to  
plant his foot get a  
in Italy, and  
not having having no friends there—seeing rather that  
friends in the country, on the contrary every  
door was shut to him owing to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the conduct of  
King Charles  
Charles—  
having caused all doors to be closed to him,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



he was forced to accept  
what friendships  
he could  
find, and his schemes  
would have  
quickly  
been successful if  
those friendships which  
get, and he  
succeeded very quickly in his design if in  
other matters

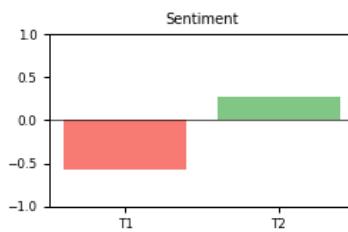
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



he had

made no mistakes in his other proceedings. not  
made some mistakes.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

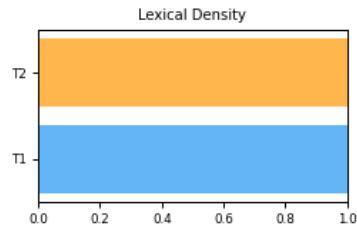


The king

then , however,  
having acquired Lombardy regained

immediately the at once the authority which Charles had lost:  
reputation lost by Charles.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



Genoa yielded, the Florentines became his  
friends, the

Marquis Marquess

of Mantua, the

Dukes Duke  
of Ferrara

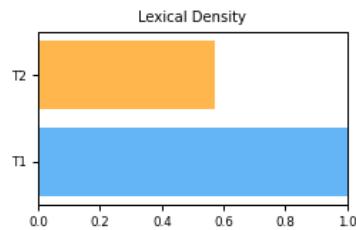
and Bentivogli, , the Bentivogli, my  
the

Lady of

Furlì, Forli,  
the Lords of Faenza

, Pesaro, Rimini, Camerino, , of  
and Pesaro, of Rimini, of Camerino, of

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



Piombino, the

inhabitants of Lucca, of Pisa, and of Sienna,

Lucchese, the Pisans,

all

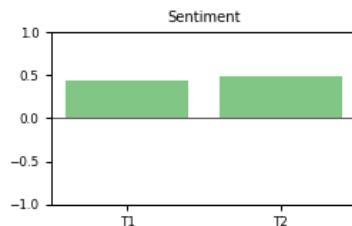
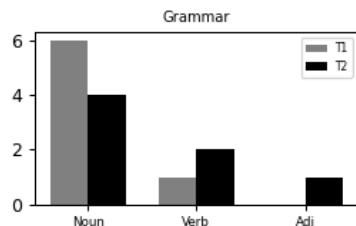
the Sienese—everybody made advances to

approached him with offers of friendship.

him to become his friend. Then

could

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



The Venetians

might then

realize the rashness of the course taken by

have seen the effects of their temerity, how to

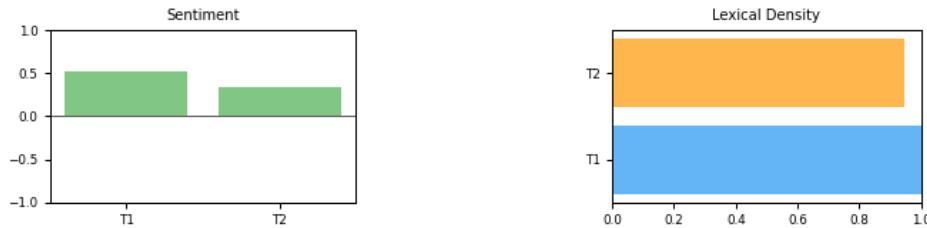
them,

gain a few lands

which, in order that they might secure two

towns

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



in Lombardy

they

,  
had made the king

ruler over

master of

two-thirds of Italy

.

.

Consider how

Let any one now consider with what

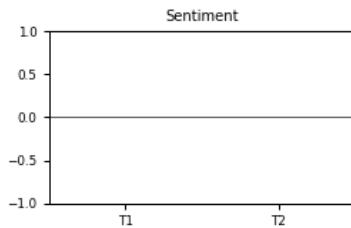
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



little difficulty the king

would have had in maintaining could  
his reputation have maintained his position

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



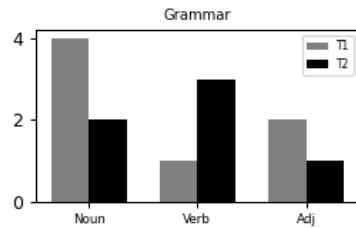
in Italy

if he had had he  
observed the rules above

given, laid down,  
and  
kept

a firm and sure hold over all those friends of all his friends secure and protected; for  
his, who being although  
many in number, and they were numerous they were both

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



weak, and

fearful one

timid, some afraid

of the Church

, another

, some

of

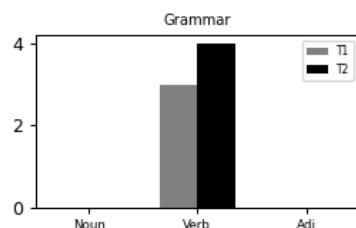
the Venetians

, were always obliged to hold fast to

, and thus they would always have been

forced to stand in with

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



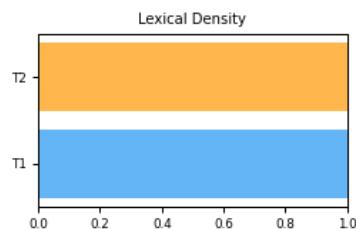
him, and by

whose  
aid

he could easily

make sure of any who were still great.  
have  
made himself secure against those who  
remained powerful.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



But he was

hardly  
no  
sooner

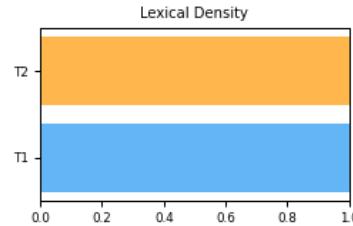
in Milan

before  
than  
he did

exactly the opposite, by giving aid to

the contrary by assisting

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



Pope Alexander to occupy the Romagna

. Nor did he perceive that, in

. It never occurred to him that by this action

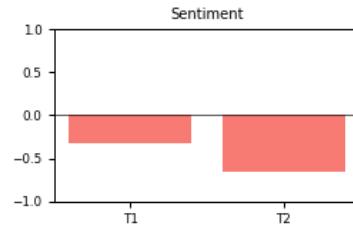
taking this course, he weakened himself, by

he was

casting off his

weakening himself, depriving himself of

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



friends

and

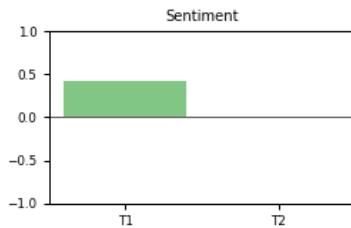
of

those who had

placed themselves at his disposal, and  
strengthened

thrown themselves into his lap, whilst he  
aggrandized

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the Church by adding

much temporal power

to the spiritual

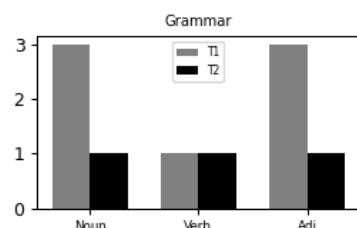
power, which gives it such

, thus giving it greater

authority, further temporal powers.

authority.

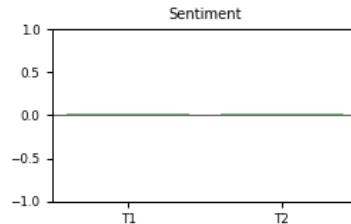
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



And having

made the first mistake, he was obliged to follow it up	committed this prime error,
, whilst, to put	, so much so that,
a stop to the ambition of Alexander and	an end
prevent him becoming ruler	to prevent his becoming the master

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



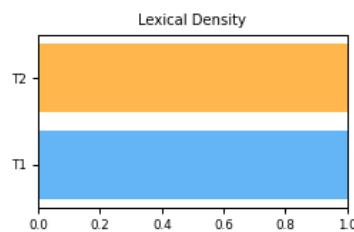
of Tuscany, he was

of Tuscany, he was	himself
forced	
to come	

to into  
Italy. And

not content with having increased the power as if it were not enough to have aggrandized  
of

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the Church and  
lost his deprived himself of  
friends, he

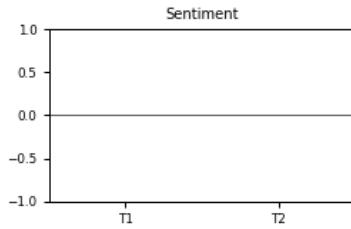
now desiring , wishing to have  
the kingdom of  
Naples, divided it with the king of Spain; and where he

alone was the

arbiter of prime arbiter  
in  
Italy, he

now brought in a companion, takes an associate,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



so that the ambitious

of that

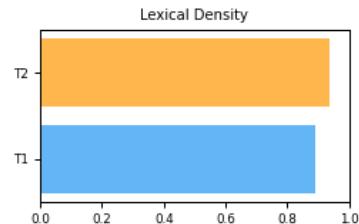
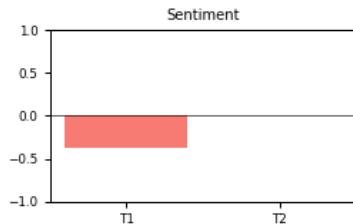
province who were dissatisfied with him country

might have some one and the malcontents of his own should have

else to appeal to; and where he might somewhere to shelter; and

whereas he could

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



have left in

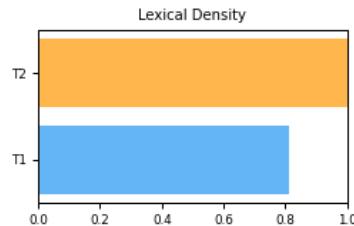
that kingdom a king

tributary to him, he dispossessed him in order  
to bring in another

the kingdom his own pensioner as king, he

drove him out, to put one there

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



who

was

capable of driving him out. The desire

able to drive him, Louis, out

in turn.

The wish

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to acquire

possessions is

is in truth

a

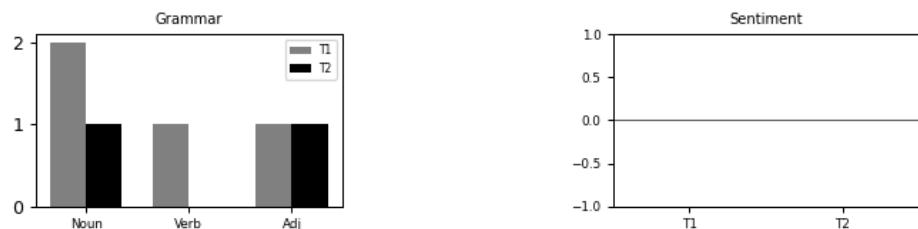
very natural and

ordinary thing, and when those men do it

common, and men always

who can

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



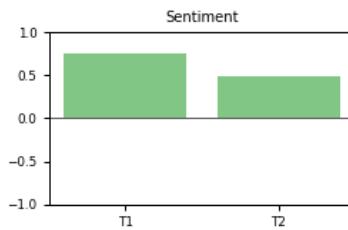
do so

successfully, they are always praised and

when they can, and for this they will be

praised

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



not blamed, but when

they cannot

and yet want

do so, yet wish

to do so

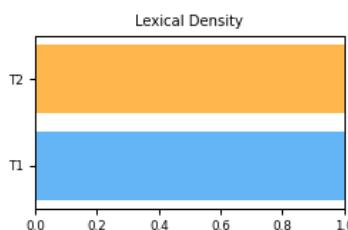
at all costs, they make a mistake

by any means, then there is

deserving of great blame.

folly and blame. Therefore,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



If France

, therefore,

could have attacked Naples

with her own forces

could have taken Naples,

she ought to have done so; if she could not

, then

she ought not to have divided it. And if the partition

of Lombardy

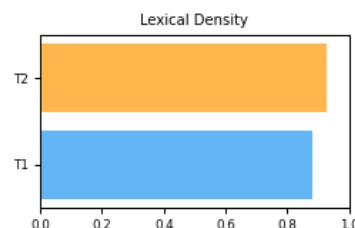
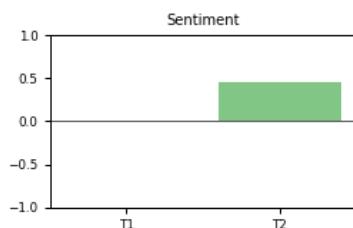
which she made

with

the Venetians

is to be excused, as having been the means of allowing in Lombardy was justified by the excuse that by it she

the French king to set foot got a foothold



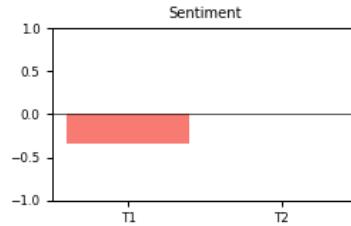
in Italy, this other partition

deserves

merited blame, for it had

blame, not having not

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the excuse of

necessity. Louis had thus that necessity.

Therefore Louis

made these

five

mistakes: he had crushed the smaller Powers, errors: he destroyed the minor powers,

he

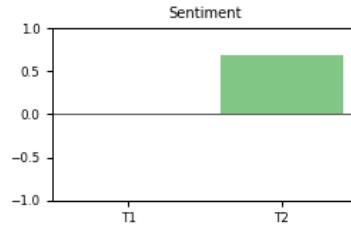
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



increased the

power strength of one of the greater powers

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



in Italy

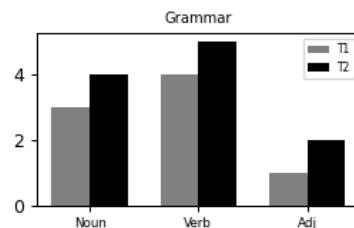
of one ruler, brought into the land a very , he

powerful foreigner, brought in a foreign power, he did not settle

and he had not come to live there himself, in the country, he did

nor not send colonies. Which errors,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



had he

established lived, were not enough to

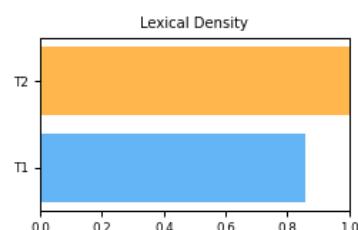
any colonies. Still these mistakes might, if he injure  
 had lived, not have  
 injured

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



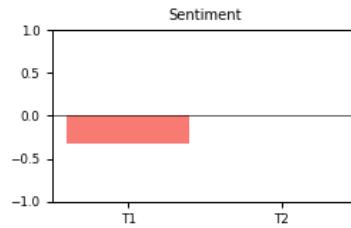
him, had he not made  
 the sixth, that of taking the state a sixth by taking away their dominions

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



from  
 the Venetians  
 ; for, if he had not strengthened ; because, had he not aggrandized

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



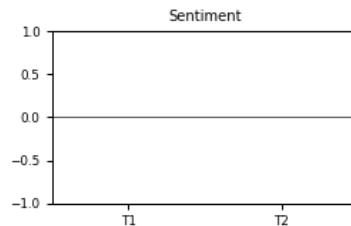
the Church

and brought , nor brought  
the Spaniards Spain  
into Italy, it would have been

right very reasonable  
and necessary to  
humble them

; having once taken those measures, ; but having first taken these steps,

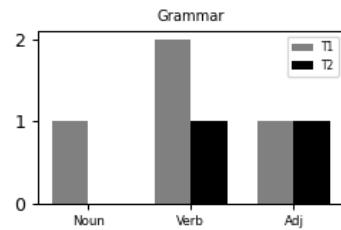
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



he ought never to have  
consented to their ruin

; because, had the Venetians been strong, it , for they, being powerful, would always would

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



have kept

the off

others from

making attempts designs  
on Lombardy

, partly , to which

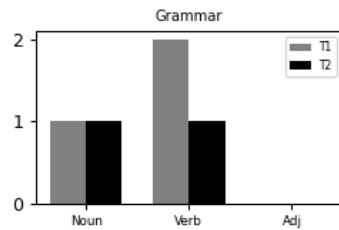
because

the Venetians would

not never  
have consented

to any measures by which except to become masters themselves there;  
they did not get it for themselves, and partly also

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



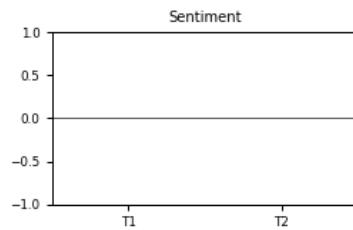
because the others would  
not  
  
have wanted wish  
to take

it Lombardy  
from France

in order  
to give it to

Venice, and the Venetians, and to run counter to both  
they

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



would

not have had the courage

to attack both.

And

If any one

urges that

should say: “

King Louis yielded the Romagna to Alexander

and the kingdom to Spain

in order

to avoid war, I

reply, with

answer for

the

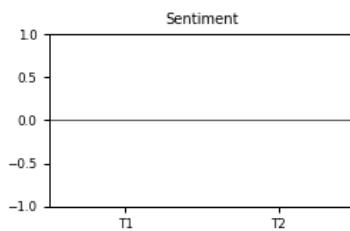
reasons

already given, that one

given

above that a blunder

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



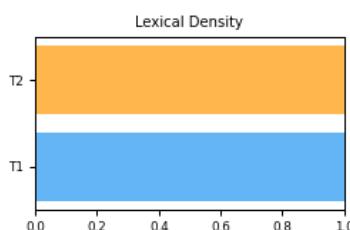
ought never to

allow a disorder to take

be perpetrated

place in order

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to avoid war

, for war

,

because it

is not

thereby to be  
avoided, but

is  
only  
deferred to your disadvantage. And if

others another should  
allege the

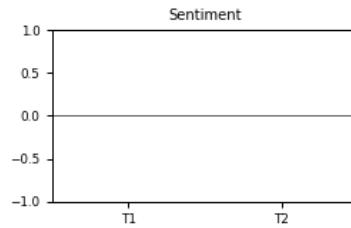
promise given pledge which  
by

the king

had given  
to the pope

to undertake that enterprise for that he would assist

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



him, in

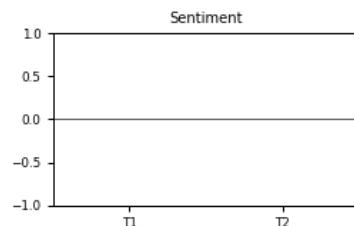
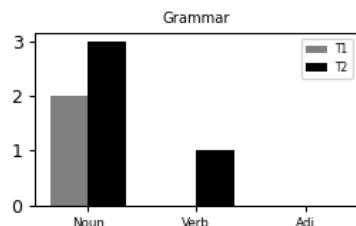
return the enterprise, in  
exchange for the dissolution of his marriage

[5]

and for the

cardinalship of Rohan, cap to Rouen,[6] to that

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



I reply

with

what I shall

say

write

later on

about

concerning

the faith of princes and

how it

is

ought

to be

observed.

kept.

[5] Louis XII divorced his wife, Jeanne,

daughter of Louis XI, and

married in 1499 Anne of Brittany, widow of

Charles VIII, in order to

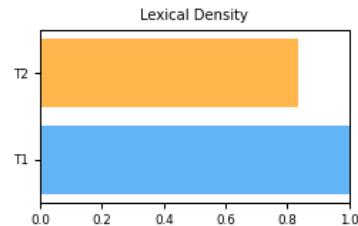
retain the Duchy of Brittany for the crown.

[6] The Archbishop of Rouen. He was

Georges d'Amboise, created a

cardinal by Alexander VI. Born 1460, died

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



Thus King Louis lost Lombardy

through not

by not having followed

observing

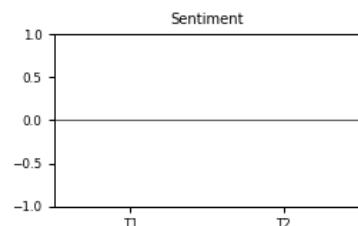
any of

those conditions which have been

the

conditions

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



observed by

others those

who have taken

provinces possession of countries

and wished to retain them. Nor is

this there

any

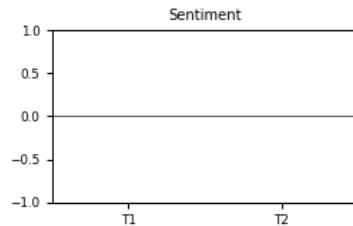
## miracle

, but very in this, but much that

in this, but much that

is

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

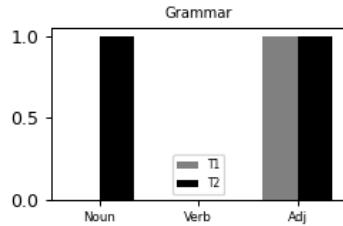


reasonable and

quite natural. And on these matters

quite natural. And on these matters

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

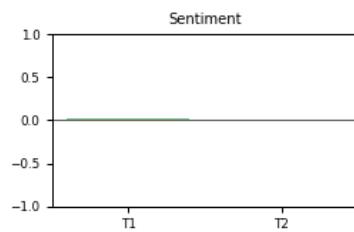


I spoke

of this matter with

Cardinal Rohan

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



at Nantes

when Valentine,

with Rouen, when Valentino,

as Cesare Borgia

,

, the

son of Pope

Alexander, was

commonly called, was occupying usually called, occupied  
the Romagna

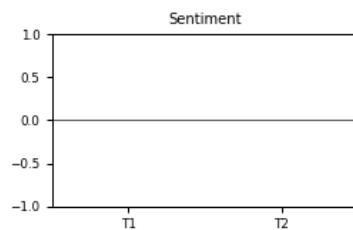
, for , and  
on  
Cardinal

to him

that the French did not understand

politics, for if they did statecraft, meaning that otherwise

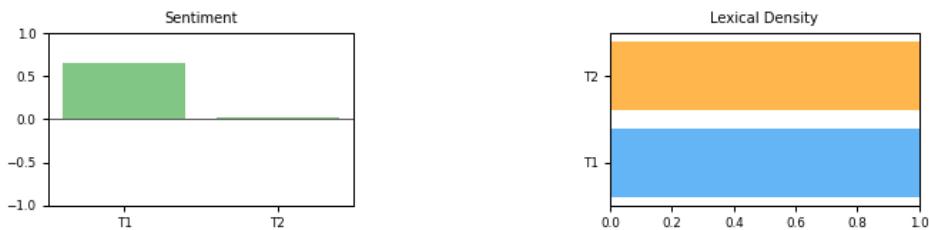
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



they would

never allow not have allowed  
the Church to  
become so great. And experience reach such  
shows us greatness. And in fact it has been seen

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



that the greatness

in Italy  
of the Church and

also  
of Spain

have in Italy has  
been caused by France, and her ruin

has proceeded from may be attributed to

them. From

which may be drawn this

a general rule

,

is drawn  
which never or

very

rarely fails,

that

whoever he who

is the cause of another becoming powerful, is ruined

himself; for that power is produced by him

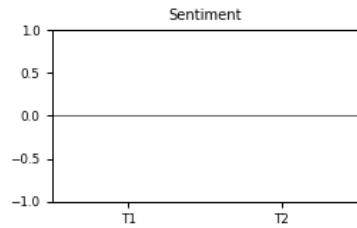
; because that predominancy has been

either through craft or

brought about

either by astuteness or else by

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

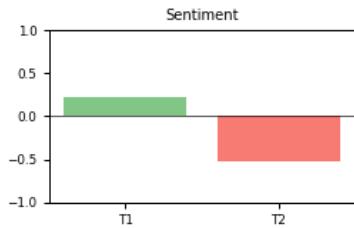


force; and both

of these are suspected by the one that has  
become  
powerful.

are distrusted by him  
who has been raised to power.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



## CHAPTER IV

WHY THE KINGDOM OF DARIUS

, OCCUPIED

, CONQUERED

BY ALEXANDER, DID NOT REBEL AGAINST

THE SUCCESSORS OF

THE LATTER AFTER

ALEXANDER AT

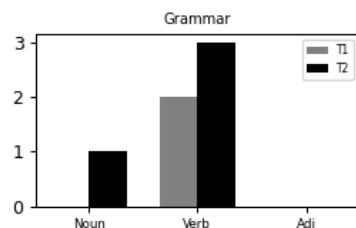
HIS DEATH

Considering the difficulties

there are in holding

which men have had to hold to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

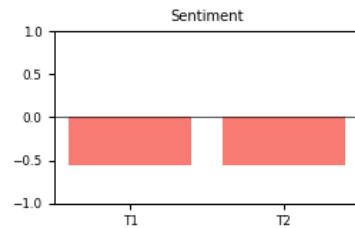


a newly acquired  
state, some

it came to pass , seeing  
that Alexander the Great  
became

master of Asia in a few years, and

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



it might

be supposed appear reasonable  
that the whole

state empire

would have rebelled

. However, ), nevertheless

his successors maintained themselves

in ,

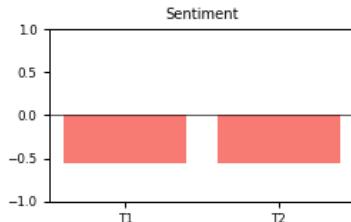
possession,

and had

to meet no other difficulty than that

to meet no other difficulty than that

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



which

arose among themselves from their own ambitions.

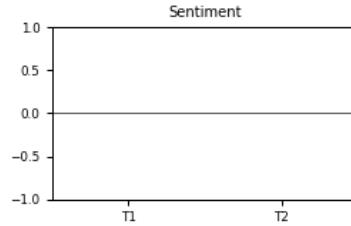
I

reply answer

that the

kingdoms known to history have been  
principalities of which one has record are  
found to  
be

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



governed in two

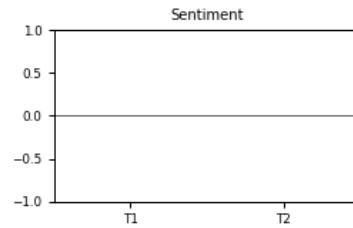
different

ways: either by a prince

and his , with a body of  
servants, who

, assist him to govern the kingdom

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



as ministers by his

grace

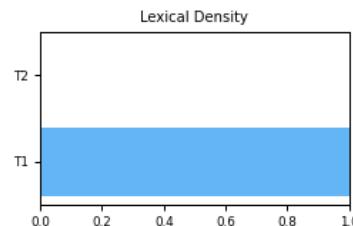
favour

and permission

, assist in governing the realm;

;

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



or by a prince

and

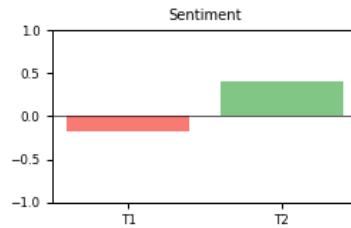
by

barons, who hold

their positions not by favour of the ruler but

that dignity

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

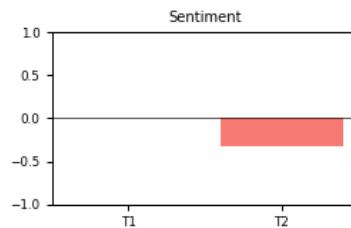


by antiquity of blood

.

and not by the grace of the prince.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



Such barons have states and

subjects of

their

own

, who recognise

subjects, who recognize

them as

their

lords, and

are naturally attached to

hold

them. In

natural affection.

those states

which

that

are governed by a prince and his servants

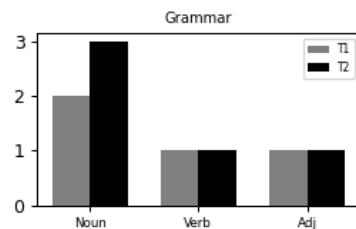
,

hold their prince in more consideration,

the prince possesses more authority, because

because in all the country

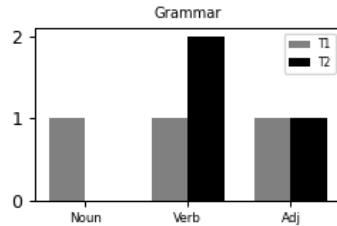
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



there is no one

in the state regarded as a superior besides himself, who is recognized as superior to him,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

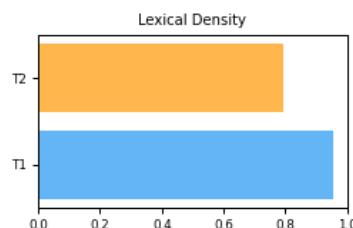


and if

others are obeyed they yield obedience to another they do it as  
it is merely as ministers and officials of the to a minister and official, and they do not  
prince, and no one bear him any particular  
regards them with any special affection. affection.

The

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



Examples of these two

kinds governments  
of government  
in our

own

time are the Turk and the King of France

. . The entire monarchy of the Turk  
All the Turkish monarchy

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



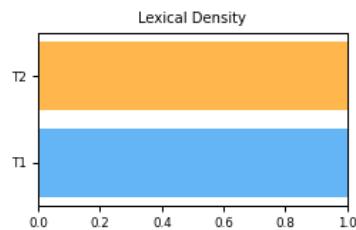
is governed by one  
ruler, lord,  
the others are his  
servants, and dividing his kingdom into

"sangiacates," sanjaks,  
he sends

to them  
various  
administrators, and

changes or recalls them at his pleasure.  
shifts and  
changes them as he chooses.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



But the King of France is

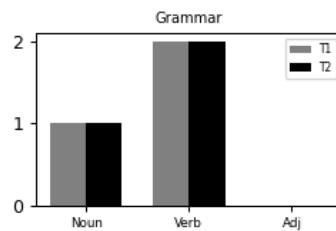
surrounded by a large number of ancient  
placed in the  
nobles, recognised as such  
midst of an ancient body of lords,  
acknowledged

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



by their  
 own  
 subjects, and  
 loved  
 beloved  
 by them; they  
 have their  
 prerogatives, which  
 own prerogatives, nor can  
 the king  
 cannot deprive them of without  
 take these away except at his peril.  
 danger to himself. Whoever now considers  
 Therefore, he who considers both  
 these two  
 of these

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



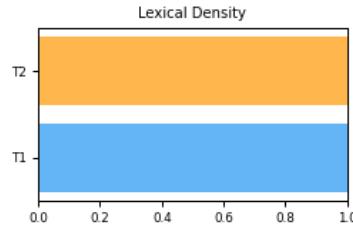
states will

see that

recognize great difficulties in seizing

it would be difficult to acquire

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



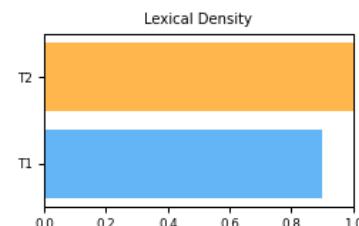
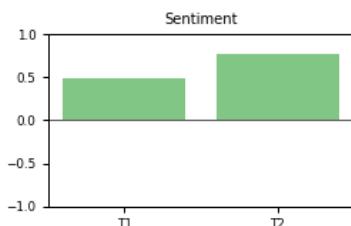
the state of the Turk; but

having

, once it is conquered, great ease in holding

conquered it, it would be very easy to hold

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



it.

The causes of the

difficulty of occupying the Turkish kingdom

difficulties in seizing the kingdom of the

Turk

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



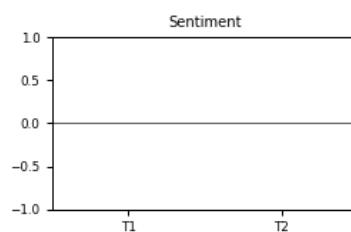
are, that

the

invader could not be invited by

usurper cannot be called in by the

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



princes of

that

the

kingdom, nor

can

he

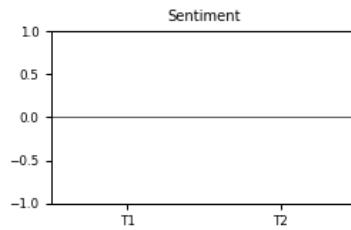
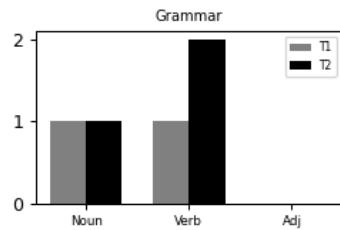
hope

to

facilitate his enterprise

be assisted in his designs

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



by the

rebellion

revolt

of those

whom the

lord has

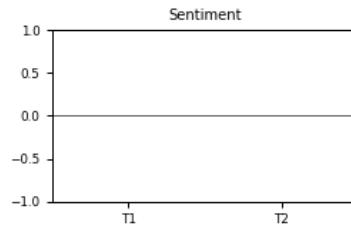
around him

, as

. This arises from the

will be evident from

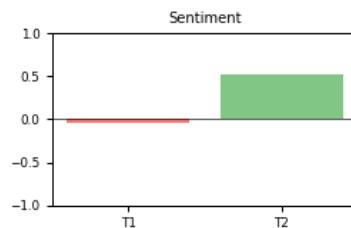
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



reasons given above

. Because, ; for his  
ministers,  
being all slaves,  
and  
bound, it will be more difficult to corrupt bondmen, can only be corrupted with  
them, and even if great difficulty, and one can expect little  
they were corrupted, little effect could be advantage from them when  
hoped for, they have been corrupted,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



as they

would cannot  
not be able to

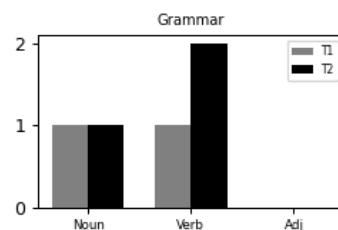
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



carry the people with them for the reasons

Therefore, whoever assaults  
assigned. Hence, he who attacks

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the Turk must

be prepared to meet his  
united forces, and must  
bear in mind that he will find him united, and he will

have to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



rely more on his own strength than on the

disorders

revolt

of others; but

having once conquered him, and beaten him

, if once the Turk has

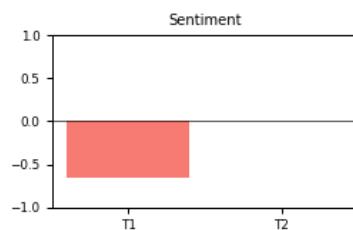
in

been conquered, and routed in the field in

battle so

such a way

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

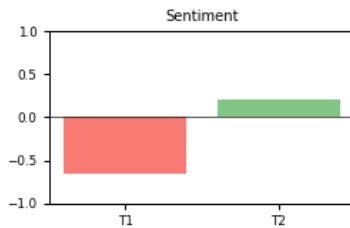


that he

can no longer raise armies, nothing else is to  
be  
feared except

cannot  
replace his armies, there is nothing to fear but

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



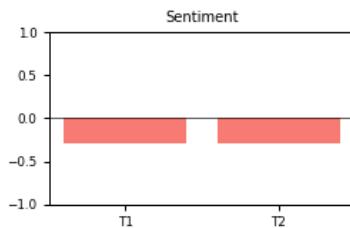
the family of  
the  
prince, and

this

if this is extinguished,  
there is no longer any

, this being exterminated, there remains no

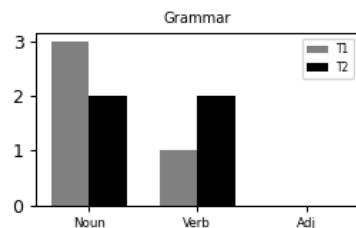
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



one to

be feared,  
fear,  
the others having no credit  
with the people; and as the  
victor before the victory could place no  
conqueror did not  
hope in them,  
rely on them before his victory,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



so he  
need not  
ought not to  
fear them  
afterwards.  
after it.

The contrary

is  
happens

the case

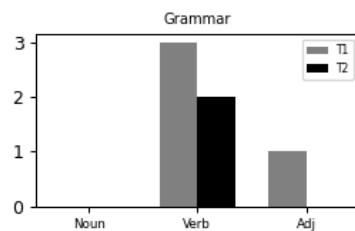
in kingdoms governed like that of France, because

it is easy

one can easily enter there by gaining

to enter them by winning

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



over some baron of the kingdom

, there being

,

always some

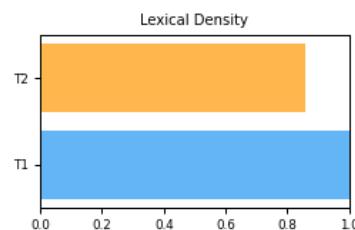
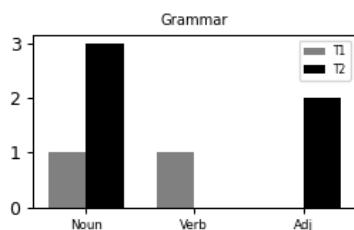
for one always finds

malcontents, and

those desiring innovations. These can,

such as desire a change. Such men,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



for the reasons

stated,

given, can

open the way

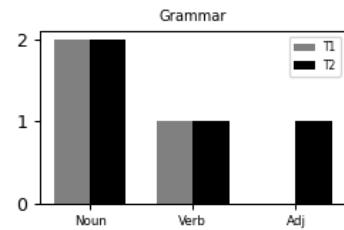
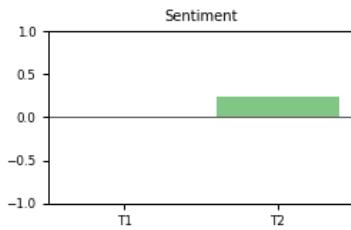
to you and facilitate victory;

into the state and render the

but afterwards,

victory easy; but

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.

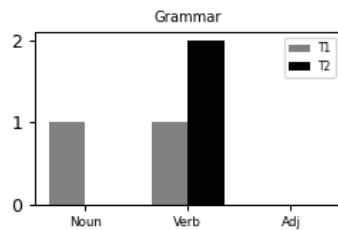


if you wish to

keep possession,

hold it afterwards, you meet with

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



infinite difficulties

arise, ,

both from those who have

aided assisted

you and from those you have

oppressed. crushed.

Nor is it

sufficient to extinguish enough for you to have exterminated

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

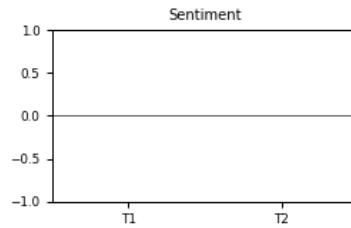


the family of the prince

, because the lords that remain

for there remain those nobles who will

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



make themselves the

head of new

heads of fresh movements against you, and

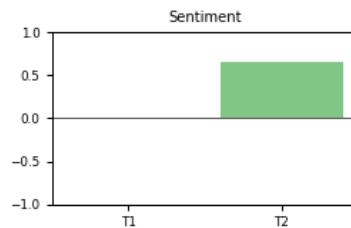
changes, and being neither able to content

as you are unable either

them nor

to satisfy or

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



exterminate them

,

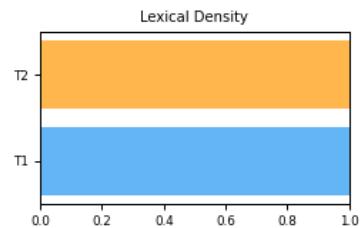
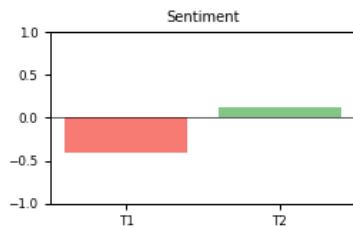
, that state is lost whenever time brings

you will lose the state whenever an occasion

the opportunity.

arises.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



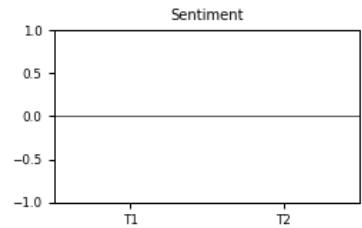
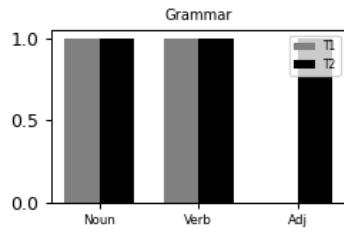
Now if you will

consider what was the nature of the government of Darius you will find it similar to the kingdom of the Turk, and therefore

Alexander had

it was only necessary for Alexander,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



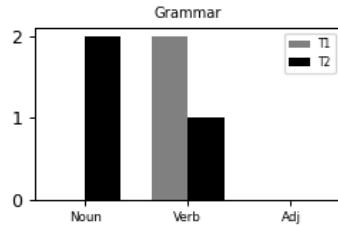
first to

completely overthrow it and seize

overthrow him

in the field, and then to take

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the country

, from him.

after which

victory, Darius being

dead, killed,

the state remained secure to Alexander,

for the

reasons discussed above. And above reasons. And if

his successors, had

they remained been united they would

united, might

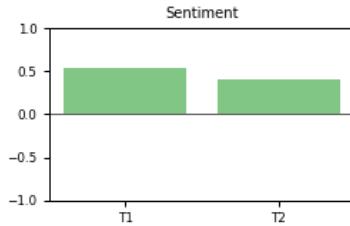
have enjoyed it

in peace, nor did any tumults arise

securely and at their ease, for there were no

tumults  
raised

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



in

the kingdom except those

fomented by

they provoked

themselves. But it is impossible

to

possess

hold

with such

ease countries

### tranquillity states

constituted like

that of

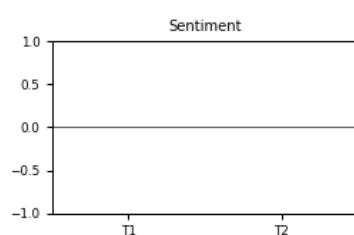
France.

Hence arose

the frequent rebellions of Spain, France, and Greece against the Romans in those

against the Romans, , owing to the numerous principalities which existed many principalities in those states; for there were in these states, of which,

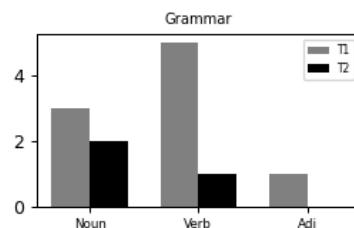
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



as long as the memory of  
these lasted, them  
endured,  
the Romans

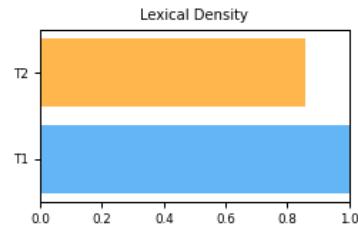
were always uncertain of their possessions; always held an insecure possession; but  
but when the memory of  
these principalities had been extinguished  
they became,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



with the power  
and  
duration long continuance  
of the empire  
, secure possessions. the memory of them passed  
And afterwards the latter could, away, and the Romans then became secure  
possessors. And

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



when fighting

among themselves, draw

afterwards amongst themselves,

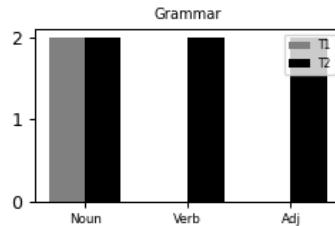
each one

with him a portion of these provinces,

was able to attach to himself

his own parts of the country,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



according to the

authority he had

established

assumed

there, and

these provinces, when

the

family of

their ancient princes was extinct, recognised

the former lord being exterminated, none

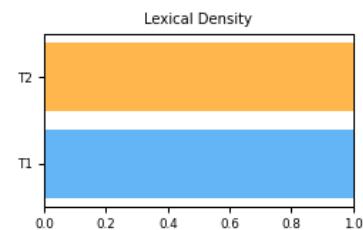
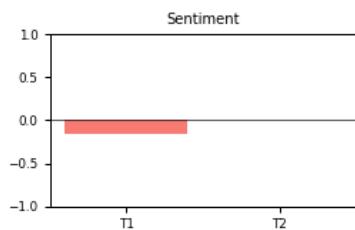
no other rulers

other

but

than

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the Romans

. Considering

were acknowledged.

When

these things

, therefore, let

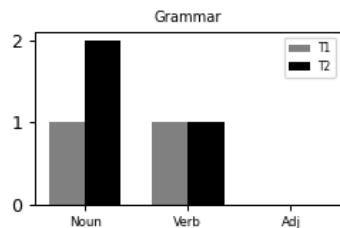
are remembered

no one

facility with which Alexander ease

could hold Asia, and held the Empire of Asia, or

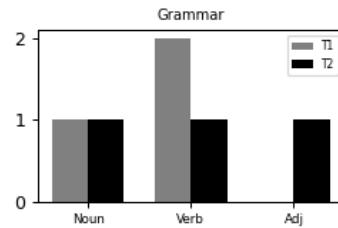
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



at  
the difficulties  
  
that  
which  
  
others have had

in holding acquired possessions, to keep an acquisition, such as like

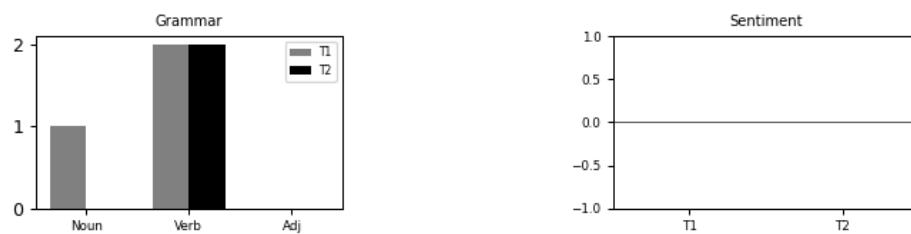
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



Pyrrhus and many

others; as this was not caused more;  
this is not occasioned

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



by the

greater or little or abundance of ability in  
smaller ability of

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

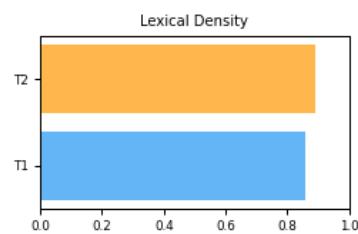


the conqueror, but

depended on the dissimilarity of  
the conditions.

by the want of uniformity in the subject state.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



## CHAPTER V

CONCERNING

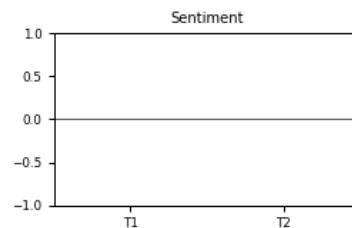
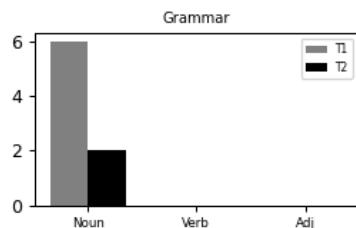
THE WAY TO GOVERN CITIES OR

DOMINIONS THAT, PREVIOUS TO

PRINCIPALITIES WHICH

BEING OCCUPIED,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



LIVED UNDER THEIR OWN LAWS

.

BEFORE THEY WERE ANNEXED

When

Whenever

those states which have been acquired

are

as stated have been

accustomed to live

at

liberty

under their own laws

,

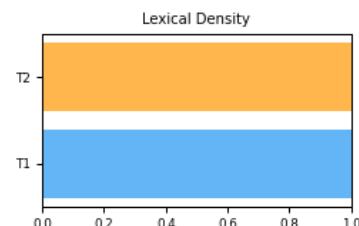
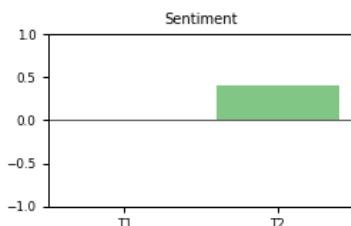
and in freedom,

there are three

ways of holding

courses for those who wish to hold

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



them. The

first is to ruin them; the

second

next

is to

go and live

reside

there in person;

the third is to

allow

permit

them to live under their own laws

, taking tribute

, drawing a tribute, and establishing within it

of them, and creating there within the

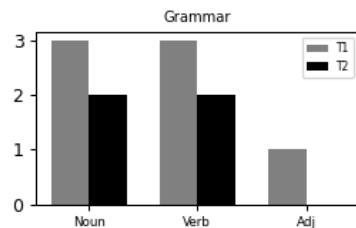
an

country a state composed of a

oligarchy which

few who

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



will keep it friendly to you. Because

this state,

such a

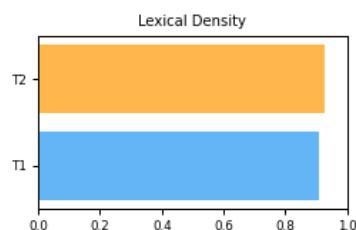
government,

being created

by the prince, knows that it cannot

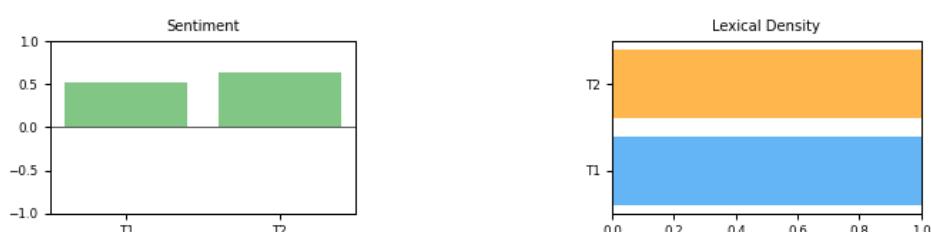
exist stand  
without his friendship and  
protection, and will do all it can to keep  
them, and interest, and does its utmost to support  
him; and therefore he who would keep

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



a city  
used to accustomed to freedom will  
liberty can be hold it

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

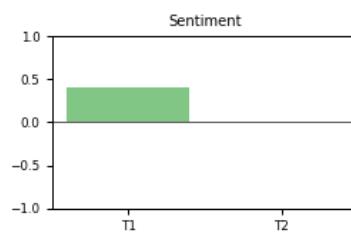


more easily

held by means of its own citizens than in any other way.

, if you wish to preserve it. There is the example of . There are, for example,

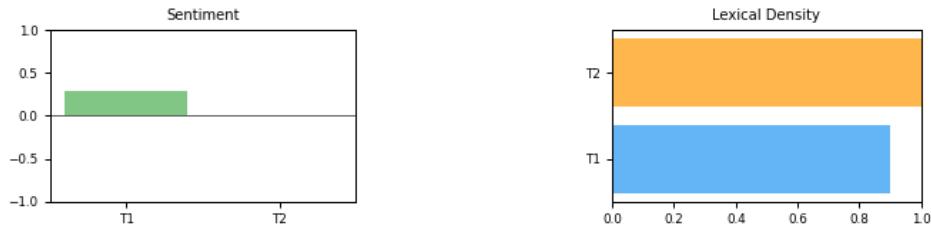
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the Spartans and the Romans. The Spartans held Athens and Thebes

by , establishing there an oligarchy; creating within them a state of a few people;

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



nevertheless they lost

them. The Romans, in order to hold Capua, Carthage, and Numantia

,

destroyed them, but dismantled them, and

did not lose them. They

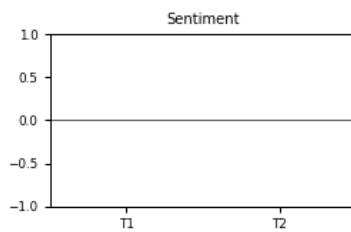
wanted wished

to hold Greece

in

almost the same way

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

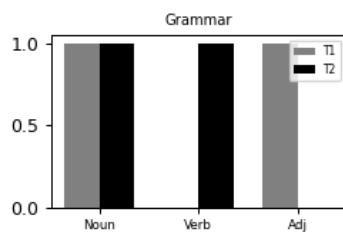


as the Spartans held it

, leaving , making  
it free and

under permitting its laws, and  
its own laws, but they

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



did not succeed; so

that to hold it

they were compelled

to

destroy dismantle  
many cities in

that province in order to keep it, because the country, for

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



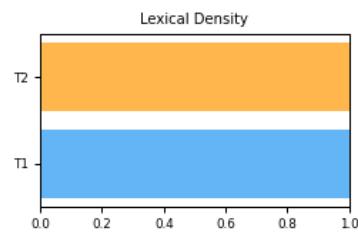
in truth there is no

sure method of holding them except

safe way to retain them

otherwise than

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



by ruining

them. And

whoever becomes the ruler

he who becomes master

of a

free city

city

accustomed to freedom

and does not destroy

it

, can

, may

expect to be destroyed by it, for

it can always find a motive  
for rebellion in the name

in rebellion it has always the watchword

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



of liberty and

of

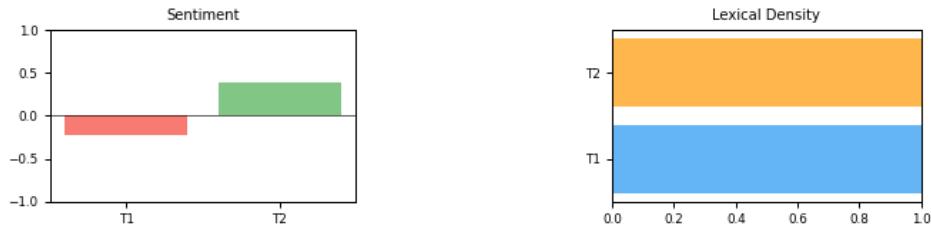
its ancient

usages, which

privileges as a rallying point, which neither

are forgotten neither by lapse of

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

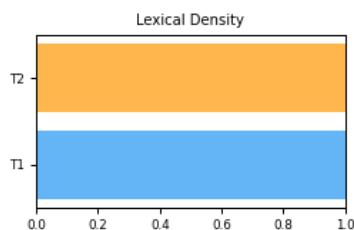


time nor

by benefits received,

benefits will ever cause it to forget.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



and

whatever

one does or provides, so long as the

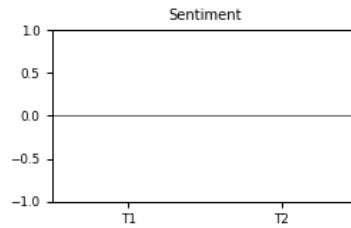
you may do

inhabitants are not

or provide against, they never

separated or dispersed, they do not

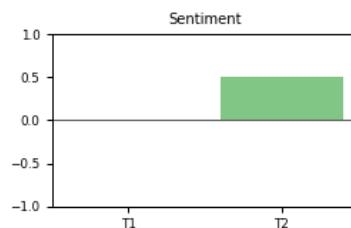
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



forget that name

and those usages, or their privileges  
but appeal unless they are disunited or dispersed, but at  
every chance they immediately rally

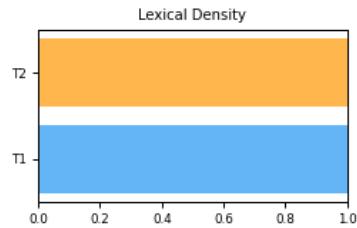
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to them

at once in every emergency, as did , as

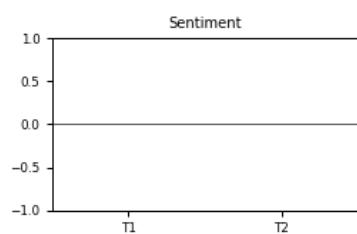
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



Pisa after

being the hundred years she had been  
so many years

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



held in

the family  
of that prince is extinguished,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



being on the one hand

used accustomed

to obey, and

on the other

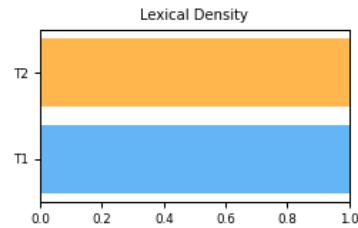
hand

not having

their the  
old prince

, they cannot unite in choosing , cannot agree in  
making

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



one from

among

amongst

themselves, and they do not know how to

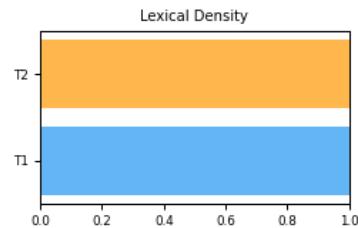
live in freedom,

govern

so that

themselves. For this reason

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



they are

slower

very slow

to take

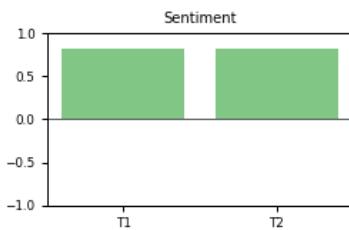
up

arms, and a prince can

win them over  
with greater facility and establish himself  
securely.

gain them to himself and secure them much  
more easily.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



But in republics

there is

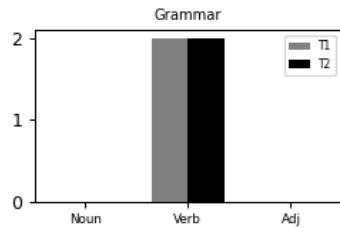
greater life,

more vitality,

greater hatred, and more desire for vengeance

; , which will never permit them to allow  
they do not and cannot cast aside

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



the memory of their

ancient liberty,

former liberty to rest;

so that the

surest

safest

way is

either

to destroy them or

reside in them.

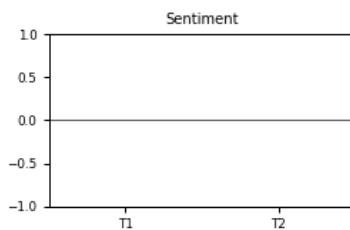
to reside there.

## CHAPTER VI

OF NEW DOMINIONS WHICH HAVE  
BEEN

CONCERNING NEW PRINCIPALITIES  
WHICH ARE

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



ACQUIRED BY ONE'S OWN ARMS AND

POWERS

ABILITY

Let no one

marvel

be surprised

if in speaking of

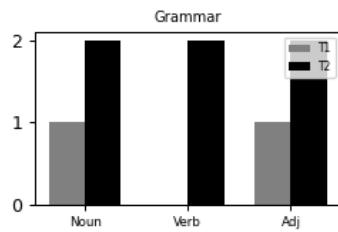
new dominions both as to

entirely new principalities

as I shall do, I adduce the highest examples

both of

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



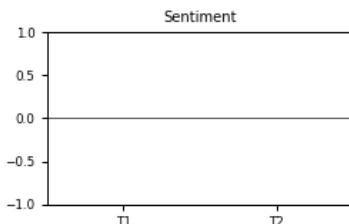
prince

and

state, I bring forward very exalted instances, of

for as men walk state; because men, walking

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



almost always in

the paths trodden paths beaten

by others

, proceeding in their ,

actions

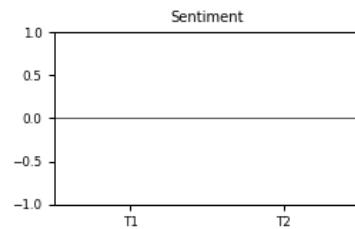
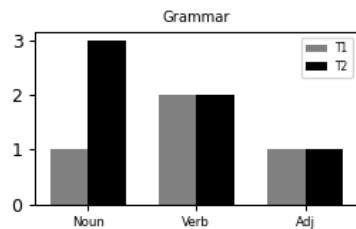
and following

by imitation

, and not being always able to follow others  
exactly, nor

their deeds, are yet unable to keep entirely  
to the ways of others or

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



excellence

power

of those they imitate, a

prudent

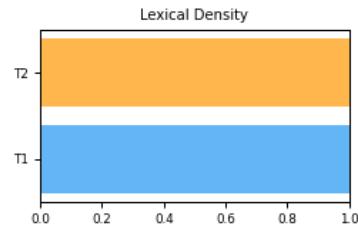
wise man ought always to follow the paths

man should always follow in the path

beaten

trodden

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



by great men and

to

imitate

those who

are most excellent,

have been supreme,

so that if

he

his ability

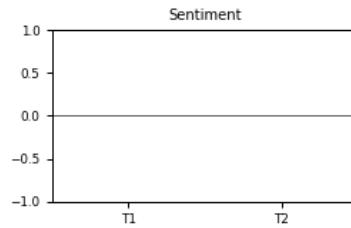
does not

attain to their

equal theirs, at least it will savour

greatness, at any rate he will get some tinge

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

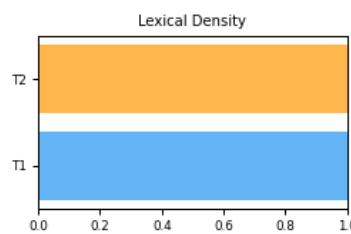


of it

. He will do like  
prudent

. Let him act like the  
clever

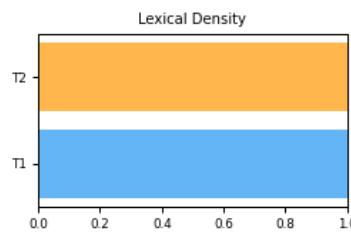
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



archers, who

when the place they wish , designing

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to hit

is

the mark which yet appears

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



too far

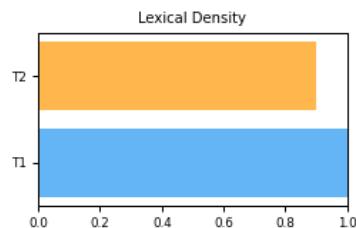
off,

distant, and knowing the limits to which the

knowing how far

strength of

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

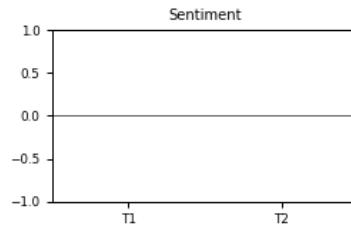


their bow

will carry, aim at a spot

attains, take aim

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

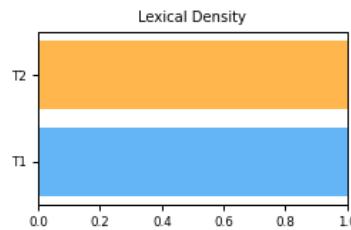


much higher than

the

one they wish to hit, not in order mark, not

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to reach

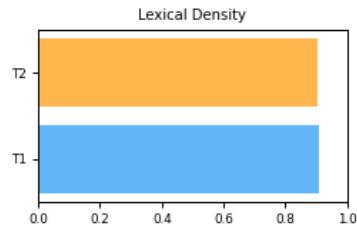
this height with by their

their arrow, but by help of this high strength or arrow to so great a height, but to

be able with the aid of

so high an

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



aim to hit the

spot

mark

they wish

to

.

reach.

I say

then

, therefore,

that in

new dominions,

entirely new principalities,

where there is a new prince

,

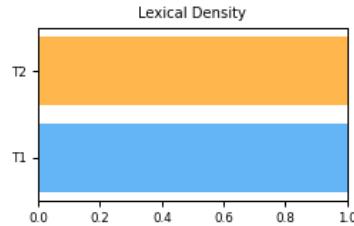
, more or less difficulty is found in keeping

it

them,

accordingly as there

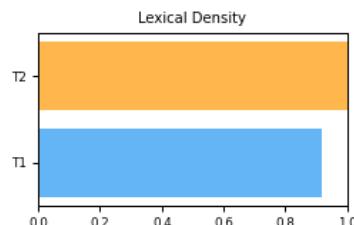
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



is more or less

easy to hold them according to the greater or ability in  
lesser ability of

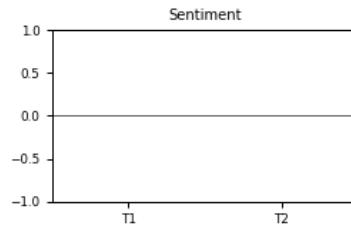
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



him who

acquires them. And has acquired  
the state. Now,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



as the fact of

a private  
individual

becoming a prince

from a private station

presupposes either

great  
ability or

good  
fortune, it

would appear that either is clear that one or other

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of these things

would

will

mitigate

in

part

some degree

many difficulties. Nevertheless

those who have been wanting

, he who has relied least on fortune is

as regards good fortune have maintained

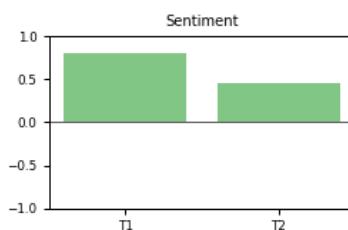
established the

themselves best. The matter

strongest. Further, it facilitates matters when

is also facilitated by

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



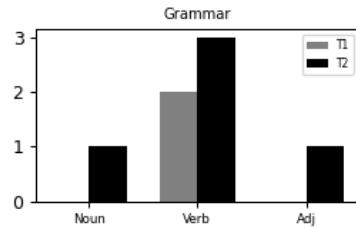
the prince

being obliged

, having no

other state, is compelled

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to reside

personally

there in person.

in his territory, having no others.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



But to come to those who

have

, by

become princes through

their own

merits

ability

and not

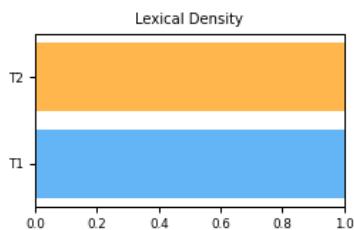
by fortune, I regard

through fortune,

as the greatest,

have risen to be princes, I say that

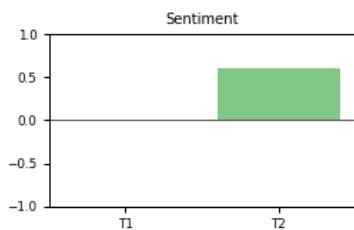
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



Moses, Cyrus, Romulus, Theseus, and such like

are the most excellent examples.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



And

although one

should not speak of

may not

discuss

Moses, he having

merely carried out

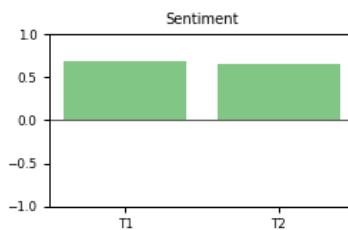
been a mere executor of the will of God, yet

what was ordered him by God, still he

he ought to be admired,

deserves admiration,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



if only

for that

grace

favour

which made him worthy to speak with God. But

regarding

in considering

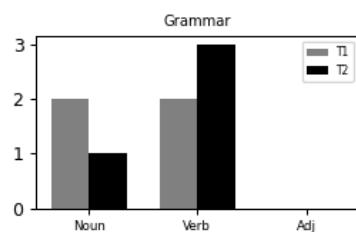
Cyrus and others who have acquired or founded kingdoms

, they will all , all will  
be found

worthy of admiration; admirable;  
and if their particular

actions and deeds and conduct shall be considered,  
methods are examined

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



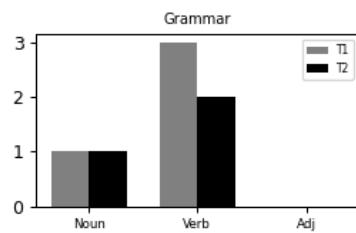
they will not  
appear very different from be  
found inferior to  
those of  
Moses, although he had so great a

Master. preceptor.

And in examining their

life actions and lives one cannot see  
and deeds it will be seen

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



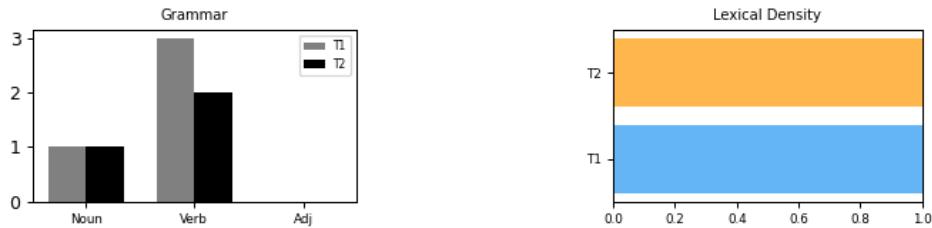
that they owed

nothing anything  
to fortune

but the beyond  
opportunity which

gave them matter to be shaped brought them the material  
to mould

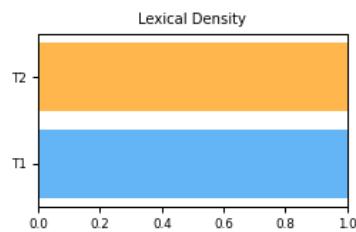
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



into the form

that they which seemed best to them.  
thought fit; and

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



without that opportunity their powers

of mind

would have been

wasted, extinguished,  
and without

their

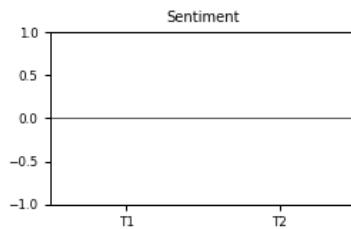
those

powers the opportunity would have come in vain. It was

thus necessary that Moses

necessary, therefore, to Moses that he

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



should find the people of Israel

slaves

in Egypt

enslaved

and oppressed by the Egyptians

, so

, in order

that they

were

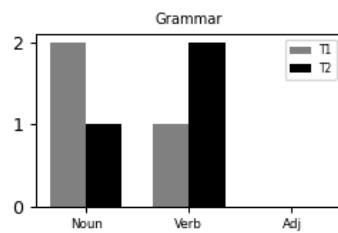
should be

disposed to follow him

in order to escape from their servitude.

so as to be delivered out of  
bondage.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



It was

necessary that Romulus should

be unable to

not

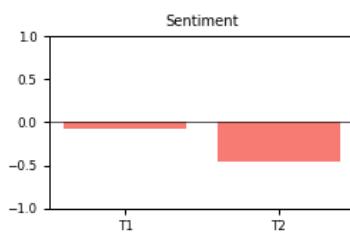
remain in Alba, and

should

that he should be abandoned

have been exposed

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



at his birth, in order that he

might should

become King of

Rome and founder of

that nation. the fatherland.

It was necessary that Cyrus should

find the Persians discontented with the

empire government

of the Medes, and the

Medes

weak soft

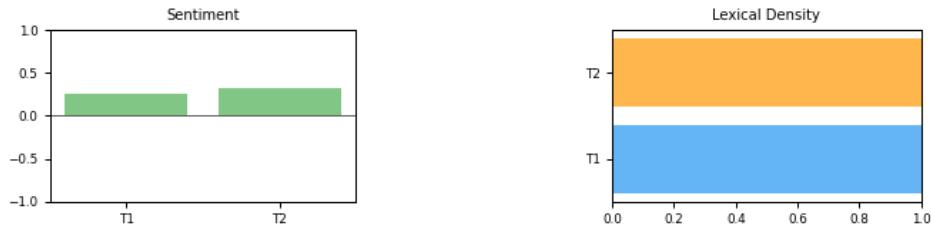
and effeminate through

their

long peace. Theseus could not have

showed his abilities if he had shown his ability had he

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

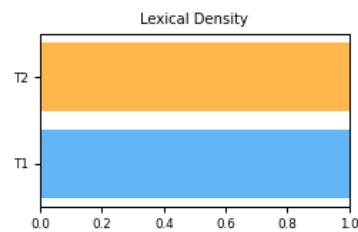


not found the Athenians dispersed.

These opportunities, therefore

, gave these men their chance, , made those men fortunate,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



and their

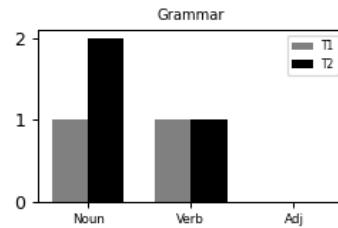
own great qualities high ability

enabled them to

profit by them, so as to ennable recognize the opportunity

whereby

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

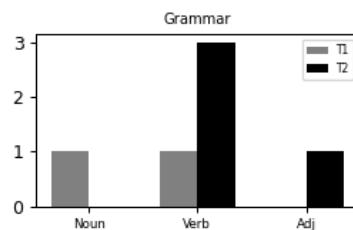


their country

and augment its fortunes.

was ennobled and made famous.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



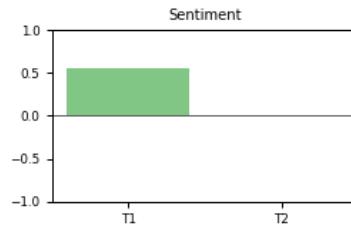
Those who by

heroic means such

valorous ways

as these

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



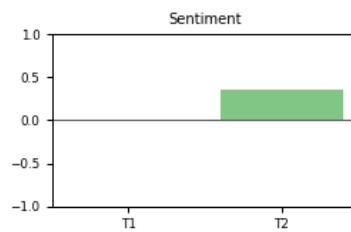
become princes

, obtain their dominions

, like these men, acquire a

principality

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

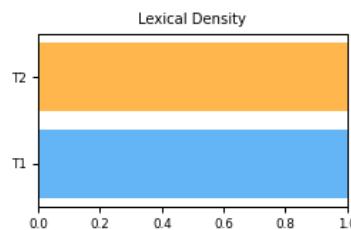


with difficulty but

retain them easily, and

they keep it with ease.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the difficulties

which

they have in acquiring

their dominions arise

it rise

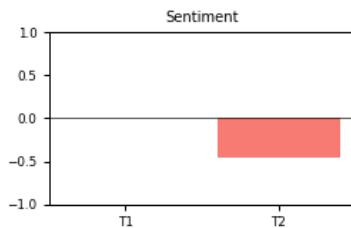
in part from the new rules and

regulations that

methods which they are forced

they have

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to introduce

in order

to establish their

position securely.

government and its security. And it ought to

It must be considered

be remembered

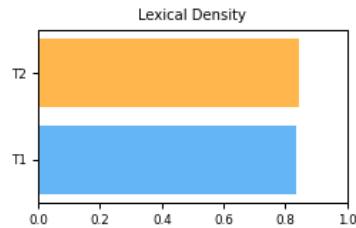
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



that there is nothing more difficult to  
carry take in hand, more perilous to conduct, or  
out, nor more doubtful of success, nor more  
dangerous to handle,

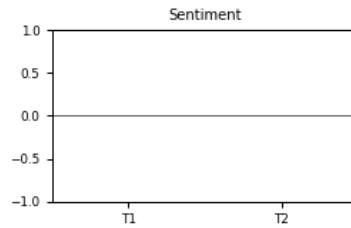
more uncertain in its success,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



than  
to  
initiate take the lead in the  
introduction of

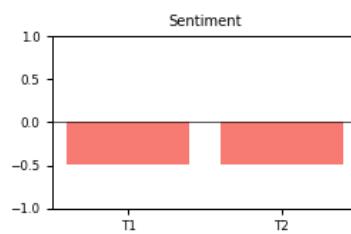
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



a new order of things

- . For the reformer has enemies in , because the innovator has for  
enemies

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



all

those who

- profit by have done well under  
the old

order, and only conditions, and  
lukewarm defenders in

all

those who

would profit by

may do well under

the new

order, this lukewarmness arising

. This

coolness arises

partly from fear of

their adversaries,

the opponents,

who have the laws

in their

on

favour;

their side,

and partly from the incredulity of

mankind,

men,

who do not

truly

readily

believe in

anything new

new things

until they have had

actual

a long

experience of

it.

them.

Thus it

arises that on every opportunity for attacking the reformer. It happens that whenever those who are hostile to the reformation have the

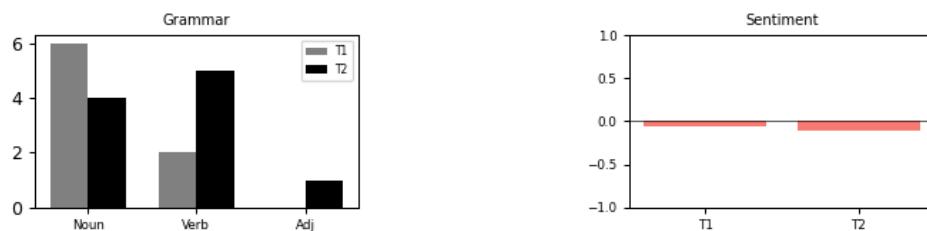
his opponents do so with the zeal of partisans,

happens that whenever those who are hostile

opportunity to attack they do it like partisans,

whilst

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the others

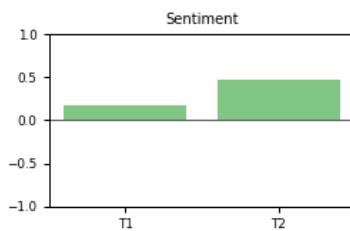
only defend

defend lukewarmly, in such wise that the

him half-heartedly, so that between them he runs great danger.

prince is endangered along with them.

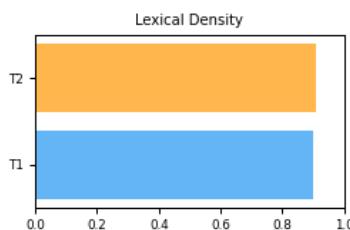
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



It is  
necessary

, however, in order to investigate thoroughly this question, to examine , therefore, if we desire to discuss this matter thoroughly, to inquire

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

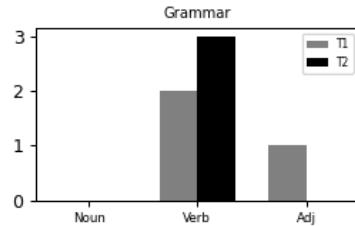


whether these innovators

are independent, or whether they  
depend upon

can rely on themselves  
or have to depend on

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



others, that is to say, whether

in order to carry out , to consummate  
their designs they have to entreat or are able their enterprise, have they to use prayers or  
to can they use

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



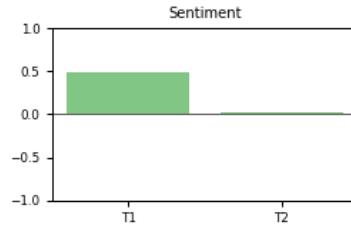
force. In the first

case they invariably succeed ill, and  
accomplish nothing;

instance they always succeed badly, and  
never compass

anything;

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



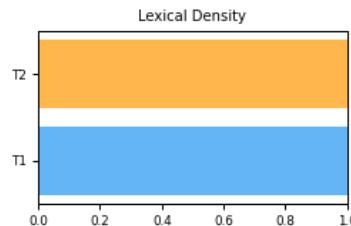
but when

they can

depend on their own strength and are able to

rely on themselves and

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



use force

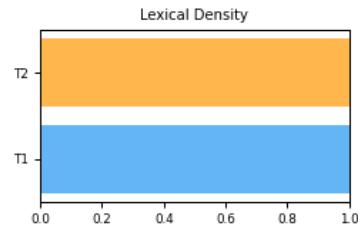
, they

, then they

rarely fail. Thus it comes about

are rarely endangered. Hence it is

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



that all armed prophets have conquered

and

the

unarmed ones

failed; for besides what has been already

have been destroyed. Besides the

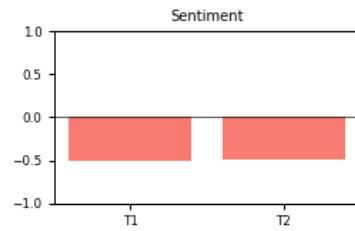
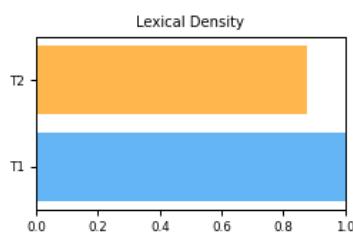
said, the

reasons mentioned, the nature of the people

character of people varies, and

is variable, and whilst

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



it is easy to persuade them

of a thing,

, it is

but

difficult to

keep

fix

them in that persuasion. And

so

thus

it is necessary

to

order things so

take such measures

that when they

believe

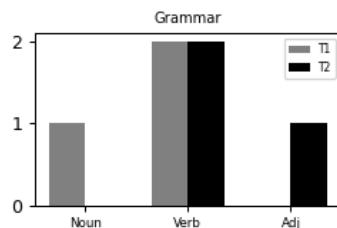
no longer

believe, they can be made

, it may be possible to make them

to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



believe by force

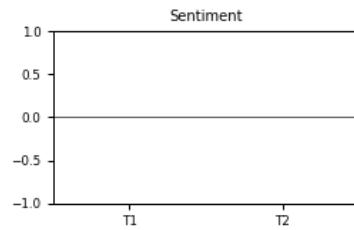
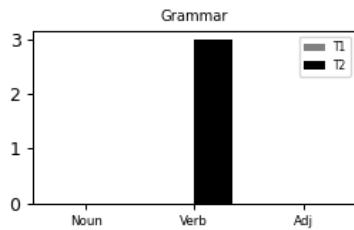
If

Moses, Cyrus, Theseus, and Romulus

would

had been unarmed they could

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



not have

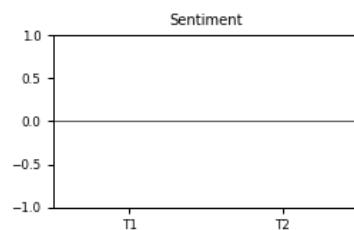
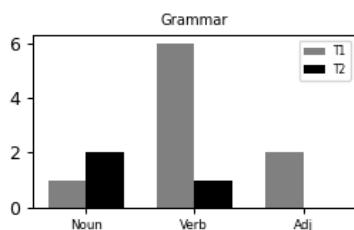
been able to make their institutions observed

enforced their constitutions for long—

for so long had they

been disarmed,

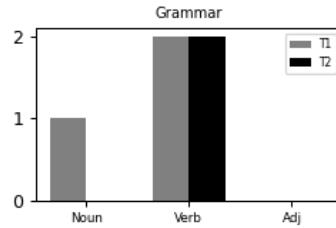
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



as happened in our  
own  
time to Fra Girolamo Savonarola,  
who  
failed entirely in  
was ruined with  
rules when  
order of things  
immediately  
the multitude  
began to  
believed  
disbelieve  
in him  
,no longer,  
and he had no means of  
holding fast  
keeping steadfast  
those who

had believed or of making  
 believed nor of compelling

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the unbelievers to believe. Therefore

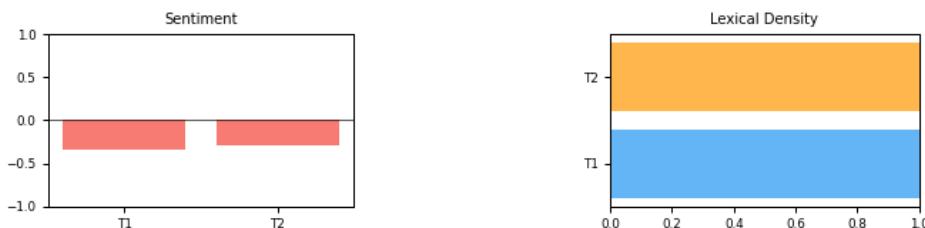
such

men

as these have great

difficulty in making their way, and difficulties  
 in consummating their enterprise, for

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



all

their dangers are

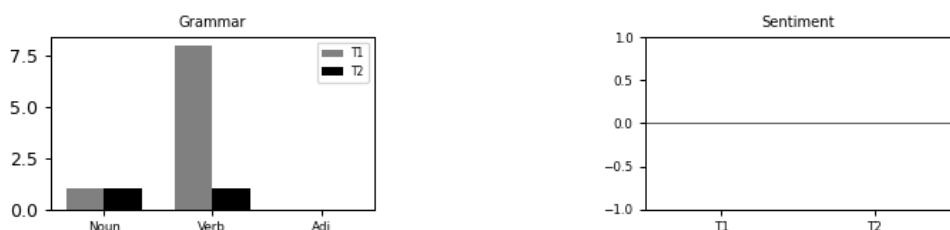
met on the road and must be overcome by in the  
 their own ascent, yet with ability they will overcome  
 abilities; them;

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



but when  
 once they have overcome them and have these are  
 begun to be overcome, and  
 held in veneration, and have suppressed

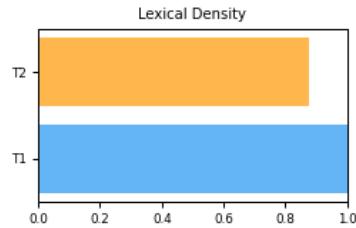
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



those who envied them

, they their success are exterminated,  
 remain powerful and they will begin to be respected, and they will  
 continue afterwards  
 powerful,

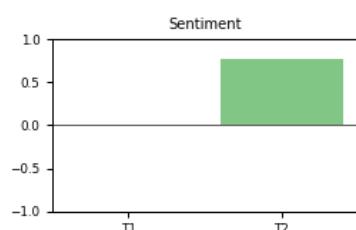
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



secure, honoured and happy. To

the high examples these great examples I wish to  
 given I will

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



add a lesser one

, which, however, is to be compared in ; still it bears some

some measure with

resemblance to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



them and

will serve as an instance of all such cases,

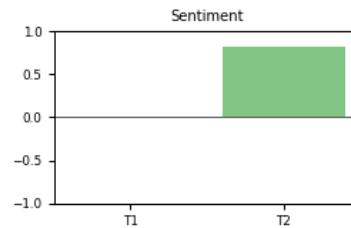
I wish it to suffice me for all of a like

that of Jerone of Syracuse, who

kind: it is Hiero the Syracusan.[1] This man

rose

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



from a private

individual became

station to be

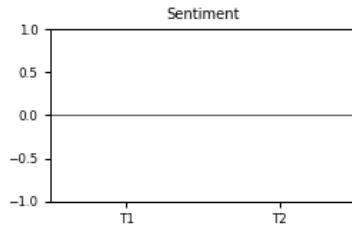
Prince

of

Siracusa, without other aid from fortune  
beyond the

Syracuse, nor did he, either, owe anything to  
fortune but

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



opportunity;

for the

Siracusans

Syracusans,

being oppressed

elected him as

, chose him

for

their captain

, from

, afterwards

which by merit

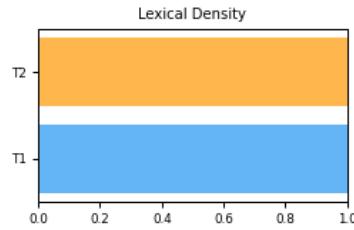
he was

made prince; while still in private life his  
virtues were such that it was written

rewarded by being made their  
prince. He was of so great ability, even as a  
private citizen, that one

who writes

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



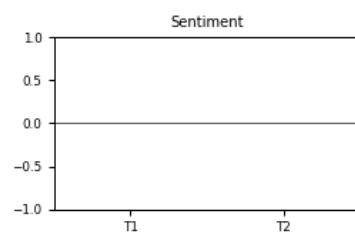
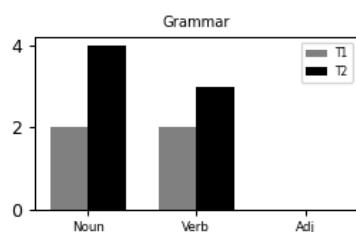
of him

, that he lacked nothing  
to reign but the kingdom. He

says he wanted nothing but a kingdom to be  
a king.

This man

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

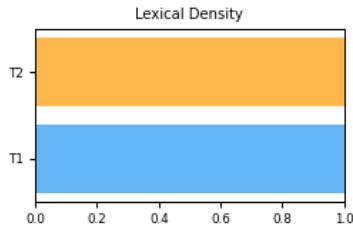


abolished the old

militia, raised a new  
one, abandoned his old friendships and  
formed

soldiery, organized the new, gave up old  
alliances, made

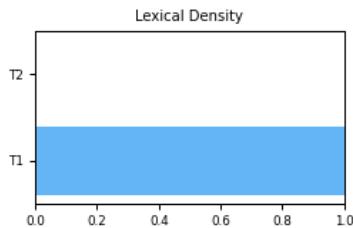
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



new ones; and as he had

thus friends and soldiers of

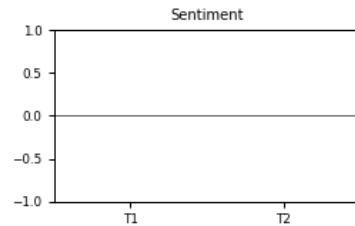
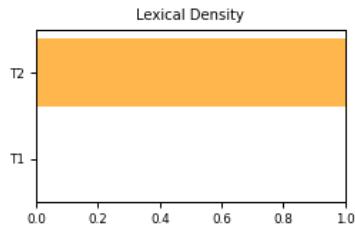
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



his own

,  
soldiers and allies, on  
such foundations

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



he was able

on this foundation

to build

securely, so that while

any edifice: thus, whilst

he had

great

endured much

trouble in acquiring

his

,

position

he had

but

little in

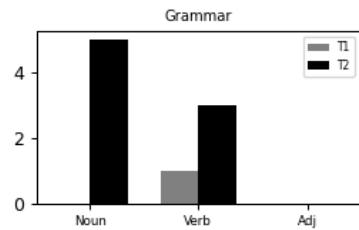
maintaining it.

keeping.

[1] Hiero II, born about 307 B.C., died 216

B.C.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



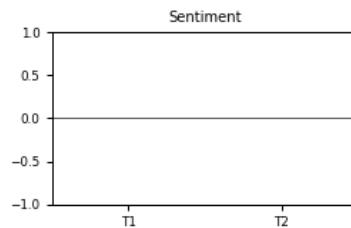
## CHAPTER VII

OF NEW DOMINIONS ACQUIRED

CONCERNING NEW PRINCIPALITIES

WHICH ARE ACQUIRED EITHER

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



BY THE

POWER

ARMS

OF OTHERS OR BY

FORTUNE

GOOD FORTUNE

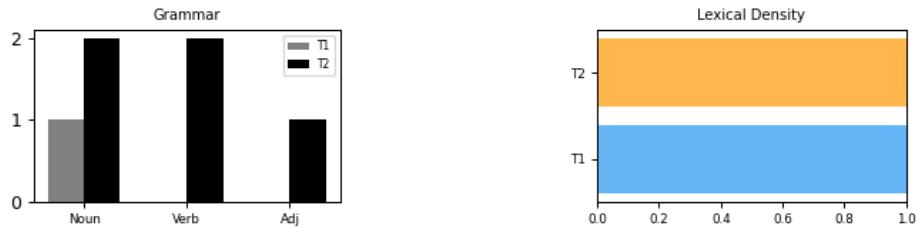
Those who

rise from

solely by good fortune become princes from

being

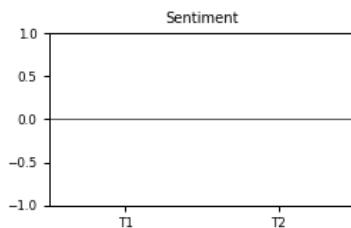
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



private citizens

to be princes merely by fortune

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



have little trouble in rising but

very

much in

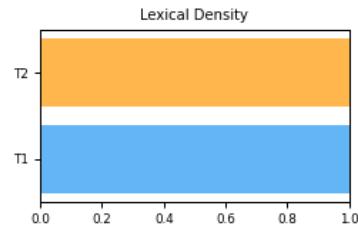
maintaining their

keeping atop; they

position. They meet with no

have not any

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

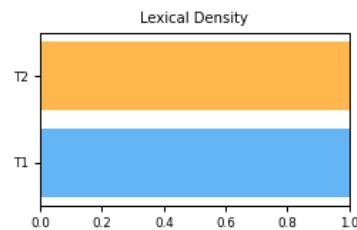
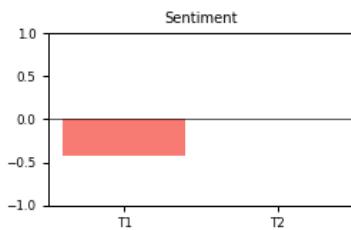


difficulties on the way

as up, because  
they fly

over , but they  
them, but all their difficulties arise have many

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



when they

are established. reach the summit.

Such

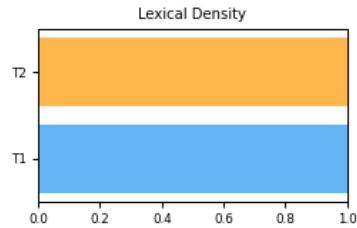
are

they who are granted a state

those to whom some state

is given

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



either for money, or by

the

favour of him

who

grants

bestows

it, as happened to many in Greece, in the cities of Ionia

and of the Hellespont

, who were created princes

, where princes were made

by Darius in order

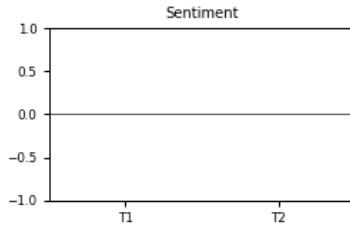
to

that they might

hold these places

hold the cities both

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

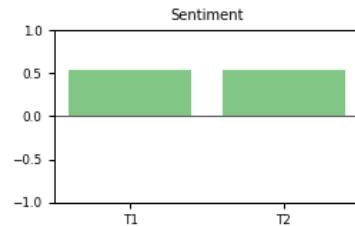
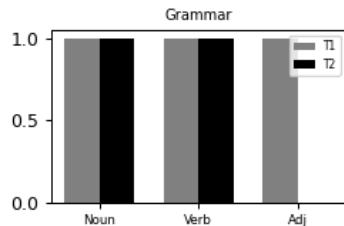


for his security and

glory; such were also

his glory; as also were

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



those

emperors who

from private citizens became emperors by

, by the corruption of the soldiers, from being

bribing the

citizens

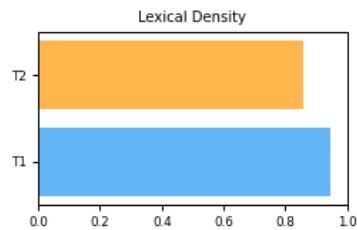
army. Such as these depend absolutely on the

came to empire. Such stand simply elevated

good will and

upon the goodwill and the

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



fortune of

those who have raised them, both of which  
are extremely

him who has elevated them—two most

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



inconstant and

unstable

. They neither

things. Neither have they the knowledge

requisite for the position;

because, unless they are men of great worth

and ability, it is not

reasonable to expect that they should

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

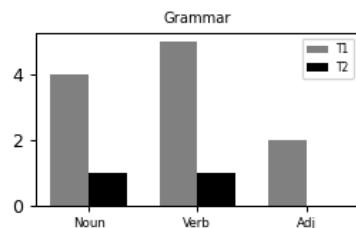


know how to

, nor are in a position to maintain  
their rank, for unless he be a man of great  
genius it is not likely  
that one who has

command, having

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

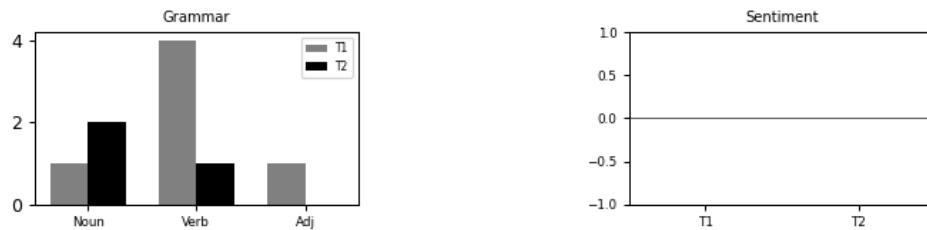


always lived in a private

position should know how to  
command, and they are unable to command

condition; besides, they cannot hold it

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



because they

possess no

have not

forces

which

will be

they can keep

friendly and faithful

to them. Moreover, states quickly

.

founded,

States that rise unexpectedly, then,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



like all other things

in nature

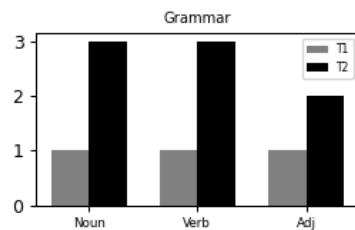
which are born and grow rapidly, cannot

have deep roots, so

leave their foundations and

correspondencies[1] fixed in such a way

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



that the first storm

destroys

will not

overthrow

them, unless, as

already said, the man who thus becomes a

is said, those who unexpectedly become

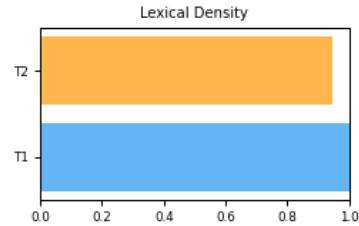
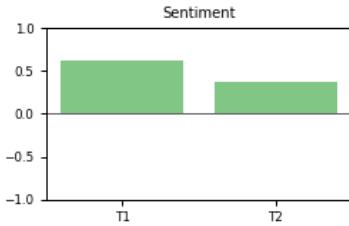
prince is of such great genius

princes are men of so much ability that they

as

know they have

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

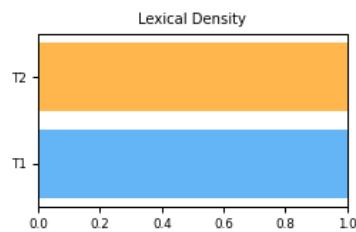


to be

able to take immediate steps for maintaining  
what

prepared at once to hold that which

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



fortune

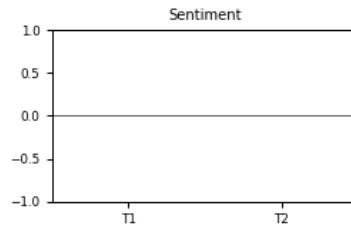
has thrown into

his lap, and lay afterwards

their laps,

and that

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



those foundations which

others

make before becoming princes. With regard

have laid \_before\_ they became

to

princes, they must lay \_afterwards\_.

[1] “Le radici e corrispondenze,” their roots

(i.e. foundations) and

correspondencies or relations with other

states—a common meaning of

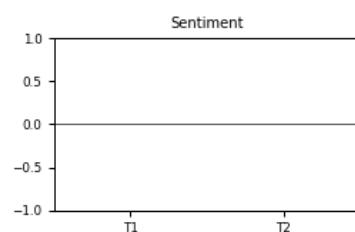
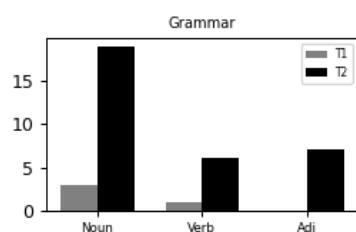
“correspondence” and “correspondency” in

the sixteenth and seventeenth

centuries.

Concerning

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



these two methods

of

becoming

rising to be

a prince,--by ability or

by good

fortune, I

will here

wish to

adduce two examples

which have taken place

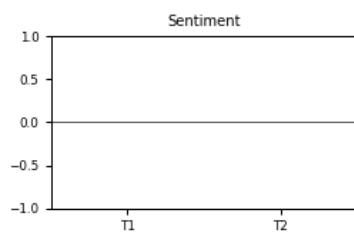
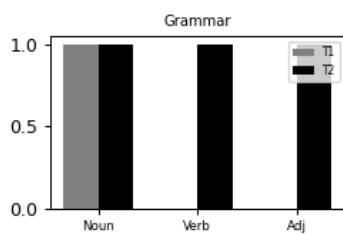
within our

memory, those of

own recollection, and

these are

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



Francesco Sforza

[2]

and Cesare Borgia.

Francesco, by

appropriate

proper

means and

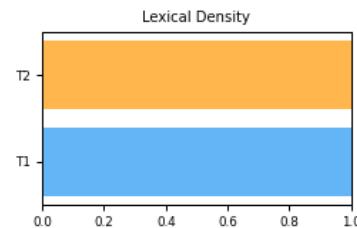
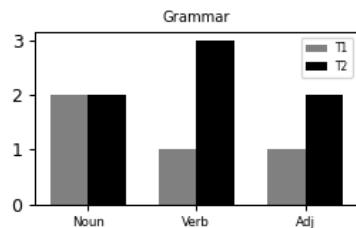
through great abilities, from

with great ability, from being a private

citizen became

person rose to be

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



Duke of Milan, and

what

that which

he had

attained after

acquired with

a thousand

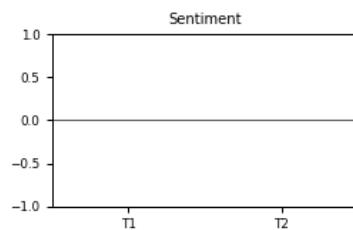
difficulties he maintained anxieties  
he kept

with little trouble. On the other hand,

Cesare Borgia

, commonly called Duke Valentine, acquired , called  
the state by the people Duke Valentino, acquired his  
through the fortune state during the ascendancy

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

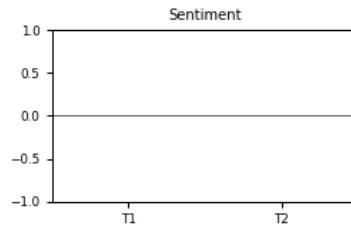


of his father and

by the same means  
on its decline he  
lost it

, notwithstanding that he  
had taken

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



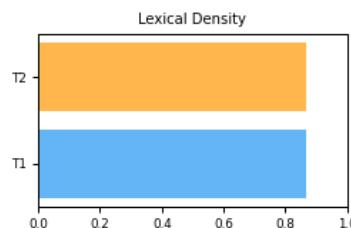
every measure

was adopted by him and everything done  
that a prudent and capable man could do to  
establish himself firmly  
in that state that

and done all that ought to be done by a wise  
and able man to fix firmly his roots in the  
states which

states which

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the arms and

the favours

## fortunes

of others had

given him.

bestowed on him.

For, as we have said,

[2] Francesco Sforza, born 1401, died 1466.

He married Bianca Maria

Visconti, a natural daughter of Filippo

Visconti, the Duke of Milan,

on whose death he procured his own

elevation to the duchy. Machiavelli

was the accredited agent of the Florentine

Republic to Cesare Borgia

(1478-1507) during the transactions which

led up to the assassinations

of the Orsini and Vitelli at Sinigalia, and

along with his letters to

his chiefs in Florence he has left an account,

written ten years

before *The Prince*, of the proceedings of

the duke in his

“Descrittione del modo tenuto dal duca

Valentino nello ammazzare

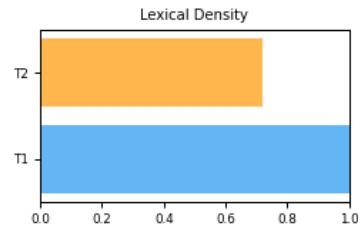
Vitellozzo Vitelli,” etc., a translation of

which is appended to the

present work.

Because, as is stated above,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



he who

does not lay

has not first laid

his foundations

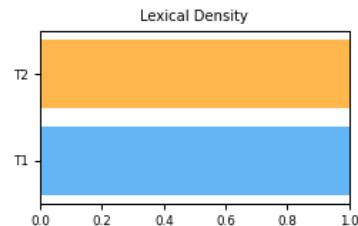
beforehand

may be able

may by great abilities do so afterwards,

although

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



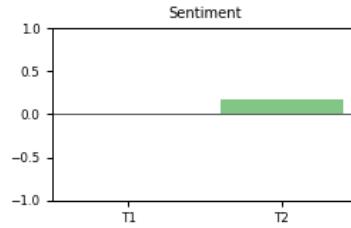
with great

ability to lay them afterwards, but they will

be

laid with

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



trouble

to the architect and danger to the building. If

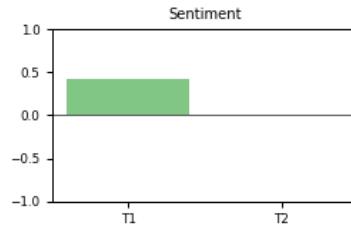
, then, one considers

,

the progress made

therefore, all the steps taken

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



by the duke

,

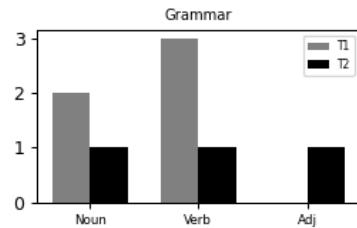
be considered,

it will be seen

how firm were the  
foundations he had laid to

that he laid solid foundations for

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



his future power

, which , and

I do not

think consider

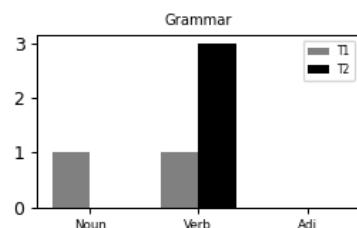
it

superfluous to

examine, as I know of no

discuss them, because I do not know what

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



better precepts

for

to give

a new

prince

to follow

than the example of his actions; and if his

measures

dispositions were of no avail, that was not his

were not successful, it was through no fault

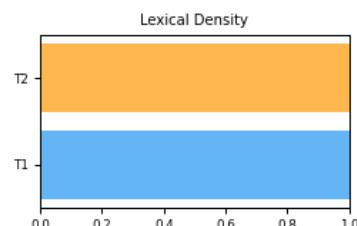
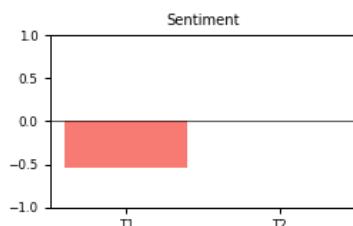
fault, but

of his own but only by

the extraordinary and extreme

the most extraordinary

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



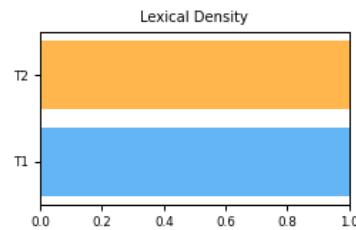
malignity of fortune

Alexander the Sixth,

In wishing to

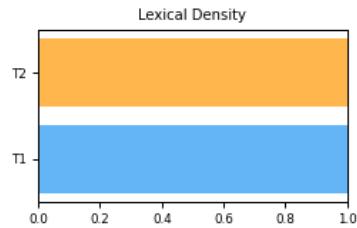
<p>aggrandise</p> <p>the duke his son</p>	<p>aggrandize</p>
<p>, Alexander VI. had to meet very great difficulties both present and future. In the first place, he saw no way of making him ruler</p>	
<p>, had many immediate and prospective difficulties. Firstly, he did not see his way to make him master</p>	

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



<p>of any state that was not a possession</p>	<p>state</p>
<p>of the Church. And</p>	
<p>in attempting to take that of</p>	
<p>if he was willing to rob</p>	

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the Church, he knew that the Duke of Milan  
and the Venetians would not consent, because Faenza and Rimini were  
already under the protection of the Venetians

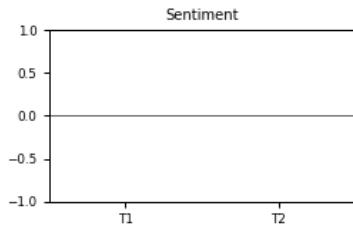
. Besides this,  
He saw

, moreover, that  
the arms of Italy, especially

of those who  
those by which he  
might have

served him, were  
in the hands of those who  
assisted, in hands that

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



would fear the

greatness

aggrandizement

of the pope

, and

,

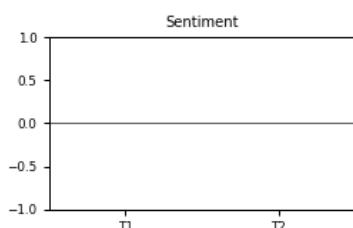
therefore he could not depend upon them,

namely, the Orsini and the Colonnese

being all under the Orsinis

and Colonnes

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



and their

adherents. It was, therefore, necessary to

following. It behoved

disturb the existing condition and bring about  
 him, therefore, to upset this state of affairs  
 disorders in the states  
 and embroil the powers,  
 of Italy in order to obtain secure mastery  
 so as to make himself securely master of  
 over a

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



part of  
 them;  
 their states.  
 this  
 was easy, for

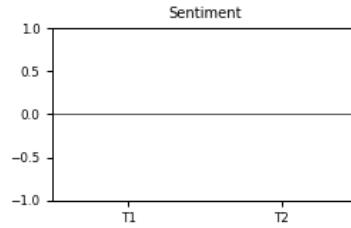
him to do, because  
 he found the Venetians

, who, actuated  
 , moved  
 by other

motives,  
 reasons, inclined to bring back

had invited

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the French into Italy

, which he ; he would

not only

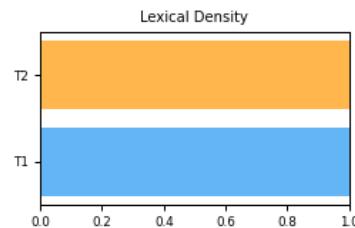
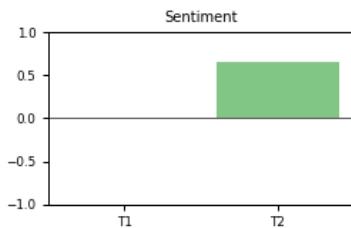
did

not oppose

, this, but he would render it more easy

but facilitated

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



by dissolving the

former

marriage of King Louis

.

. Therefore

The king

came

thus

into Italy with the

aid

assistance

of the Venetians and the consent of

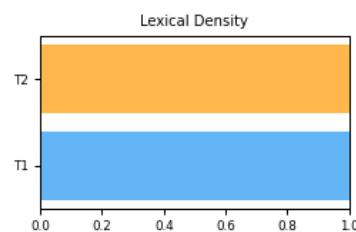
Alexander

, and had hardly arrived at Milan before

. He

was no sooner in Milan than

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the pope

obtained

had soldiers

troops

from him for

his enterprise in

the

attempt on

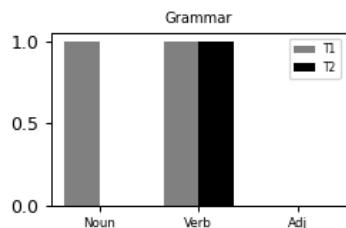
the Romagna, which

he carried out

yielded to him on

by means of

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the reputation of the king. The duke

having thus obtained

, therefore, having acquired

the Romagna and

defeated the Colonnas,

beaten the

Colonnesi, while wishing to hold that and to  
advance further,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



was hindered

in maintaining it

and proceeding further

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



by two things: the one, his forces

, of which he

doubted the fidelity;

did not appear loyal to

him,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the other the

will

goodwill

of France, that is to say,

he feared

lest the arms

that

the forces

of the Orsini

of

,

which he

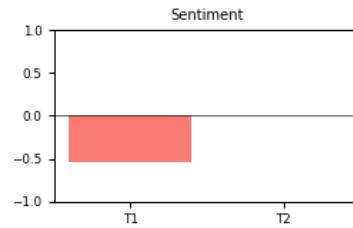
had availed himself

was using, would not stand to him,

should fail him, and

that

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



not only

might they

hinder him

in obtaining

from winning

more but

take

might

from him

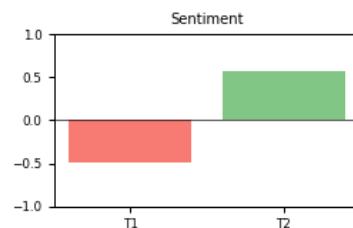
themselves seize

what he had

already conquered, and he also feared

won, and

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



that the  
king might

also

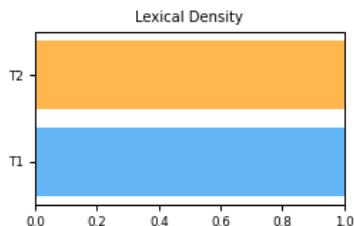
do the same

. Of the Orsini

He had

evidence of this as regards the Orsini a warning

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



when, after taking Faenza

, he assaulted Bologna and observed their and

backwardness in the assault. attacking Bologna, he saw them go very

unwillingly to that attack.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



And as

regards

to

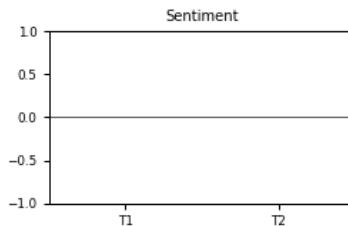
the king, he

perceived his

learned his mind when he himself,

designs when,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



after taking the

dukedom

Duchy

of Urbino

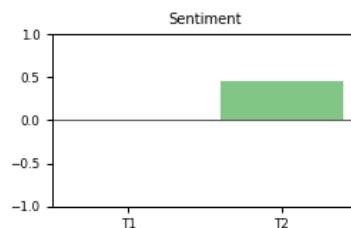
, he ,  
attacked Tuscany,  
and the king made him desist from that

enterprise; whereupon undertaking; hence  
the

duke decided to depend no

longer on the fortunes and arms more upon the  
arms and the luck

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



of others

For

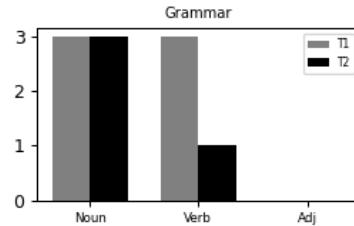
The first thing he

did was to weaken the parties of the Orsinis weakened the Orsini and Colonna parties

and

Colonnas

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



in Rome by gaining

to himself

all their adherents who were gentlemen

and

,

making them

followers of himself, by granting them large

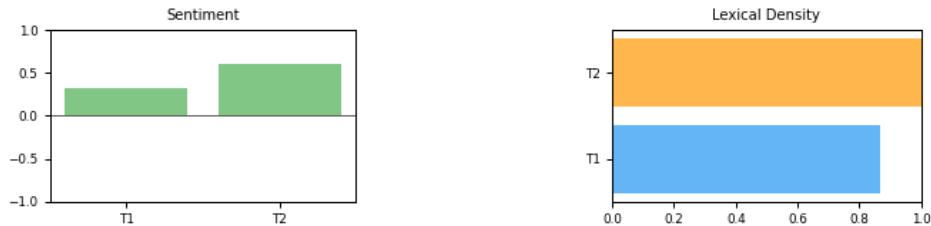
his gentlemen, giving them good pay, and,

pensions,

and appointing them to commands and

offices

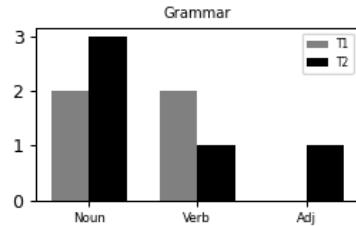
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



according to their rank

, honouring them with office and command  
so that their attachment to their parties was  
extinguished in such a way that

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

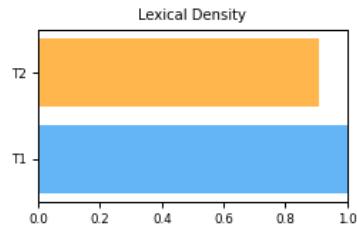


in a few

months

, and entirely concentrated on all attachment to the factions was destroyed  
and turned  
entirely to

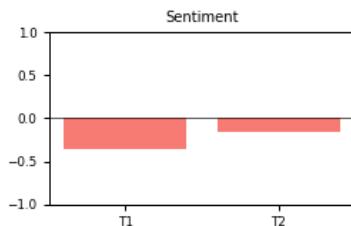
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the duke. After this he awaited an  
opportunity

for crushing the Orsinis, having dispersed to crush the  
Orsini, having scattered

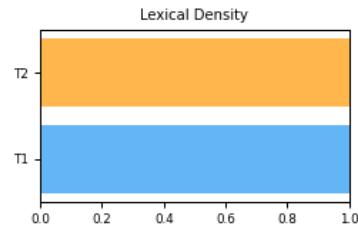
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the adherents of  
the Colonna

family, and when the opportunity arrived he house. This came  
made good use to him soon and he used it well;  
of it,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



for the Orsini

seeing , perceiving

at length that the

greatness aggrandizement

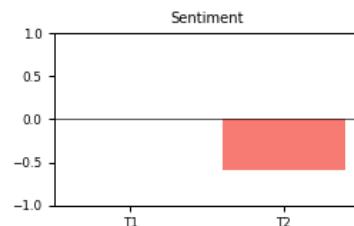
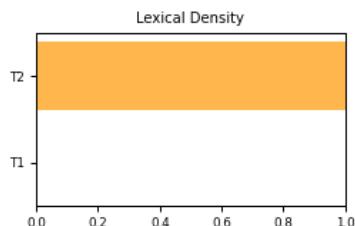
of the duke

and

the Church was ruin to them,

called a meeting

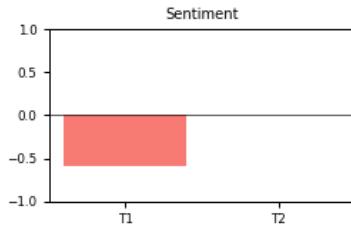
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



of the

Church meant their own ruin, convoked a  
diet at

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

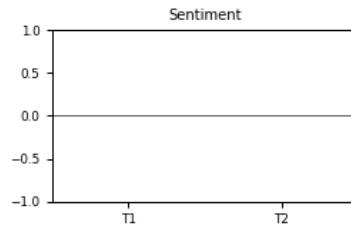


Magione in  
the Perugino. Hence sprang  
the rebellion

of  
Urbino and the tumults in  
Romagna and infinite  
dangers to the duke

, who overcame them all  
, all of which he overcame

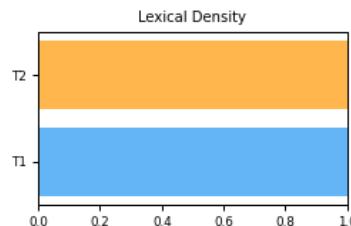
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



with  
the help of the French

; and having regained his reputation, neither . Having restored his authority,  
trusting France nor other foreign forces in  
order

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



not to

have to oppose leave it at risk by  
them, trusting either to the French or other outside  
forces,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

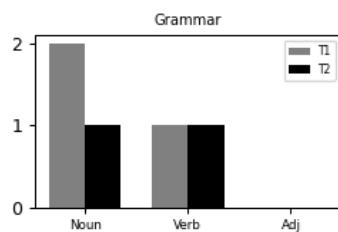


he had recourse to

stratagem. He dissembled his aims

his wiles, and he knew

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



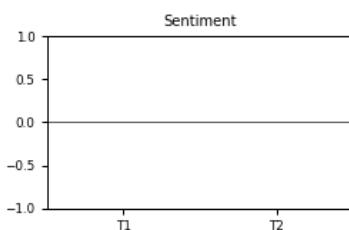
so well

that

how to conceal his mind that, by

the Orsini, through

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

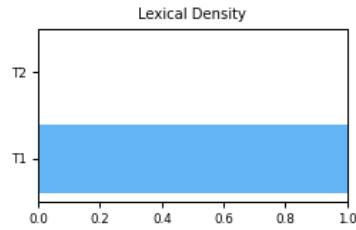


## the mediation of Signor

Pavolo, made their peace  
with him, which

Pagolo—whom

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

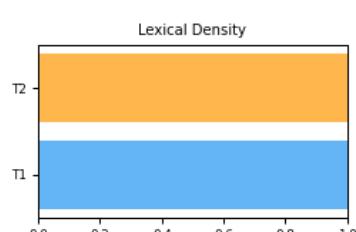


the duke

spared no efforts to make secure, presenting  
them with robes, money,

did not fail to secure with  
all kinds of attention, giving him money,  
apparel,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



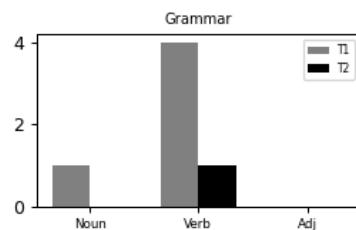
and horses

, —the  
Orsini were reconciled,  
so that

in  
their simplicity

they brought them  
were induced to come to Sinigaglia and fell

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



into his  
hands. Having power at Sinigalia.[3] Having exterminated  
thus suppressed these the

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



leaders and

made

turned

their partisans

into

his friends,

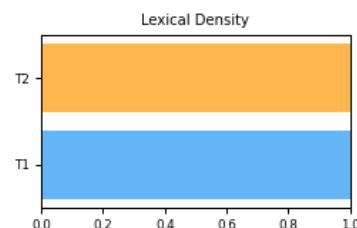
the duke

had laid a very good foundation

laid sufficiently good

foundations

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to his power, having all the

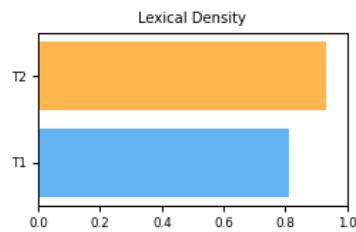
Romagna

with and

the duchy of Urbino, and

having gained the favour of the people now beginning to appreciate their  
the inhabitants, who began to feel the benefit prosperity, he  
of his rule. gained them all over to himself.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



And as

this

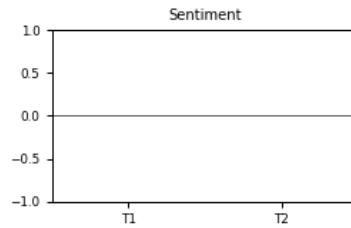
part point

is worthy of

note and of imitation notice,

and to be imitated

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



by others, I

will not

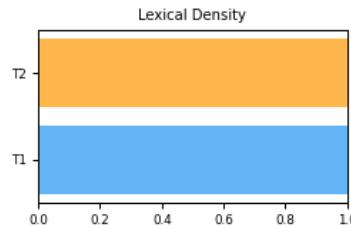
am not willing to leave it out.

omit mention of it. When he took

[3] Sinigalia, 31st December 1502.

When the duke occupied

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the Romagna

, it had previously been

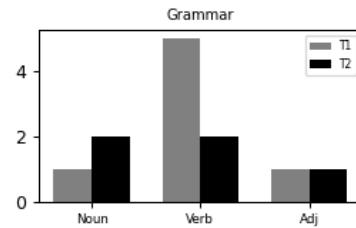
he found it under the rule of weak

governed by weak rulers, who had rather

masters, who rather plundered

despoiled

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



their subjects than

governed

ruled

them, and

given

gave

them more cause for disunion than for union,

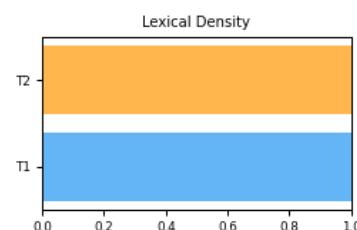
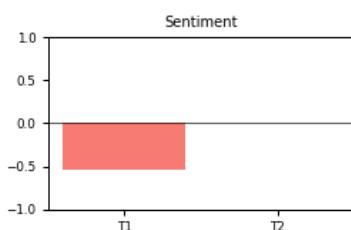
so that the

province was a prey to robbery, assaults,

country was

full of robbery, quarrels,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



and every kind

of

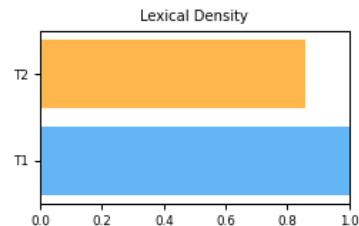
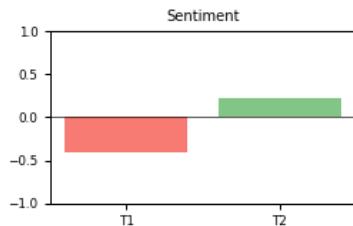
disorder. He, therefore, judged

violence; and so, wishing

to bring back peace and obedience to

authority, he considered

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



it necessary to give

them

it

a good

government in order to make them peaceful

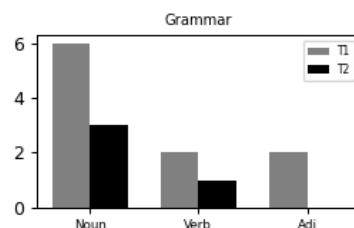
governor. Thereupon he promoted Messer

and obedient to his rule.

Ramiro

For this purpose he appointed Messer Remiro

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

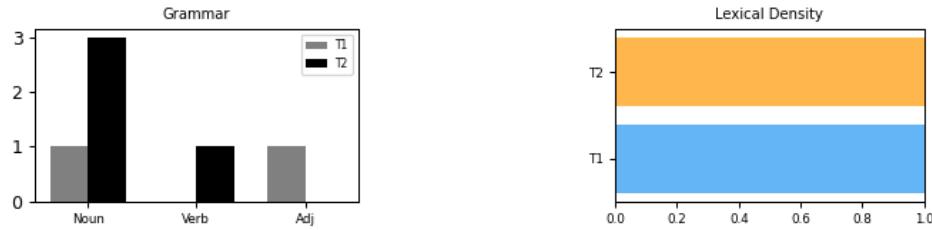


## d' Orco

, a cruel and able

, [4] a swift and cruel

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



man, to whom he gave the fullest

authority.

power.

This man, in a short time

,

restored peace and unity with the

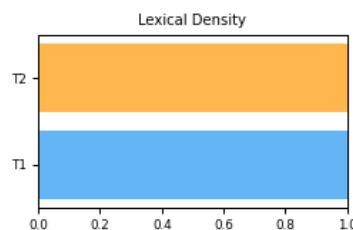
was highly successful in rendering the

greatest success. Afterwards

country orderly and united,

whereupon

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

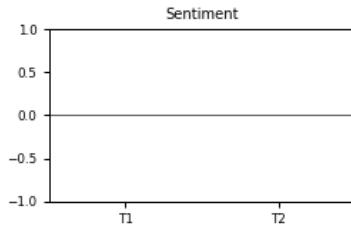


the duke

, not deeming

considered that it was not  
advisable to confer

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



such excessive authority

expedient,

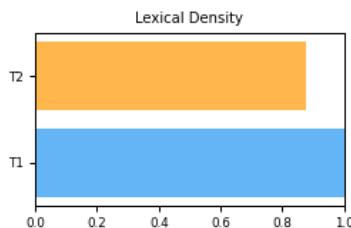
, for he had no doubt but

lest it should become hateful, appointed a

that he would become odious, so he set up a

civil

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.

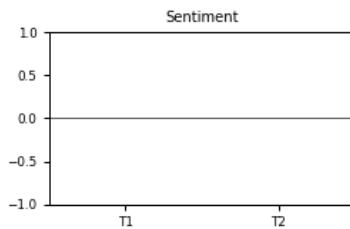


court of

justice  
in  
the  
judgment

middle of the province under an country, under a most

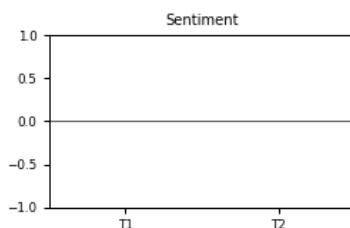
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



## excellent president

, to which each , wherein all cities had their city appointed its own advocate. And as advocates. And because

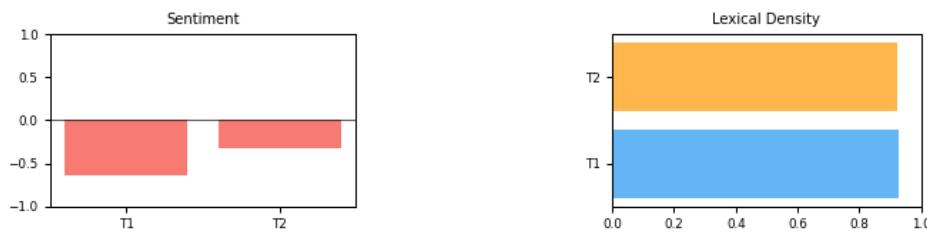
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



he knew that the

harshness of past severity had caused some  
the past had engendered some amount of hatred against himself, so, to clear himself in  
hatred, in order to purge

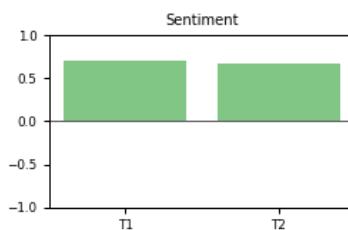
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the  
minds of the people and

to win them over completely, he resolved gain them entirely to himself, he desired

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

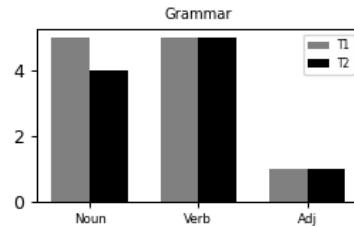


to  
show that if any cruelty had

taken place it was not by his orders, but been practised, it had not originated with

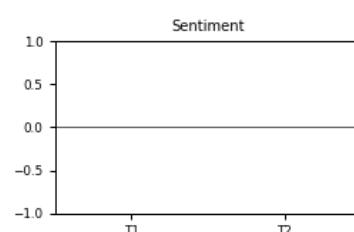
through the harsh disposition of his minister. him, but in  
 And taking him on some the natural sternness of the minister. Under  
 pretext, he had him placed this pretence he took  
 Ramiro, and

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



one morning  
 in the public square caused him to be executed and left on the  
 piazza

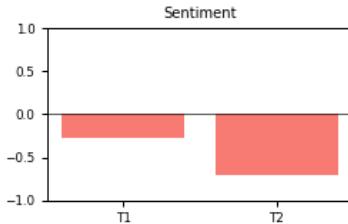
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



at Cesena  
 , with the block and a bloody knife at

cut in half, with a piece of wood and blood-stained knife by

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



his side.

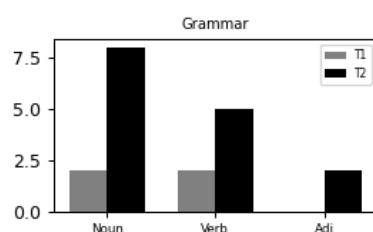
The

both satisfaction and to be at once satisfied  
amazement. But to return to where we left and dismayed.  
off. [4] Ramiro d'Orco. Ramiro de Lorqua.

[4] Ramiro d'Orco. Ramiro de Lorqua.

But let us return whence we started. I say that

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



The duke

being now

, finding

himself now sufficiently

powerful and partly secured

against present perils,

from immediate

being

dangers by having

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



armed himself

,

in his own way,

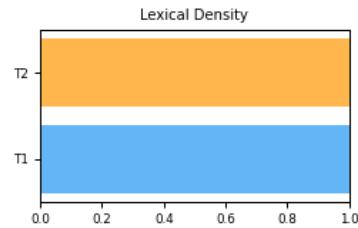
and having in a great measure

put down those

crushed those forces in his vicinity that could

neighbouring forces which might

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

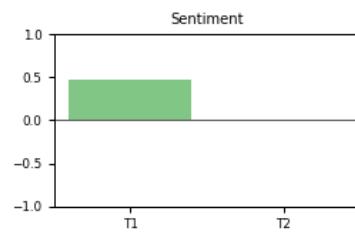
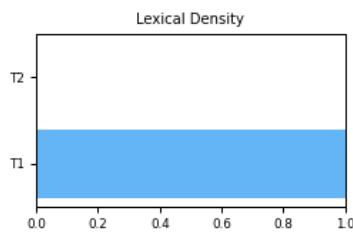


injure him

, had now to get the respect

of France,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

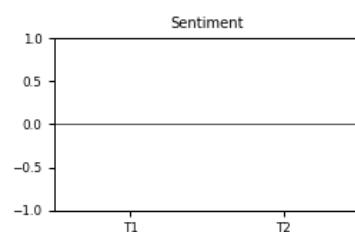
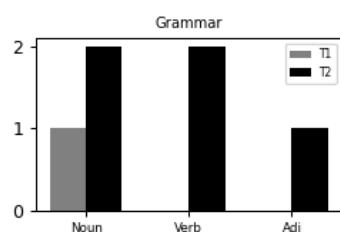


if he wished to proceed with his

acquisitions,

conquest, had next to consider France,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



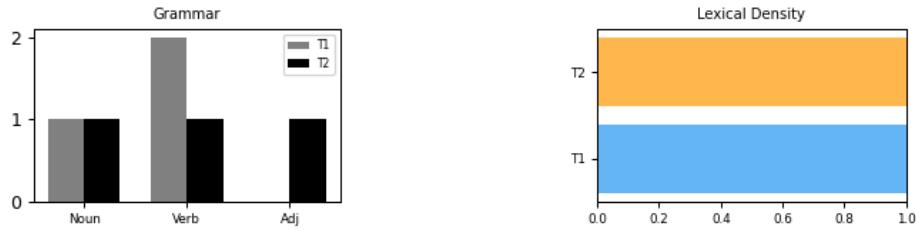
for he

knew that the king, who

had lately discovered his error,

too late was aware of his mistake,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

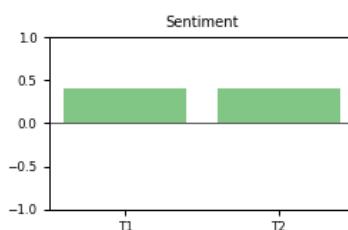


would not

give him any help.

support him. And from this time

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



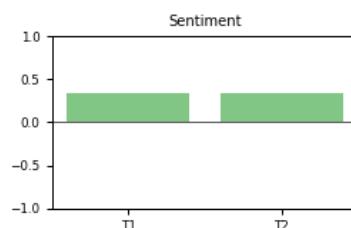
He began

therefore

to seek

fresh new  
alliances and to  
vacillate temporize  
with France in the expedition  
that the French made which she was making  
towards  
the kingdom of Naples against the Spaniards, who were besieging Gaeta  
.  
.  
It was  
His intention  
was to assure himself of them, which to secure himself against them, and this

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



he would

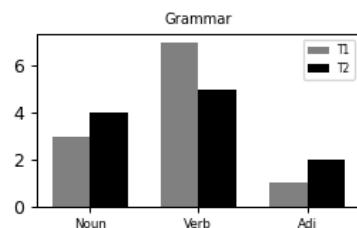
soon have  
succeeded in doing if Alexander had lived.

have quickly accomplished had Alexander  
lived.

These were the measures  
taken by him with regard to the present.

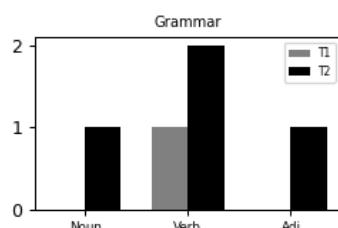
Such was his line of action as to present  
affairs. But

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



As to the future, he  
feared  
had to fear, in the first place,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

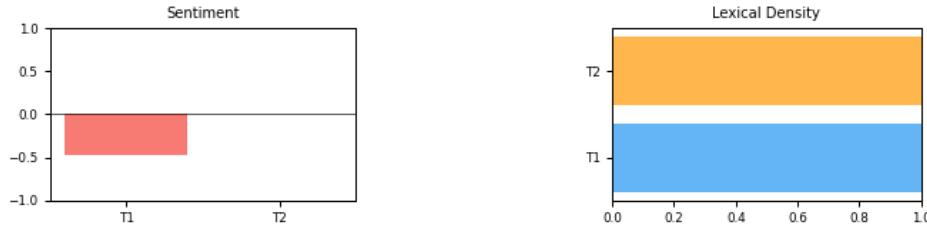


that a new successor to the Church might not be friendly to him and  
might seek to

deprive him of what

take from him that which

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



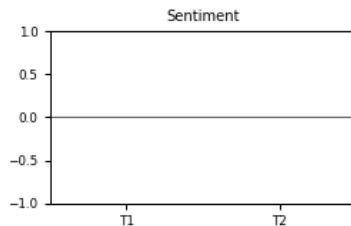
Alexander had given him

, and he

, so he decided to act

sought to provide against this

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



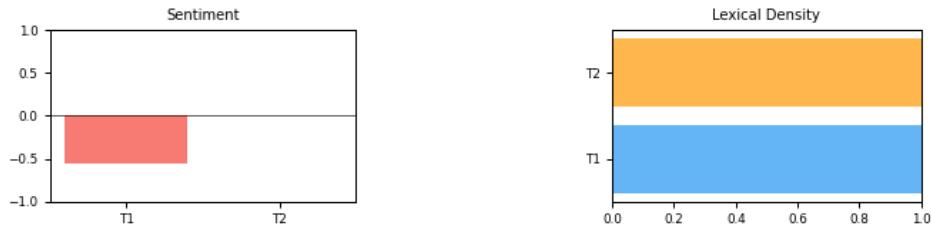
in four ways. Firstly, by

destroying all

exterminating the families

who were of the blood

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of those

ruling families which

lords whom

he had despoiled

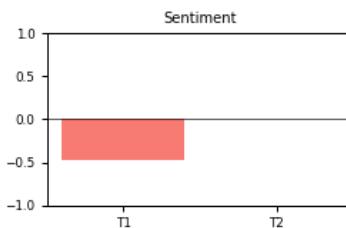
,

, so as

in order to deprive

to take away that pretext from

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



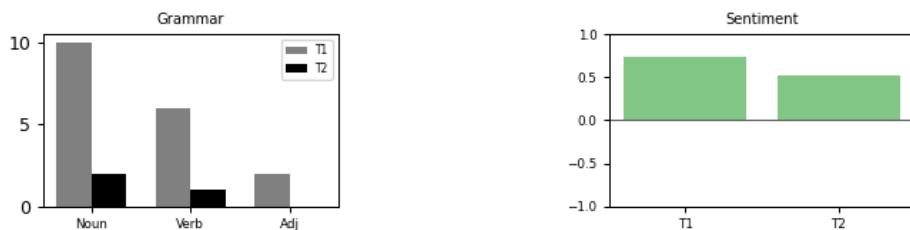
the pope

of any opportunity.

Secondly, by

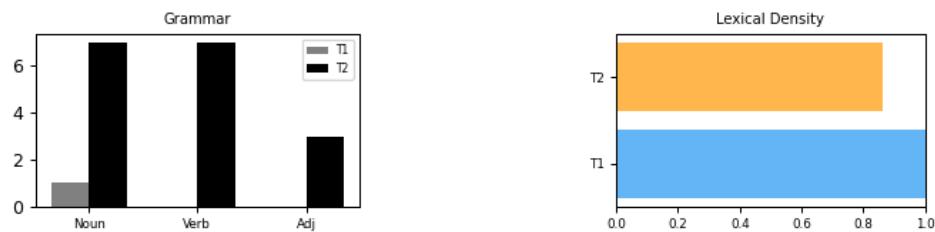
gaining winning to  
 the friendship of the Roman nobles, so that himself all the gentlemen of Rome, so  
 he might through them hold  
 as it were the pope in check. Thirdly, by  
 obtaining as great a hold on  
 the College as he could. Fourthly, by  
 acquiring such power before the  
 pope died

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



as to be able to  
 resist alone curb the Pope  
 with their aid, as has been observed. Thirdly,  
 by converting the  
 college more to himself. Fourthly, by  
 acquiring so much power before  
 the Pope should die that he could by his own  
 measures resist

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the first

onslaught.

shock.

Of these

four things

he had

,

at the death of Alexander

, he had

accomplished three

, and

. For

the fourth

he had

almost accomplished.

killed as many

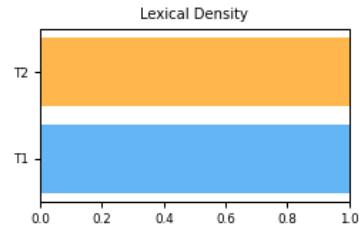
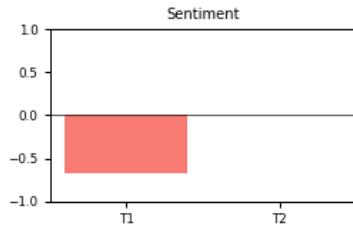
For

of the dispossessed

rulers he killed as many

lords

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



as he could lay hands

on, and

very few

few had

escaped; he had

gained to his party

won over

the Roman

nobles;

gentlemen,

and he had

a great share

the most numerous party

in the College

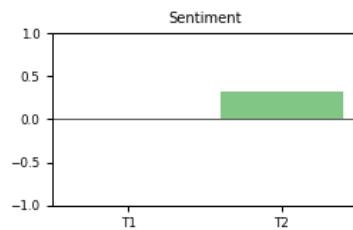
. And

As to

new possessions, he  
designed

any fresh acquisition, he intended

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to become

lord

master

of Tuscany

, and

,  
for he

already possessed Perugia and

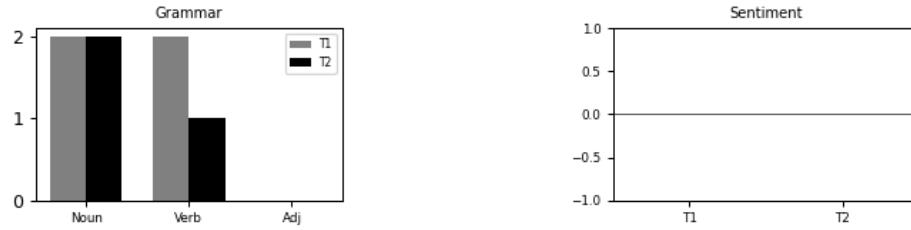
Piombino, and

had assumed the protectorate over Pisa;

Pisa was under his

protection.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



and as he had

no longer to

fear the French (

study France (

for the French

had been deprived

were already driven out

of the

kingdom of Naples by the Spaniards

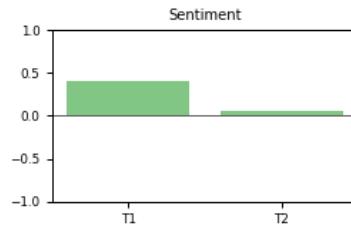
in such a way that both parties

, and

were obliged

in this way both were compelled

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

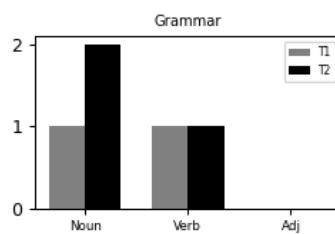


to buy his

friendship) he seized

goodwill), he pounced down  
upon

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



Pisa. After this, Lucca

and Siena

yielded

at once

yielded,

,

partly through

envy

hatred and partly through fear

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of the Florentines and

partly through fear;

the Florentines

would have

had no

resources, so that,

remedy

had he

succeeded

continued to prosper,

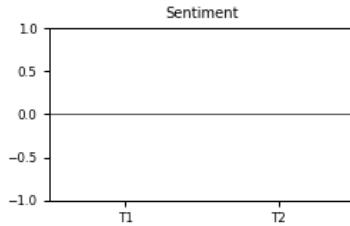
as he

had done before, in the very

was

prospering the

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

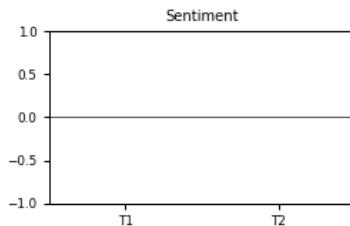


year that Alexander died

, for he had acquired so much

power and reputation that

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

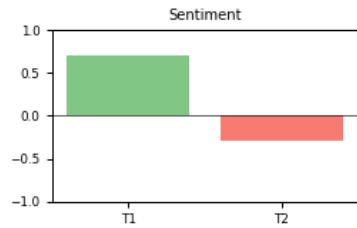


he would have

gained such strength and renown as to be  
able to maintain  
himself without depending

stood by himself, and no longer  
have depended

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

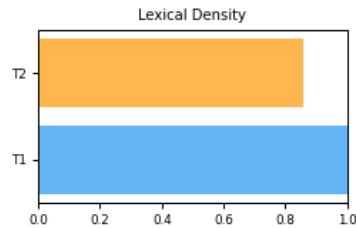


on the  
 fortunes or strength  
 luck and the forces  
 of others, but  
 solely  
 by  
 on  
 his own power and ability. But Alexander died five years  
 after he had first drawn  
 his  
 the  
 sword. He left  
 him  
 the duke  
 with the state of  
 Romagna  
 only firmly established, and all the other  
 alone consolidated, with the

schemes in mid-

rest in the

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



air,

between two

very powerful and

most powerful

hostile armies, and

suffering from a

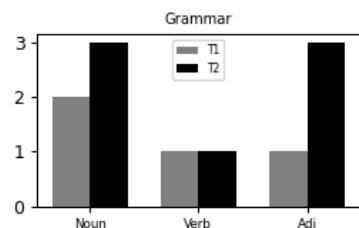
sick

fatal illness. But the valour

unto death. Yet there were in the duke such

boldness

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



and ability

of the duke were such, ,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

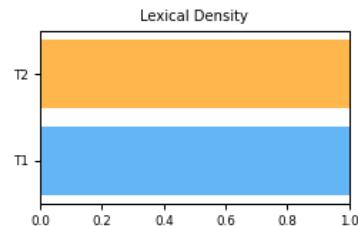


and

he knew so well how

to win over men or vanquish them, men are to be won or lost,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



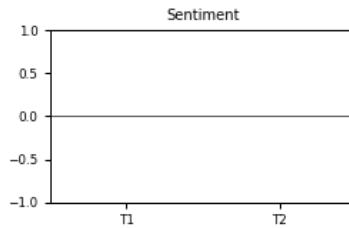
and so

strong firm  
were the foundations

that

which in so short a time

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



he had laid

in this short time,

,

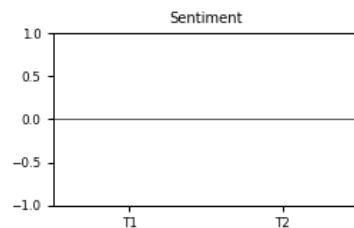
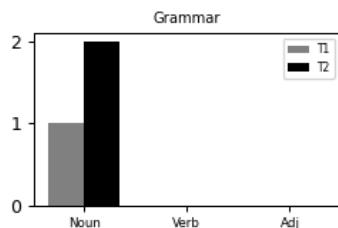
that if he

had not had those

two armies upon him, or else

armies on his back, or if he

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



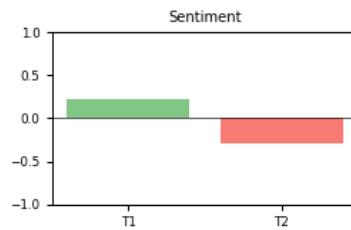
had been in good health,

he would have

survived every difficulty. And

overcome all difficulties. And it is seen

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



that his foundations were

good

is seen from the fact that

, for

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the Romagna

waited for him

awaited him for

more than a

month; in Rome, although

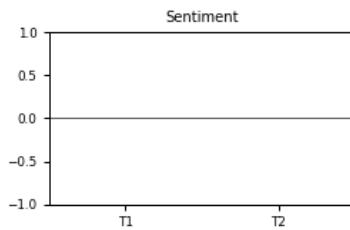
half dead,  
but half alive,  
he remained secure, and

although  
whilst  
the Baglioni

,  
, the  
Vitelli, and

Orsini entered  
the Orsini might come to

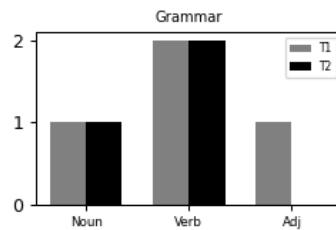
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



Rome they  
found no followers  
could not effect anything  
against him

. He was able, if not to make pope  
. If he could not have made Pope  
him

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



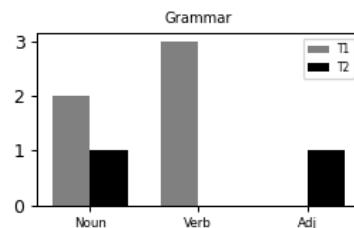
whom he wished, at

any

least the one

rate to prevent a pope being created

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



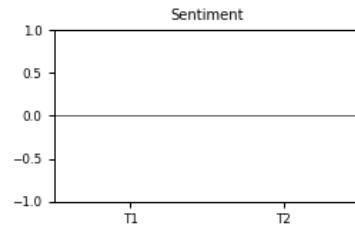
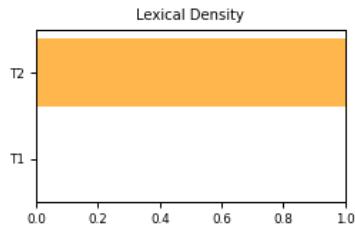
whom he did not wish

.

would not

have been elected.

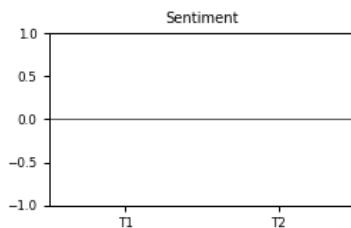
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



But if

he had been in sound health

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



at

the death of Alexander

he had been well

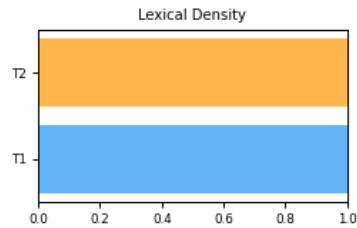
, [5]

everything would have been

easy. And he told me

different to him.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

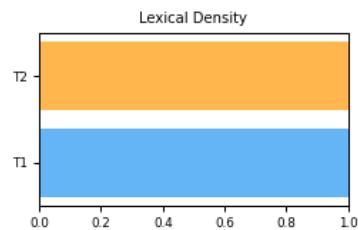
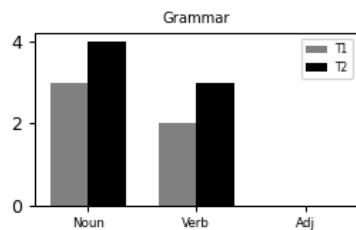


on the day that

Pope Julius II. was created,

Julius the Second[6] was elected, he told me

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



that he had thought of everything

which might happen on

that might occur at

the death of

his father, and

provided against everything,

had

provided a remedy for all,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



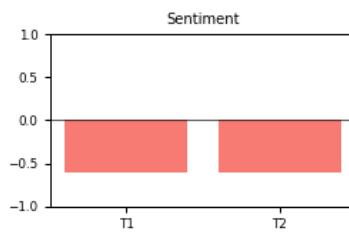
except that he had never

thought that at his father's death he

anticipated that,

when the death did happen, he himself

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



would be

dying himself. Reviewing

on the point to die.

thus

[5] Alexander VI died of fever, 18th August

1503.

[6] Julius II was Giuliano della Rovere,

Cardinal of San Pietro ad

Vincula, born 1443, died 1513.

## When

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



all the actions of the duke

, I find nothing

are recalled, I do not know how

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



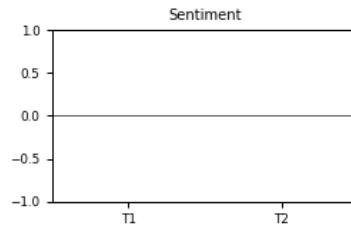
to blame

, on the

him, but rather it appears to be,

contrary, I feel bound,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

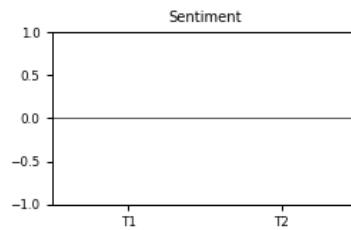


as I have

done, to hold him up as an example  
to be imitated by all

said, that I ought to  
offer him for imitation to all those

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



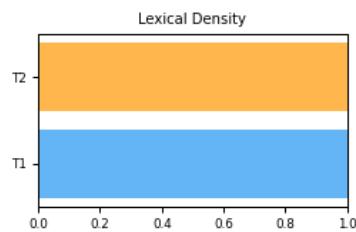
who by

fortune and with  
the arms of others

the fortune or  
having a lofty spirit and

have , are raised to government. Because he,  
risen to power. For with his great courage  
and high ambition he having a lofty spirit and  
far-reaching aims,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



could

not have

acted

regulated his conduct

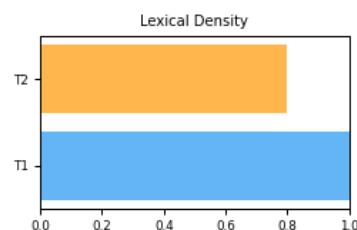
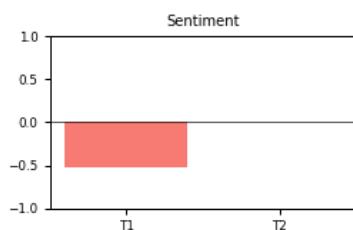
otherwise, and

his designs were only frustrated by the

only the shortness of the

short

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



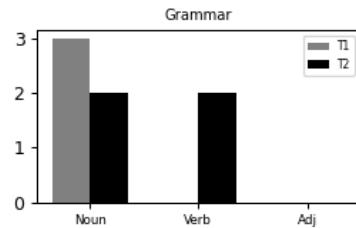
life of Alexander and his own

illness.

sickness

Whoever, therefore, deems  
frustrated his designs. Therefore, he who  
considers

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



it necessary

to

secure himself

in his new principality to

secure himself against enemies, to gain win

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



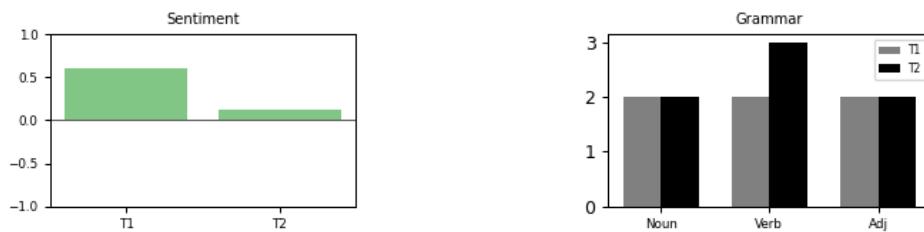
friends, to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



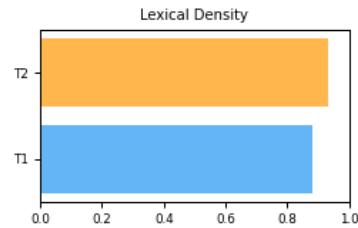
to be severe and  
 kind,  
 gracious,  
 magnanimous and liberal  
 , suppress the old militia, create a new one,  
 , to  
 maintain the friendship of  
 destroy a disloyal soldiery and to create new,  
 to maintain friendship  
 with

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



kings and princes in such a way that they  
 are glad to benefit him and fear to injure him,  
 must help him with zeal  
 such a one can find no  
 and offend with caution, cannot find a more  
 better  
 lively

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



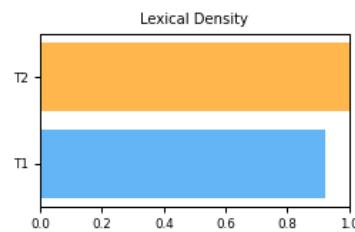
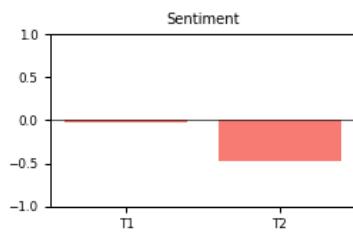
example than the actions of this man

. The only thing he can be

accused of is that in the creation

Only can he be blamed for the election

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of Julius

II.

the Second, in whom

he made a bad choice

;

, because, as is

for, as has been

said, not being able to

choose elect a Pope  
to his own  
pope, mind,  
he could  
still prevent any one being made have hindered any other from being elected

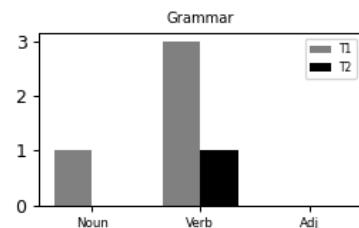
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



pope, and he ought never to have

permitted any of those cardinals to be raised consented

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



to the  
 papacy  
 election of any  
 cardinal  
 whom he had  
 injured, or who  
 when pope would stand in fear of him.  
 had cause to fear him if they  
 became pontiffs.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



For men  
 commit  
 injure either from  
 injuries either through  
 fear or  
 through hate.  
 hatred.  
 Those whom he had injured

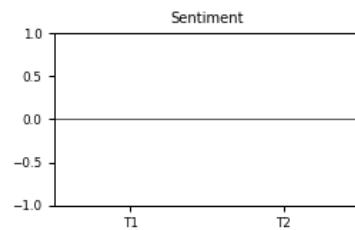
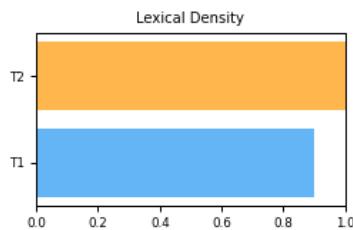
were, among others, , amongst others, were

San Pietro ad Vincula,

Colonna, San Giorgio, and Ascanio

. All the others, if assumed to the .[7] The rest, in becoming Pope,  
pontificate, would have

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



had to fear him

except Rohan , Rouen

and the Spaniards

; excepted;

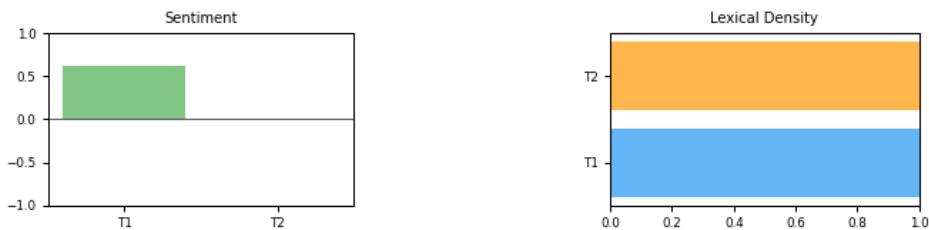
the latter

through from

their relationship and obligations

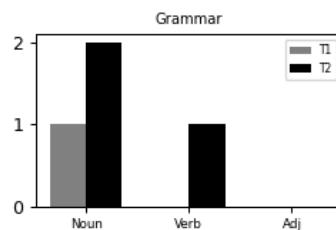
to him, ,  
the  
former from his  
great power, being related to the King influence, the  
kingdom

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of France  
.  
having relations with him. Therefore, above  
For these reasons everything,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the duke ought

above all things

to have created a

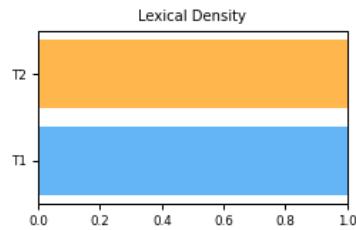
Spaniard pope; and

if unable to, then he should

,

failing him, he ought to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



have consented to

Rohan

Rouen

being appointed

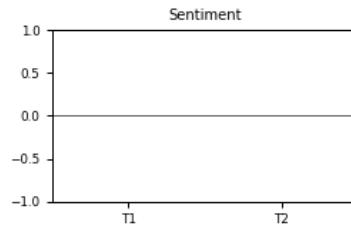
and not San Pietro ad Vincula

. And whoever thinks that

. He who believes that

in high personages

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

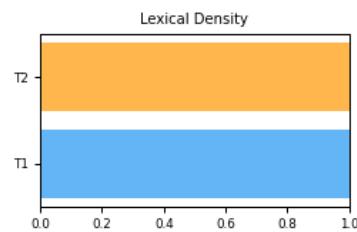
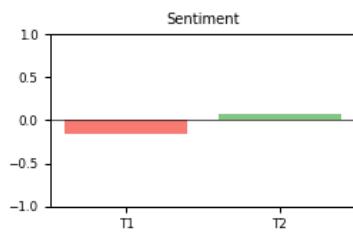


new benefits

cause old offences to be forgotten,  
makes a great mistake.

will cause great personages  
to forget old injuries is deceived. Therefore,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



The duke

, therefore,

erred in

this

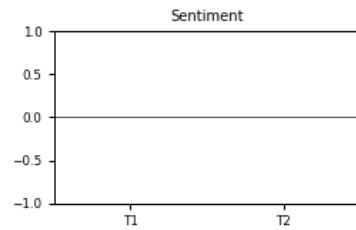
his

choice, and

it was the cause of his ultimate ruin

[7] San Giorgio is Raffaello Riario. Ascanio  
is Ascanio Sforza.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



## CHAPTER VIII

OF CONCERNING  
THOSE WHO HAVE  
ATTAINED THE POSITION OF PRINCE OBTAINED A PRINCIPALITY BY  
BY VILLAINY WICKEDNESS

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



But as there are still Although a prince may rise from a private  
station in

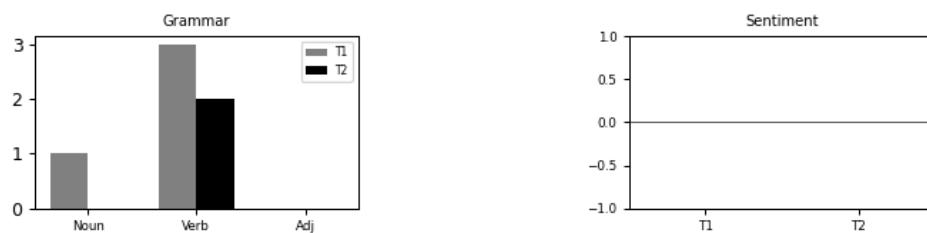
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



two ways

of becoming prince which cannot be , neither  
attributed entirely either of which can be entirely attributed

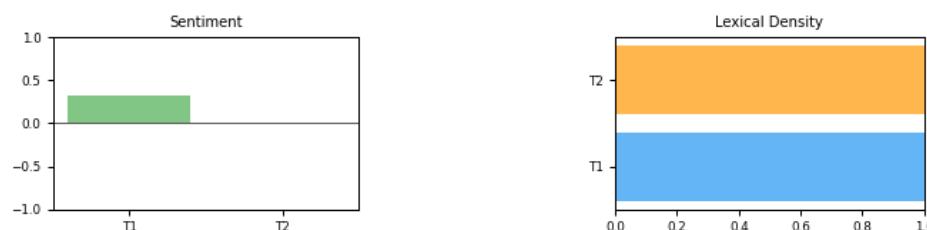
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



to fortune or

to ability, they genius, yet it is  
manifest to me that I

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



must not be

passed over, silent on them,

although one

of them

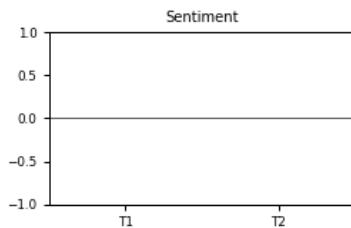
could be more

fully discussed if we

copiously treated when I discuss

were treating of

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



republics. These

methods

are when

one becomes prince

, either

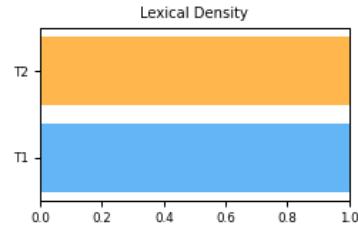
by some

nefarious or villainous means,

wicked or nefarious ways, one ascends to the

principality,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



or when

by the favour of his fellow-citizens

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



a private

citizen

person

becomes the

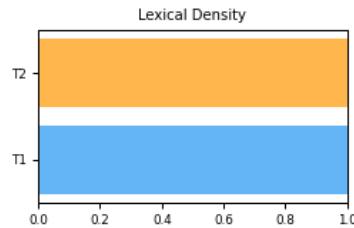
prince of his country

through the favour of his fellow-citizens.

. And

And in

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



speaking of the

former means, I will give first  
method, it will be illustrated by

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



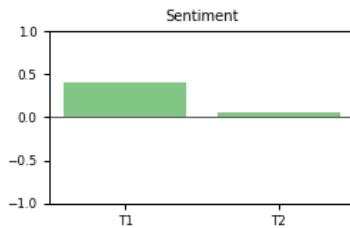
two examples, one ancient,  
the other modern

, —and  
without entering further into the

merits of this method, as I judge them to be sufficient for any one obliged to imitate

subject, I consider these two examples will suffice those who may be compelled to follow

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

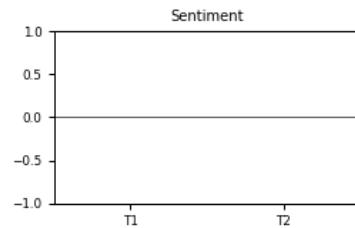
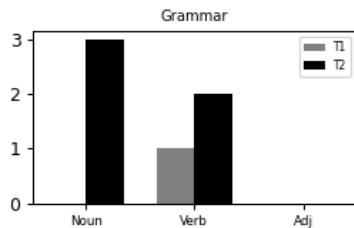


them. Agathocles the Sicilian

rose

, [1] became King of Syracuse

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



not only from

private life

a

private

but from

the lowest and most  
abject position

to be King of Syracuse. . This man,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

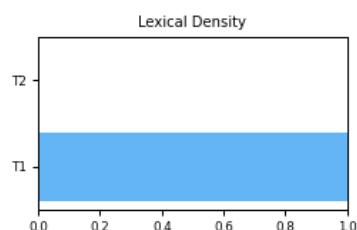


The son

of a potter

, he led a life of the utmost wickedness ,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

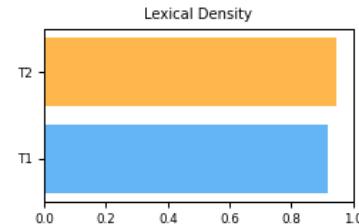
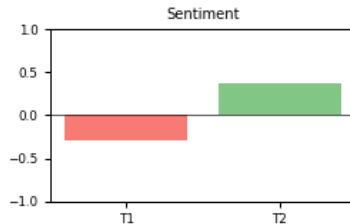


through all the

stages of his fortune. Nevertheless, his wickedness was accompanied by such vigour

changes in his fortunes always led an infamous life. Nevertheless, he accompanied his infamies with so much ability

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

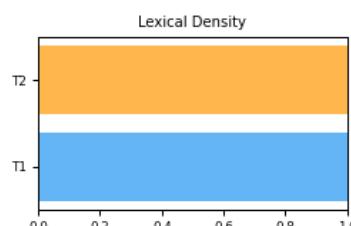


of mind and body that, having

joined the militia,

devoted himself to the military profession,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



he

rose through

all its grades

its ranks

to be

prætor Praetor  
of Syracuse

. Having been . Being established  
appointed to this in that

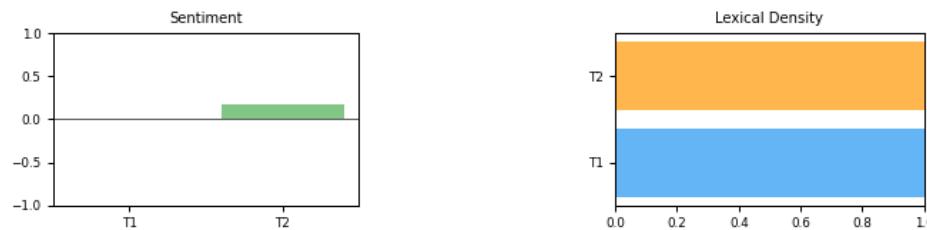
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



position, and having

decided to become deliberately resolved to make himself

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



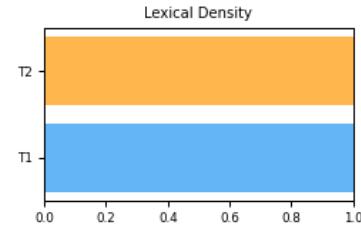
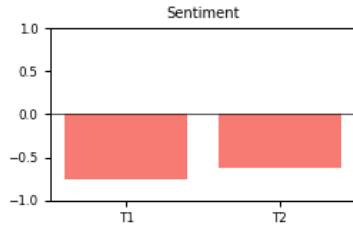
prince, and

to

hold with violence and without the support of

seize by violence, without obligation to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



others that which

had been

granted him; and having imparted his design

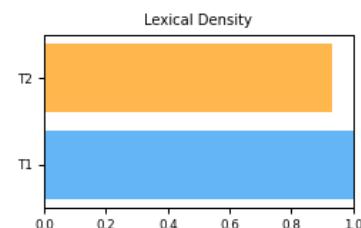
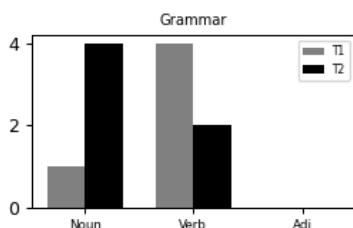
conceded to him by assent, he came to an

to Hamilcar

understanding

for this purpose with Amilcar,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the

Carthaginian, who with his

armies army,

was fighting in Sicily .

, he called

together

one morning

he assembled

the people and

the

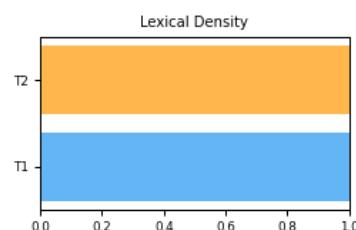
senate of Syracuse, as if he had

to

deliberate on matters of importance

discuss with them things relating

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to the republic, and at a given

signal

had the soldiers killed

all the senators and the richest

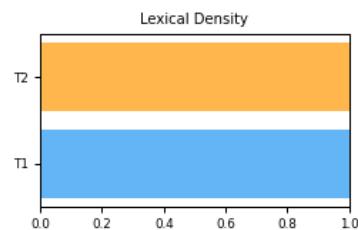
men

of the people

killed by ; these dead, he seized

his soldiers; after their death he occupied

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



and held

rule over the

the principedom of that

city

without any civil

disorders.

commotion.

And although he was twice

beaten routed

by the

Carthaginians and ultimately besieged

, he was able , yet

not only

was he able

to defend

the his

city, but leaving

a portion part

of his

forces men

for its defence, with the

remainder he invaded others he attacked

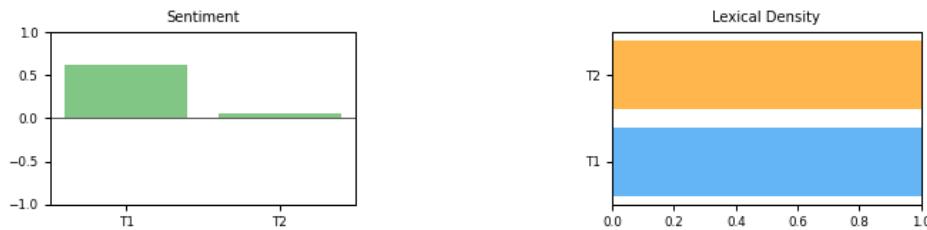
Africa, and in a short time

liberated Syracuse raised  
from the siege

and brought of Syracuse.  
the Carthaginians

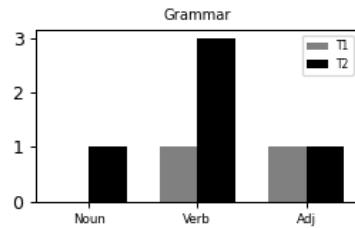
to great extremities, so , reduced to extreme  
that they were obliged necessity, were compelled

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to come to terms with  
him, and remain contented Agathocles, and,  
leaving Sicily to him, had to be content

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



with the possession of Africa

, leaving Sicily to Agathocles. Whoever

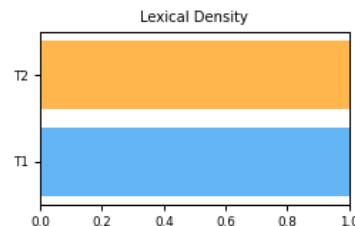
considers, therefore,

[1] Agathocles the Sicilian, born 361 B.C.,

died 289 B.C.

Therefore, he who considers

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the actions and

qualities

the genius

of this man, will see

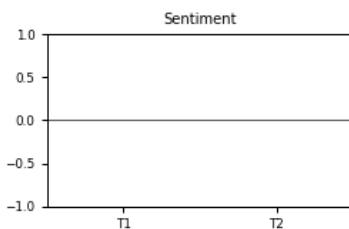
few if any things

nothing, or little,

which can be attributed to fortune

; for, as above , inasmuch as  
stated, it was he attained pre-eminence, as is shown above,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



not by the favour of any  
person, but through the grades one, but step by step in the military  
of the militia, which he had profession, which steps were

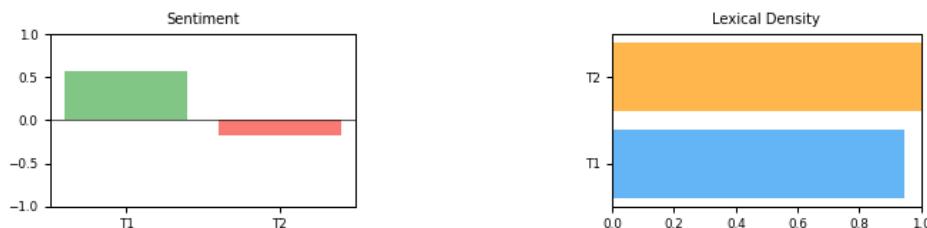
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



gained with a thousand  
hardships troubles  
and  
perils

, that he arrived at the position of prince, , and were afterwards boldly which he afterwards held by him with many hazardous dangers. maintained by so many courageous and Yet perilous expedients.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

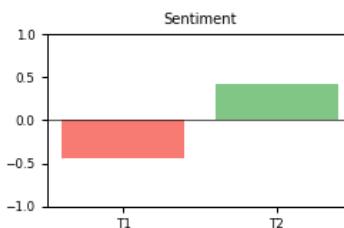


It cannot be

called

a virtue to kill one's talent  
to slay

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



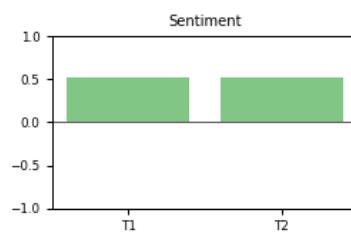
fellow-citizens

, betray one's friends, , to deceive friends, to  
be without faith, without

pity, and mercy,  
without religion

, by which methods ; such methods may gain  
one may indeed gain an

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



empire, but not glory

. For . Still,

if the

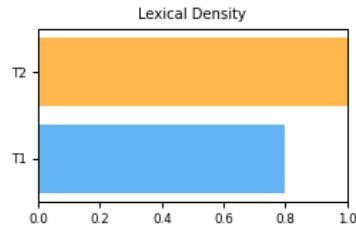
virtues courage

of

Agathocles in

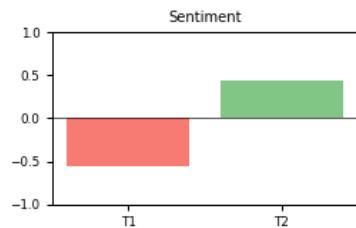
braving and overcoming perils, and  
 entering into and  
 extricating himself from dangers be  
 considered, together with

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



his greatness of  
 soul  
 mind in enduring and overcoming hardships,  
 in supporting and surmounting obstacles be  
 it cannot be  
 considered, one sees no  
 seen why he should be esteemed less than  
 reason for holding him inferior to any of

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



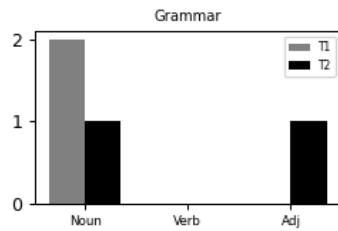
the most

renowned captains. notable captain.

Nevertheless his barbarous cruelty and inhumanity

, together with his with infinite  
countless atrocities, wickedness

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

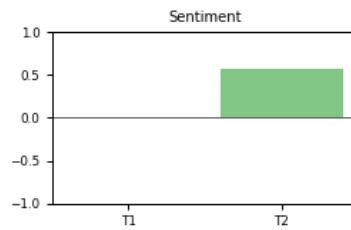


do not permit

of his being named him to be celebrated  
among the  
most

famous men. We cannot attribute excellent  
men. What he achieved cannot be attributed  
either

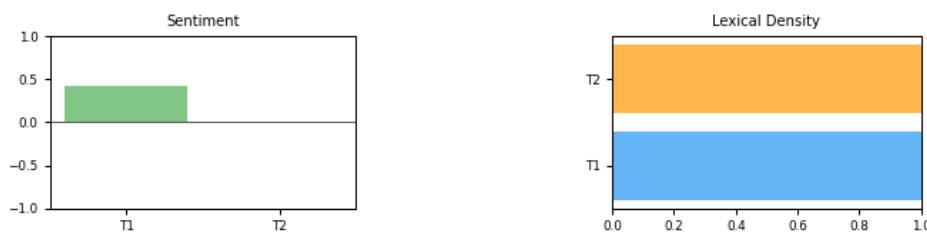
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to fortune or

merit that which  
he achieved without either.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



In our

times, during the

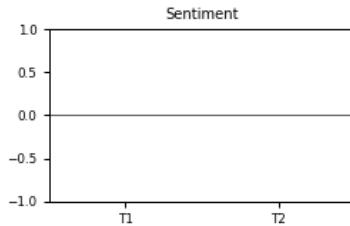
# reign of Alexander rule

VI., Oliverotto du Fermo had

the Sixth, Oliverotto da

Fermo, having

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



been left

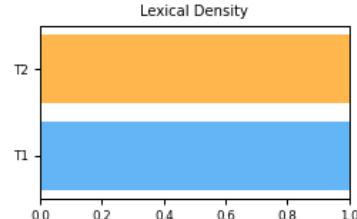
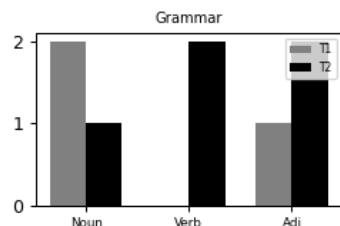
a young boy under the

an orphan many years before, was brought up

care of

by

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



his maternal uncle, Giovanni Fogliani

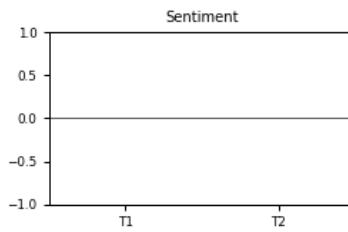
, who brought him up, and

, and in the early days of his

sent him in early youth

youth sent

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

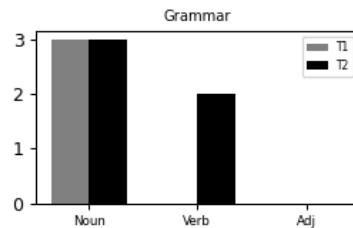


to fight under

Paolo Vitelli, in order that

Pagolo Vitelli, that, being trained under his discipline,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



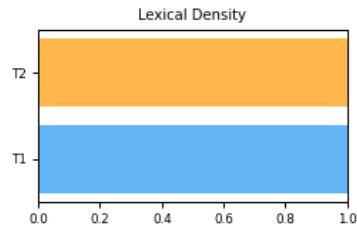
he

might

, under that discipline, obtain a good military position. On the death of Paolo

attain some high position in the military profession. After Pagolo died,

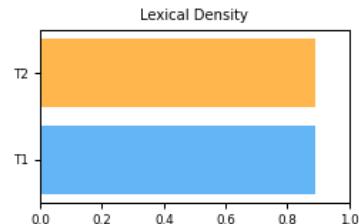
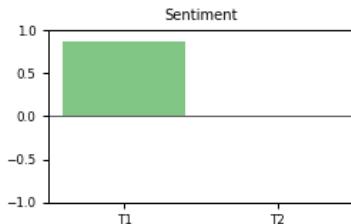
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



he fought under his brother Vitellozzo, and in a very  
short time, being

of great intelligence, and active in mind and body,  
endowed with wit and a vigorous body and mind,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



he became

one of the leaders of his troops. But deeming it servile to be  
the first man in his profession. But it appearing a  
paltry thing to serve

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



under others, he resolved, with the

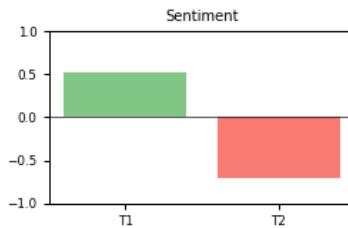
help aid

of some citizens of Fermo

, , to whom the slavery

who preferred servitude to the liberty

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of their country

, was dearer than

its liberty,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



and with the

favour

help

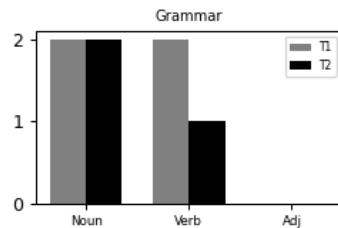
of the

Vitellis, to occupy Fermo; he therefore

Vitelleschi, to seize Fermo. So

he

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



wrote to Giovanni

Fogliani

, how, that,

having been

away from home

for many years

away from home,

,

he wished

to

come to see

visit

him and his city, and in some measure to

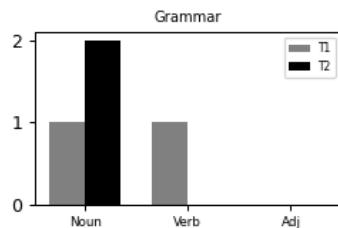
revisit his

look

estates. And as

upon his patrimony; and although

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



he had

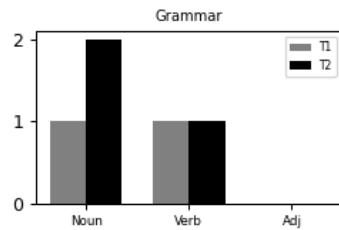
only

not

laboured to

gain honour, acquire  
anything except honour, yet,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



in order that

his fellow-citizens might see that the citizens should see  
he had not spent his time in vain,

he

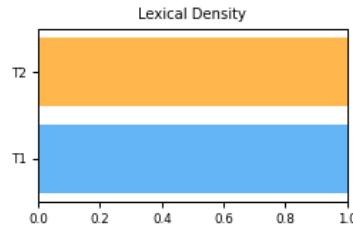
wished desired  
to come honourably

, so would  
be  
accompanied by one hundred horsemen, his  
friends and

followers, and prayed him that he would be pleased to order

retainers; and he entreated Giovanni to arrange

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



that he should be received

with honour

honourably

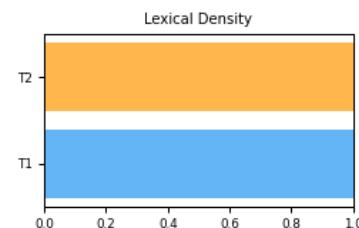
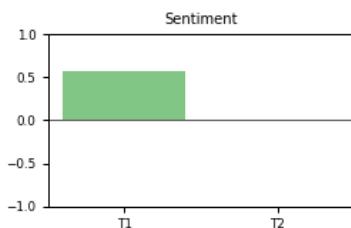
by the

citizens of Fermo,

Fermians, all of which would be

by which he would honour

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



not only

him, Oliverotto, to his honour,

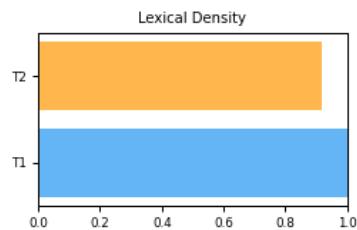
but also

himself, to that of Giovanni himself, who had brought

as he had been his pupil. Giovanni him up.

Giovanni, therefore,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



did not fail in any

duty towards attentions due to

his nephew

; ,

and

he caused him to be honourably received by the

people of Fermians, and he

Fermo, and

lodged him in his own

houses. After waiting

house, where, having passed

some days

to

, and having

arrange all that

arranged what

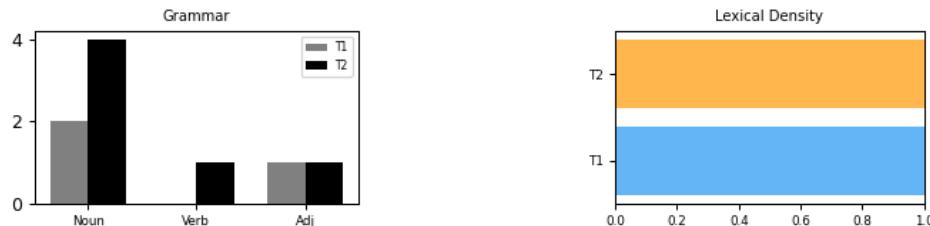
was necessary

to his villainous projects, Oliverotto

for his wicked designs, Oliverotto gave a

solemn banquet to which he

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



invited Giovanni Fogliani and

the chiefs of

Fermo. When the viands and

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

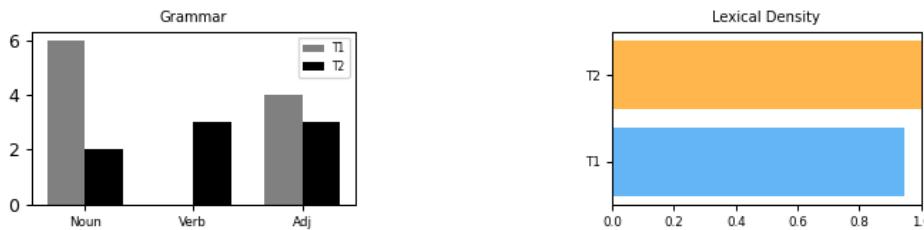


all the

principal men of Fermo to a  
grand banquet. After the dinner and the  
entertainments usual at such  
feasts,

other entertainments that are usual  
in such banquets were finished,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

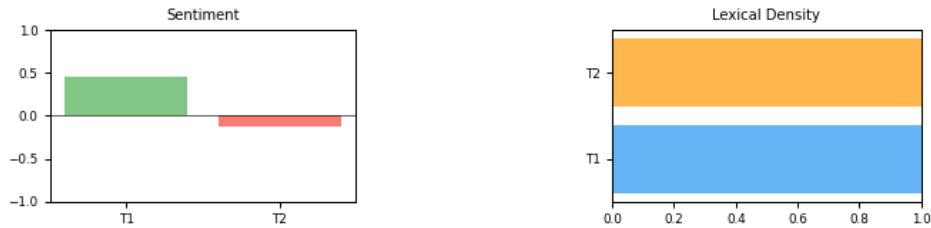


Oliverotto artfully

introduced certain important matters of  
discussion,

began certain grave  
discourses,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



speaking of the greatness of Pope Alexander, and

of

his

son Cesare, and of their enterprises. To which

discourses

discourse

Giovanni

and others

having replied, he all

answered; but he rose

at once

rose,

,

saying that

these

such matters ought to

matters should be spoken of

be discussed

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



in a more

secret

private

place, and

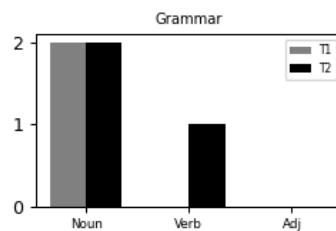
withdrew into

he betook himself to a

a room where

chamber, whither

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



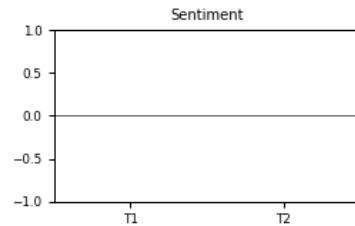
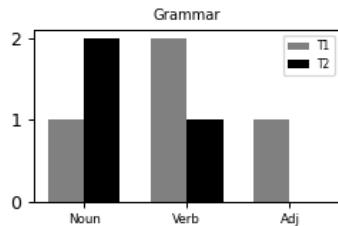
Giovanni and the

other citizens followed him. They were

rest of the citizens went in after

him.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



no sooner

were they

seated than soldiers

rushed out of hiding-

issued from secret

places and

killed

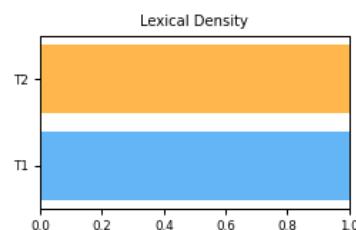
slaughtered

Giovanni and

all the others. After which massacre

the rest. After these murders

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

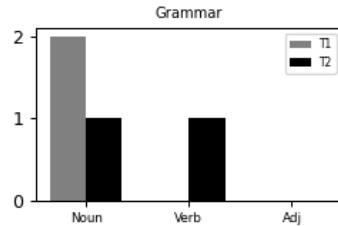


Oliverotto mounted

his horse, rode through

on horseback, rode up and down

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the town and besieged the chief magistrate in

his

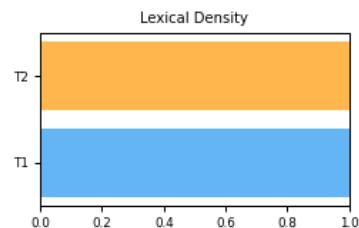
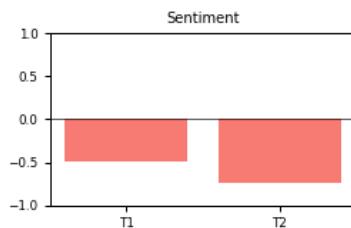
the

palace, so that

through fear they were obliged

in fear the people were forced

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to obey him and

to

form

a government, of which he made himself

prince. And all those being

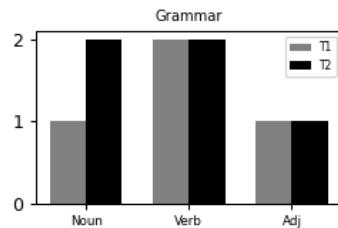
the

dead who, if discontented, could

prince. He killed all the malcontents who

were able to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



injure him

, he fortified

, and

strengthened

himself

with new

orders,

civil and military

,

ordinances,

in such a way that

within , in

the

year

that during which

he held the principality

he was ,

not only

safe himself was he secure

in

the city of Fermo, but

he

had become formidable to all his neighbours.

And his

overthrow destruction

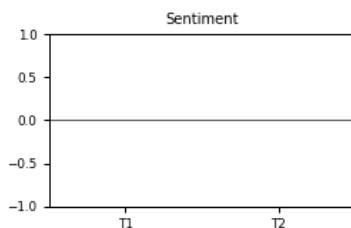
would have been

difficult, like as difficult as

that of Agathocles,  
if he had not allowed himself to be  
deceived overreached  
by Cesare Borgia

, when , who took him with the Orsini and Vitelli at  
he besieged the Orsinis and Vitellis at Sinigalia,  
Sinigaglia, as already as was stated above. Thus  
related, where he also was taken,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



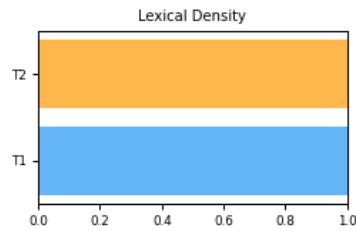
one year after  
the parricide  
he had  
committed

, and this

parricide, he was  
strangled, together with Vitellozzo

, who had been his , whom he had made  
teacher in ability and atrocity. his leader in valour and wickedness.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



Some may wonder how it  
came about can happen  
that Agathocles, and

others like him, could, his like,  
after infinite  
treachery treacheries and cruelties, should live for long  
and cruelty, live secure for many years in secure in his  
their

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



country and defend

themselves

himself

from external enemies

without being

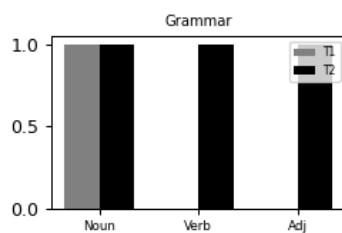
, and never be

conspired against by

their subjects; although

his own citizens; seeing that

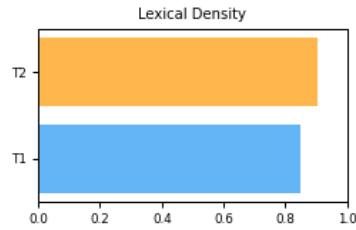
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



many others

have, through their cruelty, been , by  
unable to maintain their position in times of means of cruelty, have never been able even  
peace, not to speak of in peaceful times to hold  
the uncertain the state, still less in the doubtful

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.

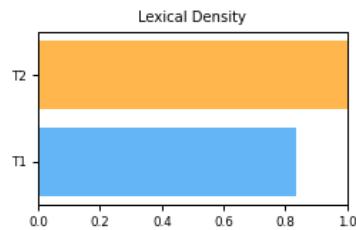


times of war.

I believe

this arises from the cruelties being used well that this  
or badly. follows from severities[2] being badly or  
Well used properly used. Those

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

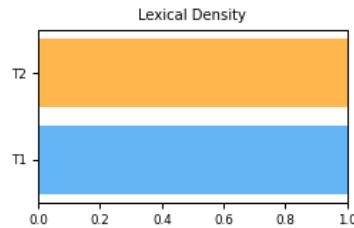


may be called

those (if

properly used, if of evil

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



it is

permissible to use the word

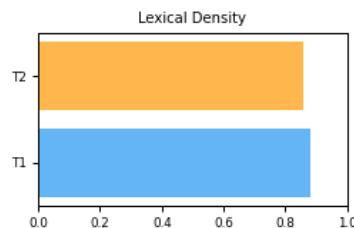
possible to speak well, that are

well of evil) which are committed once for

applied at one blow and are necessary to

the need of securing

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



one's

self, and which afterwards

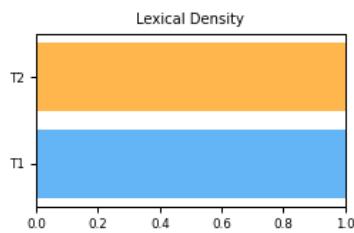
security, and that

are not persisted in

, but are exchanged for  
measures as useful

afterwards unless they can be turned

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



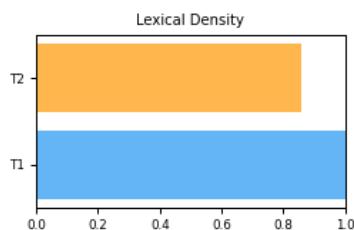
to the

subjects as possible. Cruelties ill used

advantage

of the subjects. The badly employed

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



are those which

, although at first few, increase

, notwithstanding

they may be few in the commencement,

multiply with time

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



rather than

diminish

decrease. Those who practise the first system

with time.

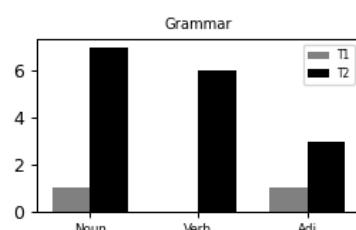
are able, by aid of God

or man, to mitigate in some degree their rule,

as Agathocles did. It is

impossible for

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



Those who follow the

former method may remedy in some

other

measure their condition, both with God and man; as did Agathocles.

As to the others, it is impossible for them

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to maintain themselves

Whence

[2] Mr Burd suggests that this word probably comes near the modern equivalent of Machiavelli's thought when he speaks of "crudelta" than the more obvious "cruelties."

Hence

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



it is to be

noted,

remarked

that in

taking

seizing

a state the

conqueror must

usurper ought

arrange to commit all his cruelties at once,

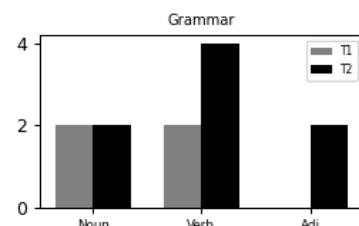
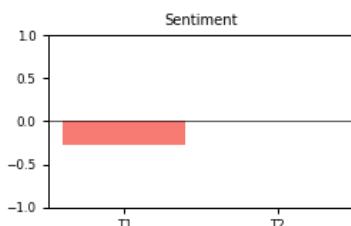
to examine closely into all those injuries

which it is necessary for

him to inflict, and to do them all at one

stroke

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



so as not to have to

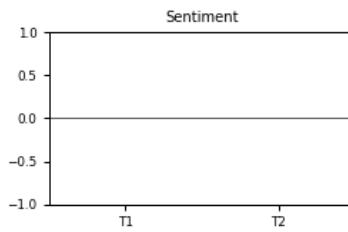
recur

repeat them daily; and thus by not unsettling

to them every day, and so as to

men he will

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



be able

, by not making fresh changes,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



to reassure

people

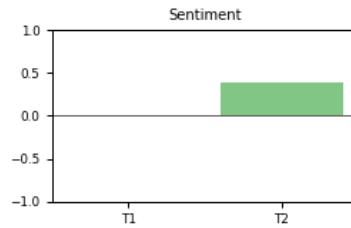
them,

and win them

over by benefiting them. Whoever acts

to himself by benefits. He who does

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



otherwise, either

through from

timidity or

bad counsels, evil advice,

is always

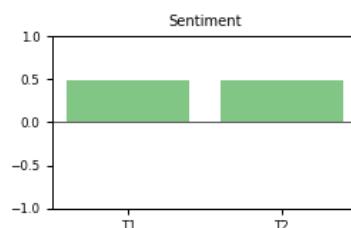
obliged compelled to

to stand with keep the

knife in

hand, and can never depend his hand; neither can he rely

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

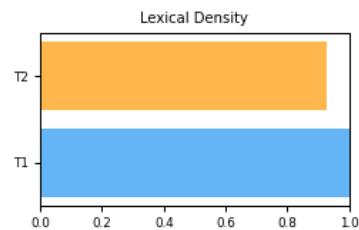
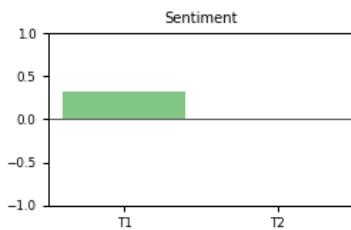


on his subjects

, nor  
because they, through continually fresh  
injuries, are unable to depend  
upon him.

can they attach themselves to him, owing to  
their continued and  
repeated wrongs.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



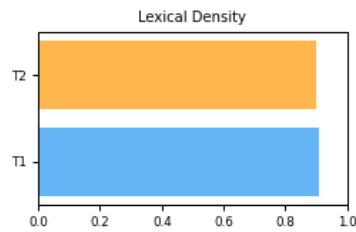
For injuries

should ought to  
be done all

together, at one time,  
so that being

less tasted less, they offend less; benefits ought to  
tasted, they will give less offence. Benefits be given  
should be granted

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



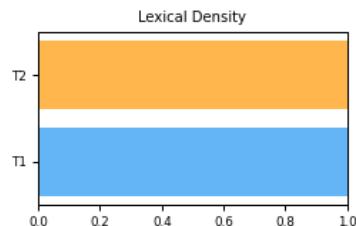
little

by little, so that

they may be better enjoyed.

the flavour of them may last longer.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



And above all

,

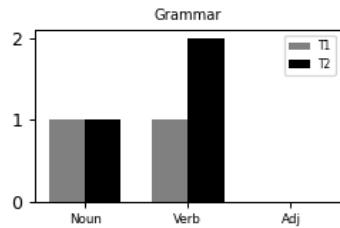
things,

a prince

must live with his subjects

ought to live amongst his people

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



in such a way that no

accident should

unexpected circumstances, whether of good  
or evil, shall

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



make

him change

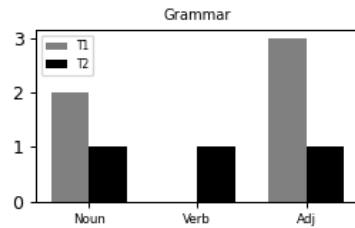
it, for good or evil; for necessity arising in

; because if the necessity for this comes in

adverse

troubled

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

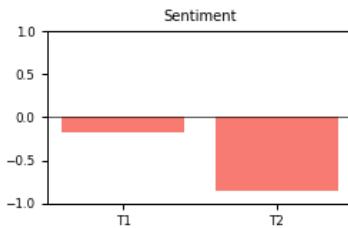


times, you are

not in time with severity, and the good that  
you do does  
not profit you, as it is judged to be forced,  
and you will derive no  
benefit whatever from it.

too late for harsh measures; and mild ones  
will not help  
you, for they will be considered as forced  
from you, and no one will be  
under any obligation to you for them.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



## CHAPTER IX

OF THE CIVIC PRINCIPALITY

CONCERNING A CIVIL PRINCIPALITY

But we now come

But coming

to the

case

other point—

where a

leading

citizen becomes

prince not

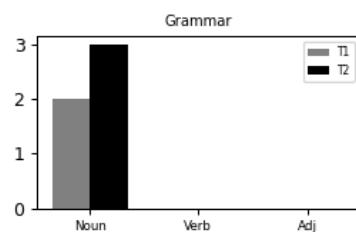
the

through crime or

prince of his country, not by wickedness or

any

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

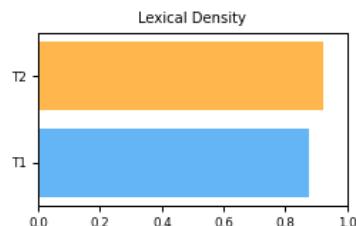


intolerable violence, but by the favour of his  
fellow-citizens

, which —this  
may be called a

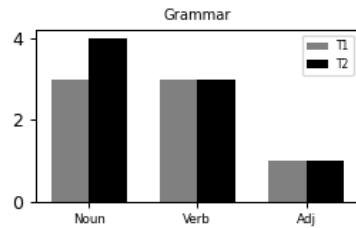
civic principality. To arrive civil  
at this position depends not entirely on worth principality: nor is genius or fortune  
or entirely on fortune, altogether necessary to attain  
to it,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



but rather  
on cunning assisted by fortune. One attains it  
by help of a happy shrewdness. I say then that such a  
popular favour principality is obtained either by the favour  
of the people

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

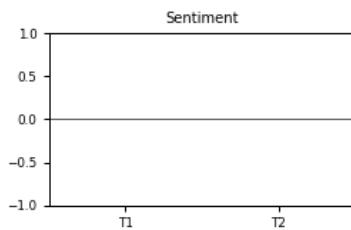


or by the favour of the

aristocracy. For in every city

nobles. Because in all cities

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



these two

opposite

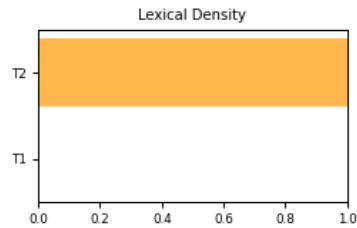
distinct

parties are

found, and from this it arises that the people

do not wish

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



to be

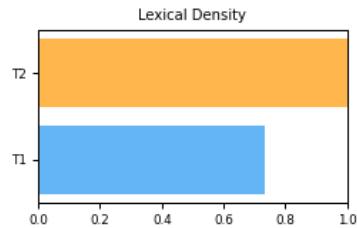
found, arising from the desire

ruled nor oppressed by the nobles,

of the populace to avoid the oppression of the

great,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



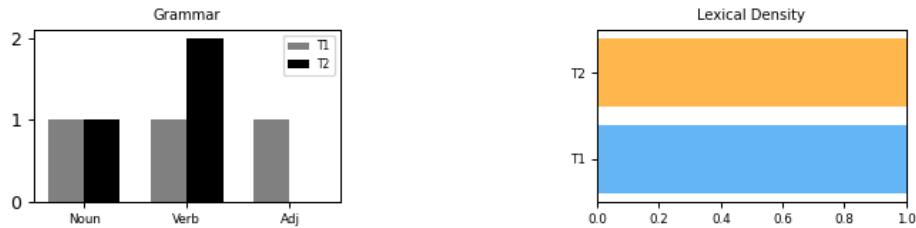
and the

desire

nobles wish to rule

of the great to command

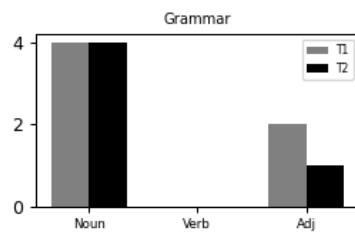
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



and oppress the people. And from these two opposing interests arises in the city one of three effects: either absolute government, liberty, or license. The former results, either a principality, self-government, or anarchy.

A principality

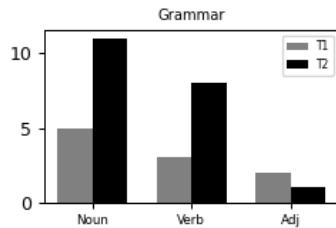
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



is created either  
by the

populace or the nobility depending on the people or by the nobles,  
relative opportunities accordingly as one or other of them has the  
of the two parties; for when the nobility see opportunity; for the  
that they are unable to nobles, seeing they cannot withstand the  
people, begin to cry up the  
reputation of one of themselves, and they  
make him a prince, so that  
under his shadow they can give vent to their  
ambitions. The people,  
finding they cannot

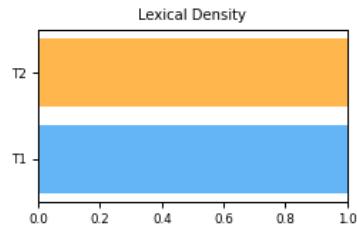
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



resist the

people they unite in creating nobles, also cry up the reputation of

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

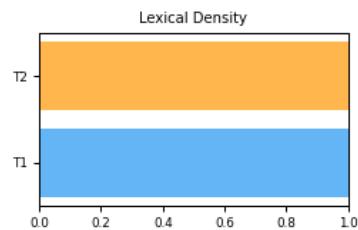
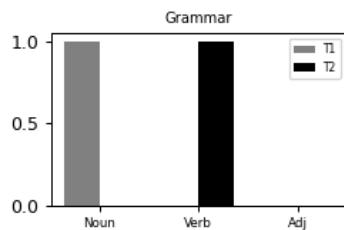


one of

their number

themselves, and make him a

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



prince,

so as to be

able to carry out their own designs under the

defended

shadow of

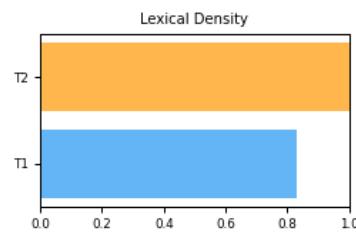
his authority. The populace, on the other

hand, when unable to resist

the nobility, endeavour to create a prince in

order to be protected

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

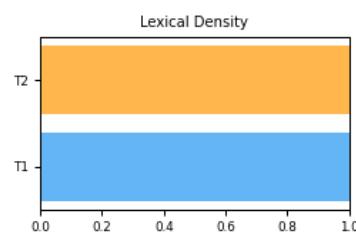


by his authority. He who

becomes prince by help

obtains sovereignty by the assistance

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of the

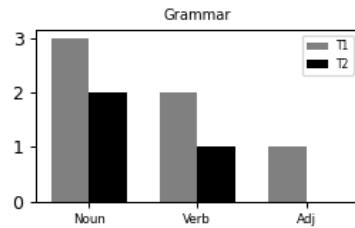
nobility has

nobles

greater difficulty in maintaining his power

maintains himself with more difficulty

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



than he who

is raised

comes to it

by

the

populace, for he is surrounded by those who

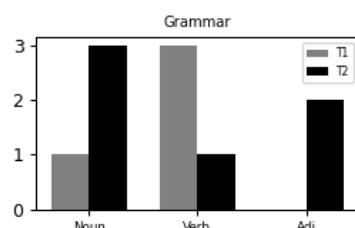
aid of the people, because the former finds

think

himself with many around

him who consider

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



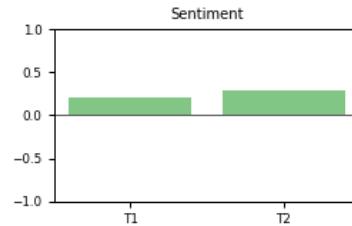
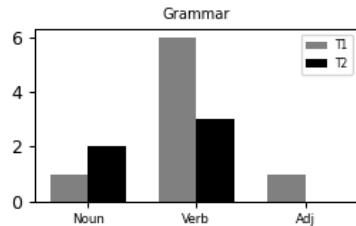
themselves his

equals, and

is thus unable to direct or command as he  
pleases. But one  
who is raised to the leadership

because of this he can  
neither rule nor manage them to his liking.  
But he who reaches  
sovereignty

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



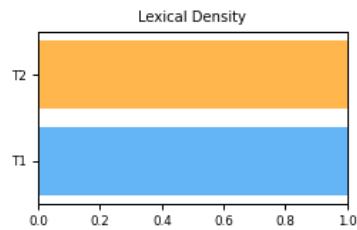
by popular favour finds himself alone,  
and has

no one or very  
none around  
him, or  
few who are not

ready  
prepared  
to obey him. Besides

which, it is impossible to satisfy the nobility  
this, one cannot

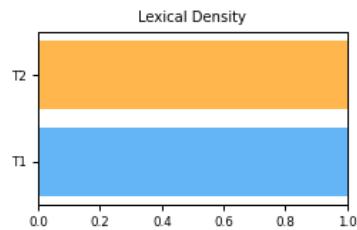
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



by fair dealing and  
without

inflicting injury on others, whereas it is very easy to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

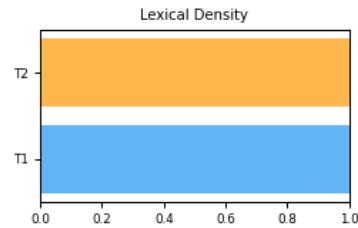


satisfy

the

mass of nobles, but you can satisfy

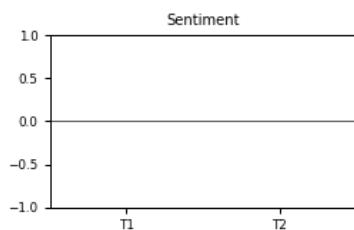
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the people

in this way. For the aim of the people , for their object

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



is more

honest righteous

than that of the

nobility, nobles,

the latter

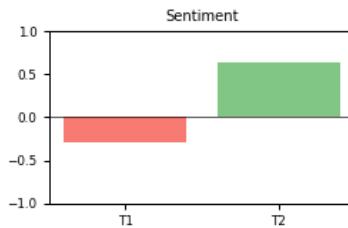
desiring wishing

to oppress

, and ,  
while  
the former

merely to avoid oppression. It must also only desire not to be oppressed. It is to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



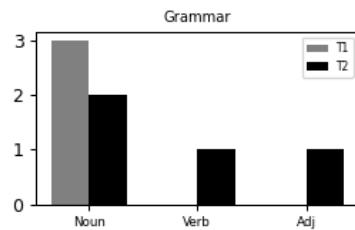
be added

that the also that a  
prince can never

insure secure  
himself against a hostile

populace on account people,  
of their number, but because of there being too many, whilst from  
the nobles

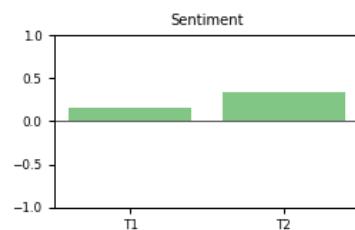
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



he can

against the hostility of the great,  
secure  
himself,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



as

they are

but few.  
few in number.

The worst that a prince

has to  
may

expect from a hostile

people is to be abandoned

, by them;

but from hostile nobles he has

not only

to fear

not

only

abandonment but

their active opposition, and as they are more

also that they will

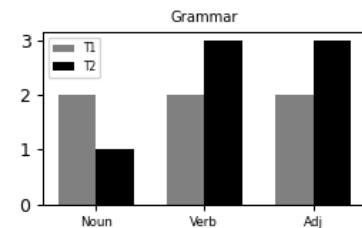
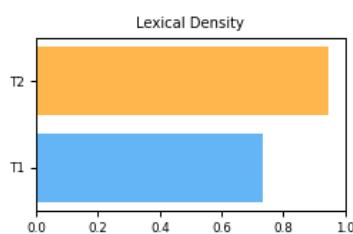
farseeing and more cunning, they are always

rise against him; for they, being in these

affairs more far-seeing and

astute, always come forward

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



in time to save themselves

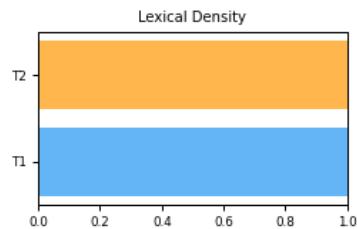
and

take sides with the one who

to obtain

favours from him whom

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



they expect

will conquer.

to prevail. Further,

The prince

is

, moreover, obliged

compelled

to live always with the same people, but he can

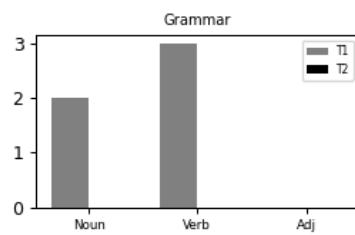
easily do

do well

without the same

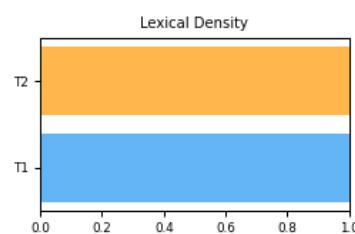
nobility,  
 nobles,  
 being able to make and unmake them  
 at any time, and increase their position or  
 daily,  
 deprive them of it as he  
 pleases.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



And to  
 throw further light on this part, I would  
 give or take away authority when it pleases  
 him.  
 Therefore, to make this point clearer, I

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



say, that the

nobles

are

ought

to be

considered

looked at mainly

in two

different manners;

ways:

that is

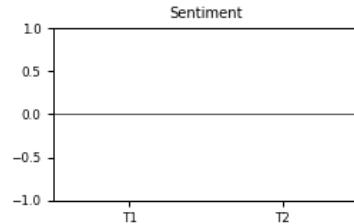
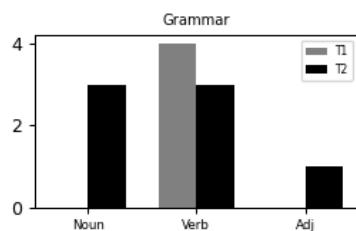
, they are

to say, they either shape

either to be ruled so as to make

their course in such a way as binds

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



them entirely

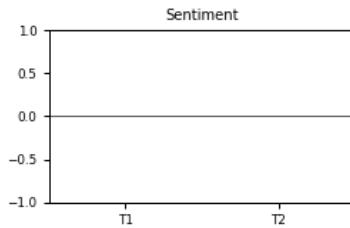
depend on your fortunes,

to your fortune, or

or else

they do

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

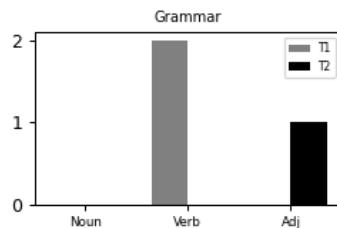


not. Those

that are thus bound to you

who so bind themselves,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



and are not rapacious

,

, ought

must

to

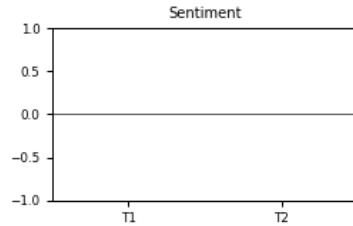
be honoured and loved; those who

are not bound must be considered

do not bind themselves may be dealt

with

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



in two ways, they

either may fail to

do this through pusillanimity and

a

natural

want of courage

, and in this , in which

case you ought to make use of them

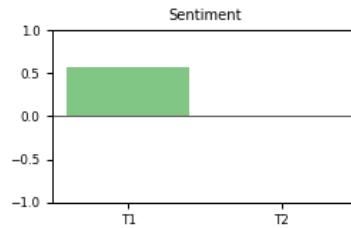
, and ,

especially such as especially of those who

are of good counsel

, so that they may honour you ; and thus, whilst

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



in

prosperity

and

you honour them,

in adversity you

have not

do not have

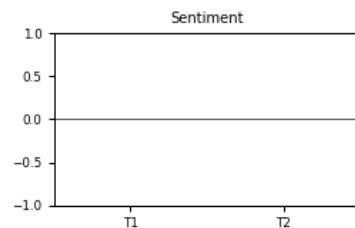
to fear them. But when

they

for their own

are not bound to you of set purpose and for

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



ambitious ends

, they shun binding themselves,

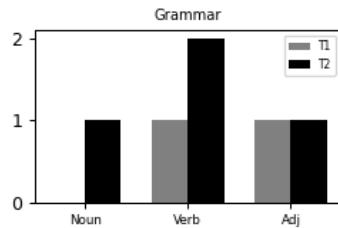
it is a

sign token

that they

think more of are giving more thought to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



themselves than

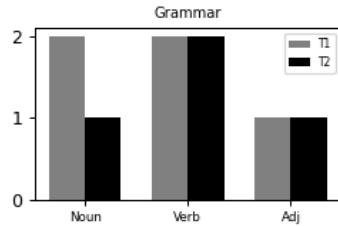
of to

you; and

from such men a prince ought to guard against such, and to

the prince must guard himself and look upon fear

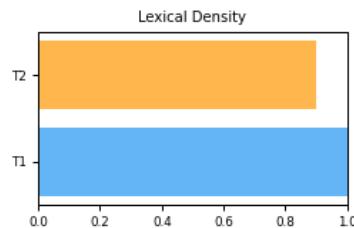
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



them as

secret enemies, if they  
who will were open enemies, because in adversity they  
always

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

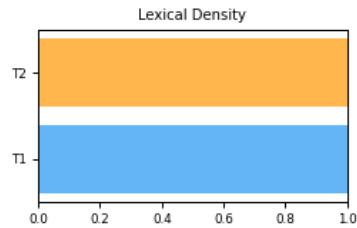


help to ruin him

when in adversity. One, however,

. Therefore, one

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

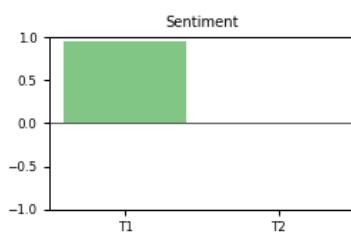


who becomes

prince by favour of the populace, must  
maintain its friendship, which  
he will find easy, the people asking nothing  
but not to be oppressed.

But one who against the people's wishes  
becomes prince by favour of  
the nobles, should above all endeavour to  
gain

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the favour of the  
people

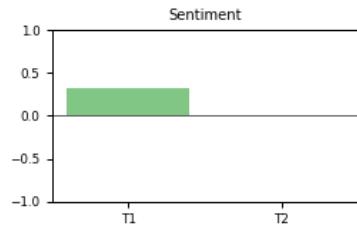
; this will be easy to him  
 ought to keep them friendly, and this he can  
 easily do seeing they only  
 ask not to be oppressed by him. But one who,  
 in opposition to the  
 people, becomes a prince by the favour of the  
 nobles, ought, above  
 everything, to seek to win the people over to  
 himself, and this he may  
 easily do

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



if he  
 protects them. And as men, who  
 takes them under his protection. Because  
 men, when they

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



receive good from

those they expected evil from, feel under a

greater

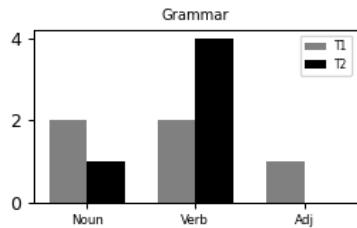
obligation

him of whom they were expecting evil, are

bound more

closely

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to their benefactor

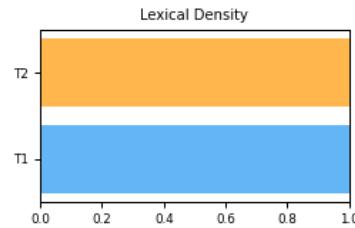
, so the subject populace will become

even better disposed towards

; thus the people quickly become more

devoted to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

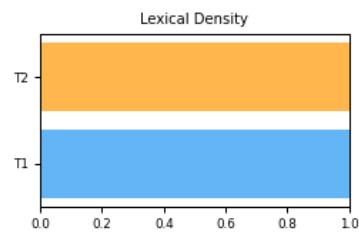
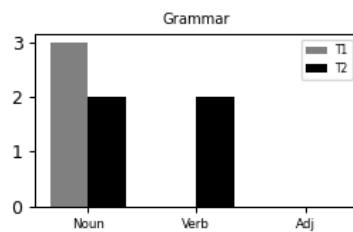


him than if he had

become prince through  
their favour.

been raised to the principality by their  
favours; and

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



The prince can win their

favour  
in many ways

, which , but as  
these  
vary  
according to

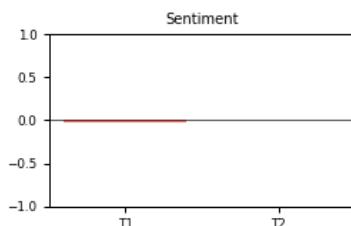
circumstances, for which no certain rule can  
be given, and  
will therefore be passed over.

I will only say, in conclusion, that

the circumstances one cannot give fixed  
rules,

so I omit them; but, I repeat,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



it is necessary for a prince to  
possess the friendship of

have

the people

; friendly,

otherwise he has no

resource in security in

times of

adversity. Nabis

,[1]

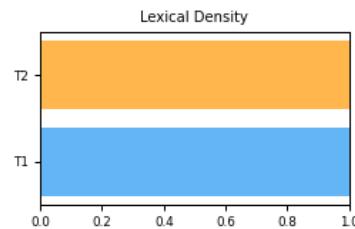
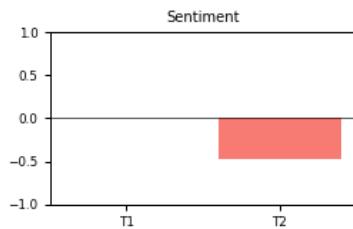
prince of the Spartans, sustained

a siege by

the attack of all

the whole of

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



Greece and

of

a victorious Roman army, and

defended

against

them

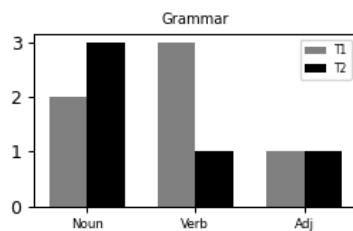
he defended

his country and

maintained his own position. It sufficed  
when the  
danger arose

his government; and for the overcoming of  
this peril it was  
only necessary

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

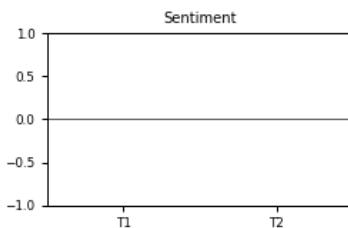


for him to make  
sure of  
himself secure against  
a few

, which  
, but this  
would not have been

enough if the populace had  
sufficient had the people

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



been hostile

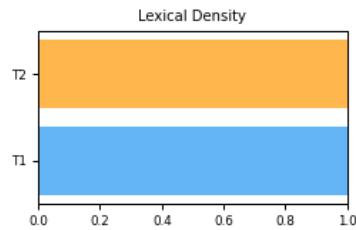
to him. And let no one oppose

. And do not

my opinion in this by quoting

let any one impugn this statement with

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the trite proverb

, "

that “

He who builds on the

people, builds on

mud"; because that

the mud," for this

is true when a private citizen

relies upon the people

makes a foundation there,

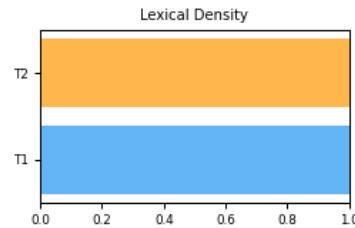
and persuades himself that

they will liberate

the people will free him when

him if

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



he is oppressed by

his

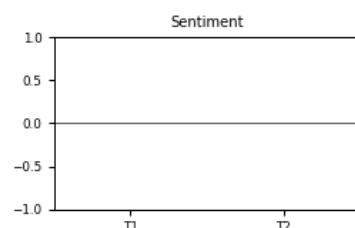
enemies or by the magistrates

; in this case

; wherein he would

he might often

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



find himself

very often

deceived, as happened

in Rome

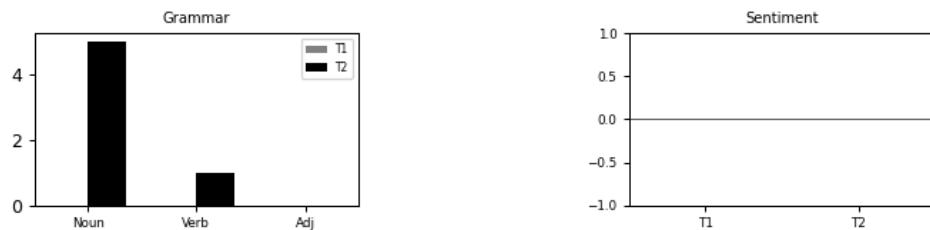
to the

Gracchi

and

in Rome and to Messer Giorgio Scali[2]

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



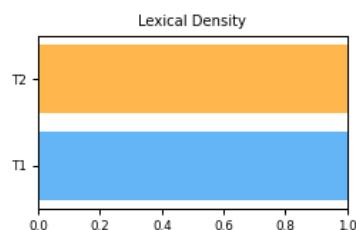
in Florence

to Messer Georio Scali.

. But granted

But when it is

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

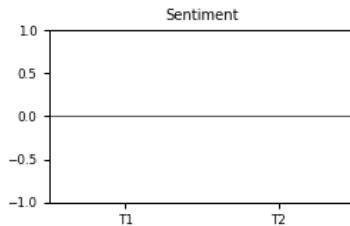


a prince who

finds himself on this basis, one

has established himself as above,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



who

can command and is a man of courage

, and

, undismayed in adversity, who

does not

get frightened in

fail in other qualifications, and

adversity, and does not neglect other

preparations, and one

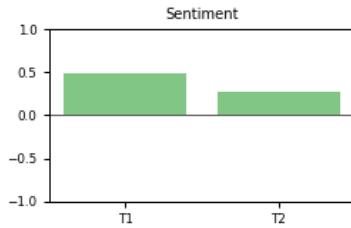
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



who by his

own courage and measures animates the resolution and  
mass of the people, he will not energy, keeps the whole people  
encouraged—such a one will never

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



find himself deceived

by in  
them, and

he will find it will be shown  
that he has laid his  
foundations well

. Usually .

[1] Nabis, tyrant of Sparta, conquered by the  
Romans under Flamininus  
in 195 B.C.; killed 192 B.C.

[2] Messer Giorgio Scali. This event is to be found in Machiavelli's "Florentine History," Book III.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



these principalities are

in liable to

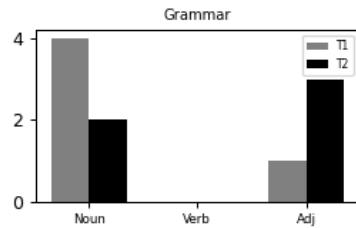
danger when

the they are passing

prince from the

position of a civil ruler changes to an civil to the absolute order of government, for  
absolute one, such  
for these

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

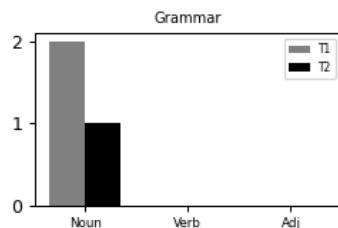


princes either

command themselves or by means of

rule personally or through

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



magistrates.

In the latter case their

position

government

is weaker and more

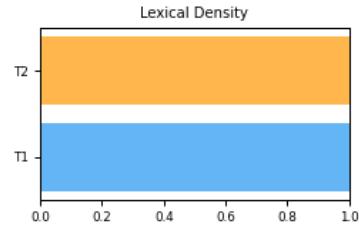
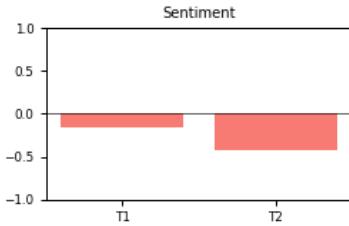
dangerous, for

insecure, because it rests entirely on

they are at the mercy

the goodwill

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of those citizens who are

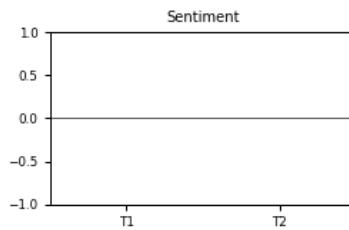
appointed magistrates,

raised to the magistracy, and

who can,

who,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

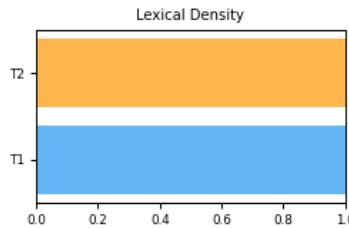


especially in

times of adversity,

troubled times, can destroy the government

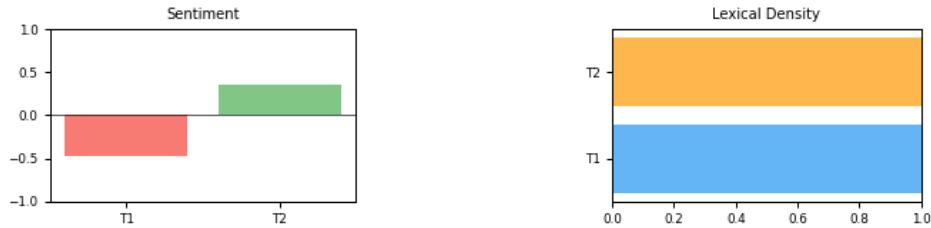
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



with great

facility deprive ease,  
them of their position,

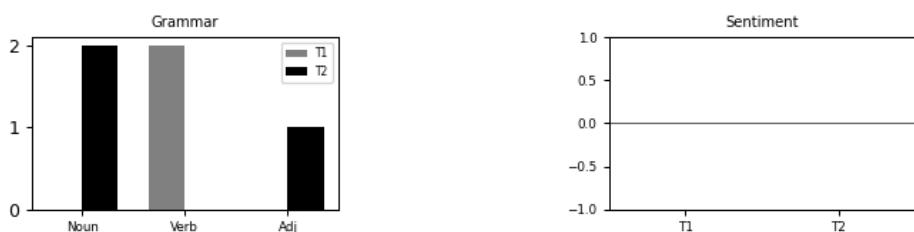
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



either by

acting against them or by not obeying intrigue or open defiance; and  
them.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

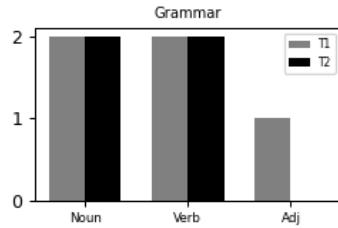


The prince

is not in time, in such dangers, to assume has not

the chance amid tumults to exercise

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



absolute

authority

, for

, because

the citizens and subjects

who are

,

accustomed to

take

receive

their

orders from

the

magistrates are not

ready in these emergencies

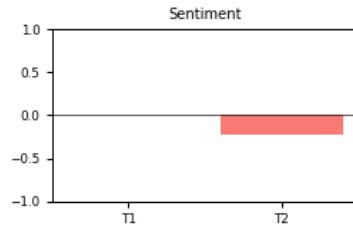
of a mind

to obey

his, and he

him amid these confusions, and there

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



will always

be

in doubtful times

lack

a scarcity of

men whom he can

rely on.

trust. For

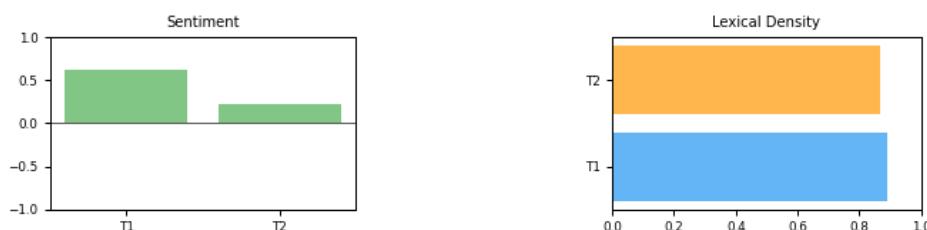
Such a prince cannot

base himself on

rely upon

what he

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to die for him

when death is

far off;

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



but in

adversity,

troubled times,

when the state has need of

its

citizens, then

he

will find

finds

but few. And

this experience is

so much

the more

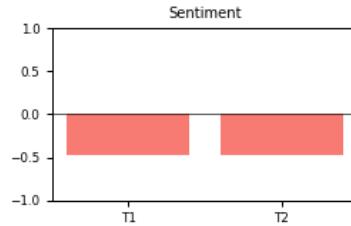
dangerous, in

is this

that

experiment dangerous, inasmuch as

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



it can only be

had

tried

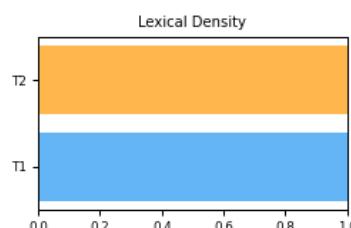
once. Therefore a wise prince

will seek means

ought to adopt such a course that his citizens

by which his subjects

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



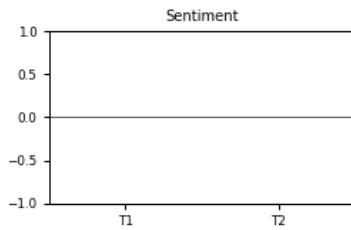
will always

and

in every

possible condition sort and kind of circumstance  
of things

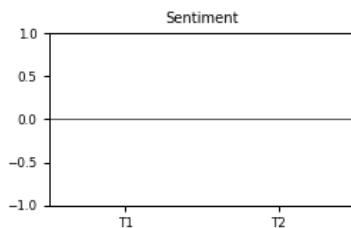
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



have need of

his government, the state  
and of him,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



and then

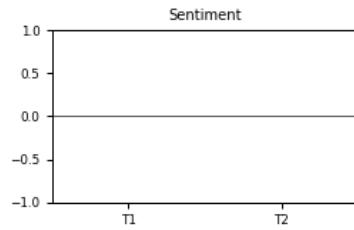
they he  
will always

be find them faithful.  
faithful to him.

## CHAPTER X

HOW CONCERNING THE WAY IN WHICH

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



THE STRENGTH OF ALL

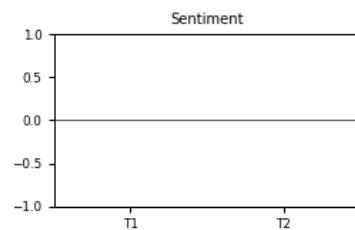
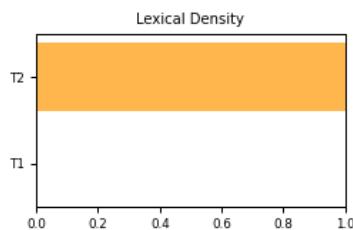
STATES SHOULD

PRINCIPALITIES OUGHT TO

BE MEASURED

It is necessary to consider another point

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



In examining the character of these principalities

it is necessary to : that is, whether a

consider another point, namely, whether the

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

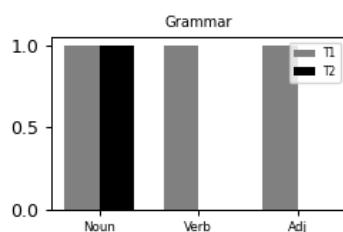


prince has such

a position power that,

as to be able

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



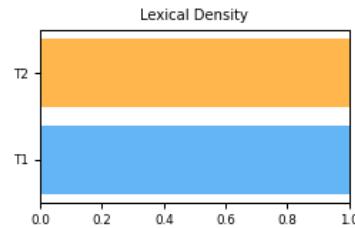
in case of need

to maintain himself alone,

, he can support himself with his own

resources,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



or whether he

has always need of the

protection

assistance

of others

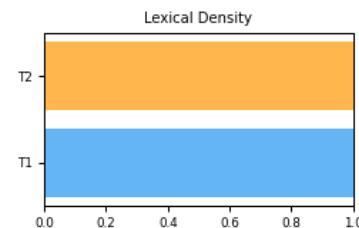
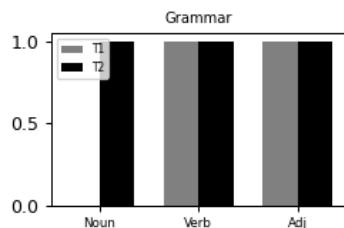
. The better to explain this

. And to make this quite

I would

clear I

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

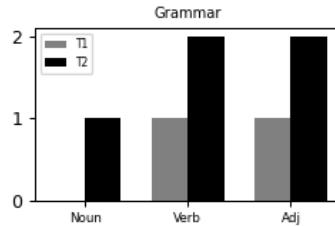


say, that I consider those

capable of maintaining themselves  
alone

who are able to support themselves by  
their own resources

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



who can

, through , either by  
abundance of men or money

, put together , raise  
a sufficient army

, and hold the field to join battle  
against any one who

assails comes to attack  
them;  
and I consider

those always

to have need of others

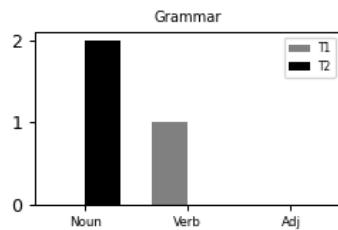
, those

who cannot

take

show themselves against the enemy in

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the

field

against their enemies,

,

but are

obliged to take refuge within

forced to

their walls and stand on the defensive. We

defend themselves by sheltering behind

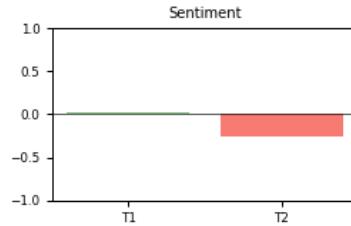
have already discussed the

walls. The first case has been

former case and

discussed, but we

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



will speak

in future

of it

as occasion arises.

again should it recur.

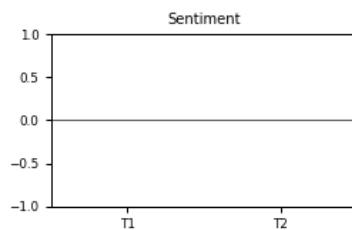
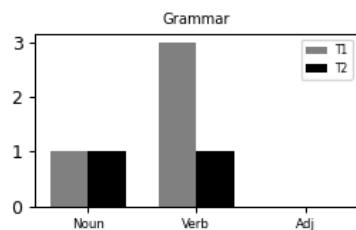
In

the second case

there is nothing to be said

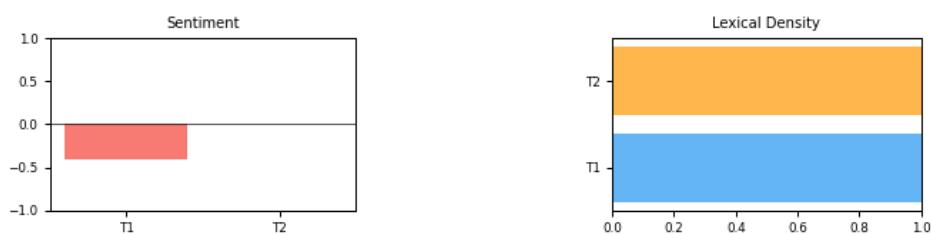
one can say nothing

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



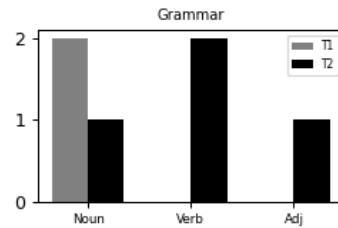
except to encourage such

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the country. And whoever  
has strongly fortified shall fortify  
his town  
and, well, and shall have managed the  
as regards the government other concerns

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of his subjects

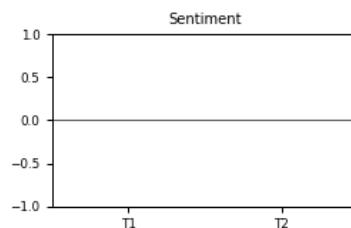
, has proceeded as we have

in the way stated above, and to be often

already described and will further relate, will

repeated, will never

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



be attacked

with great

without great caution,

reluctance,

for men are always

averse

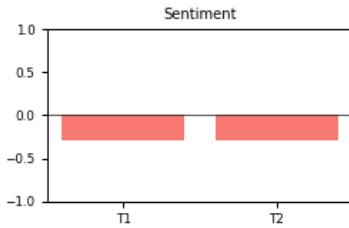
adverse

to enterprises

in which they  
foresee difficulties,

where difficulties can be seen,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

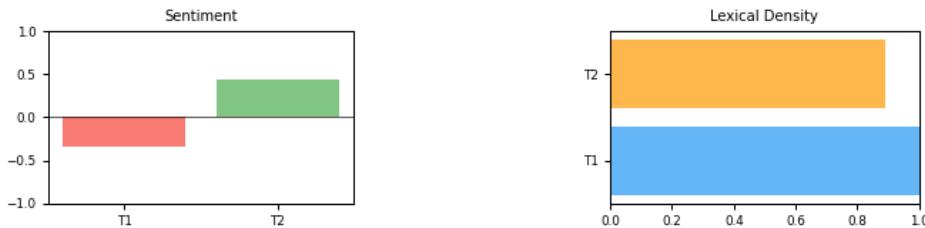


and it

can never appear easy

will be seen not to be an easy thing

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to attack one who

has his town well

guarded

fortified,

and is not hated by

the his

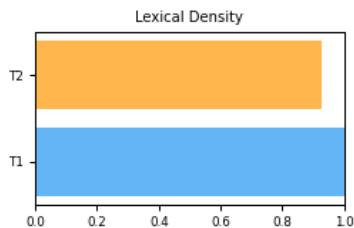
people. The cities

of Germany are

extremely liberal, have little surrounding  
country, and  
obey

absolutely free, they own but little country  
around them, and they yield obedience to

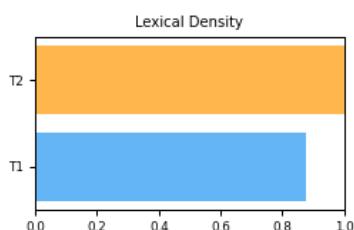
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the emperor when

they choose, and they do not fear him  
it suits  
them, nor do they fear this

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



or any

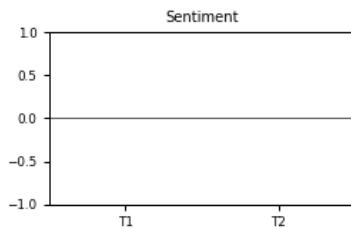
other

potentate that they have about them.

power they may have near them,

because

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



They are fortified in such

a

manner

way

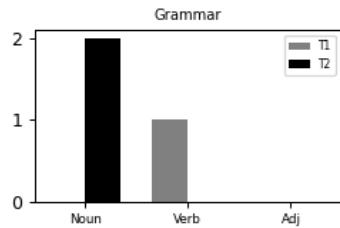
that every one thinks

that to reduce them

the

taking of them by assault

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



would be tedious

and difficult

, for they all have the necessary moats and , seeing they  
bastions, have proper ditches and walls, they have

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



sufficient artillery, and

they

always keep in

the public storehouses food public depots enough  
and drink and fuel

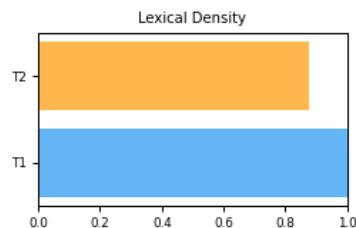
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



for one year

. Beyond which, 's eating, drinking,  
and firing. And beyond this,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to keep the

lower people quiet  
classes satisfied,

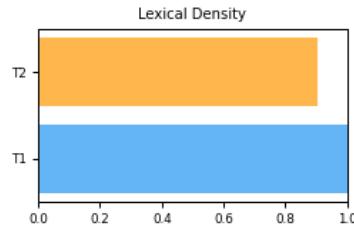
and without loss to the

public, they have always state, they always have the means of giving

enough means to give them work for one year in these employments which form the nerve and life

work to the community in those labours that are the life and strength

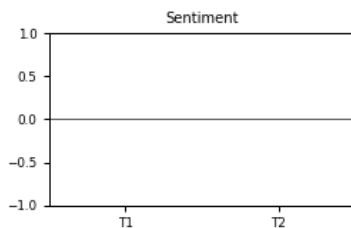
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of the

town, and in the industries by city,  
and on the pursuit of

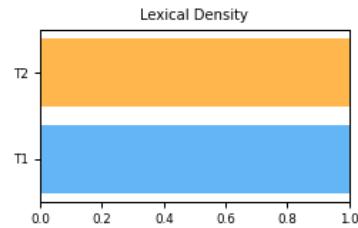
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



which the

lower classes live; people are supported; they also hold

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



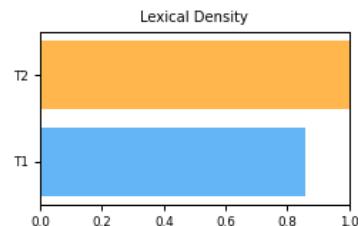
military exercises

are still held in reputation,  
and many regulations are in force for  
maintaining them.

in repute, and moreover have many  
ordinances to  
uphold them.

Therefore,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



A prince

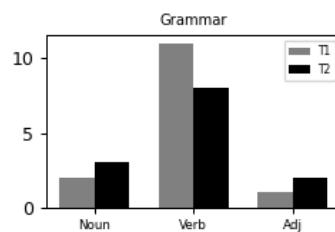
,  
therefore, who possesses  
a strong city and

who has

does not make himself hated,  
 cannot be assaulted; and if he were to be so,  
 the assailant would  
 be obliged to retire shamefully; for so many  
 things change, that

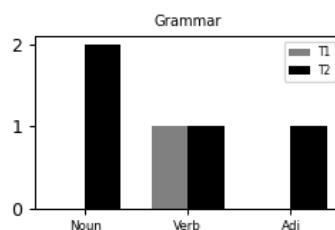
had not made himself  
 odious, will not be attacked, or if any one  
 should attack he will only  
 be driven off with disgrace; again, because  
 that the affairs of this  
 world are so changeable,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



it  
 is almost impossible  
 for any one to hold  
 to keep an army a  
 whole year in

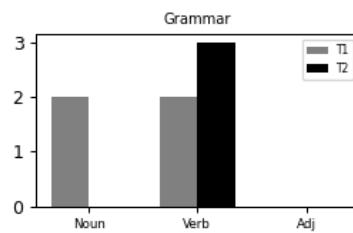
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the field

for a year with without being interfered with. And whoever his armies idle. And to those who urge that should reply: If

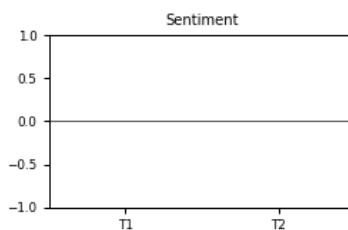
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the people

, having their have property outside the city, and see it possessions outside and seeing them burnt, burnt, they

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



will not

have patience, remain patient,  
and  
the long siege and self-interest will make them forget their prince

, ; to this I answer

I reply

that a powerful and courageous prince will

always overcome

overcome all such

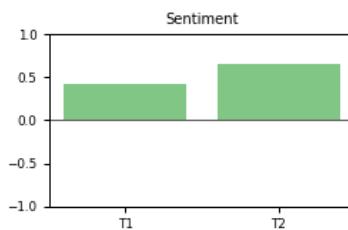
those

difficulties by

now raising the hopes of

giving at one time hope to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



his subjects that the

evils

evil

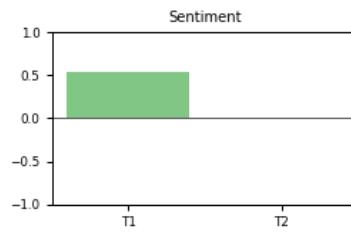
will not

last long, now impressing them with

be for

long, at another time

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



fear of the

enemy's

cruelty of the enemy, then preserving

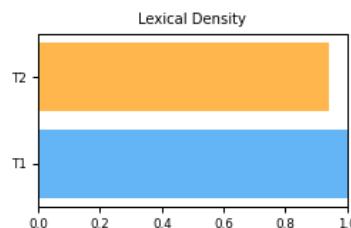
cruelty, now by dextrously assuring himself

himself adroitly from those subjects who

of those who appear

seem to him to be

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



too

bold

. Besides which,

. Further,

the enemy would naturally

on his arrival at once

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



burn and ruin the

country

on first arriving and in at

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

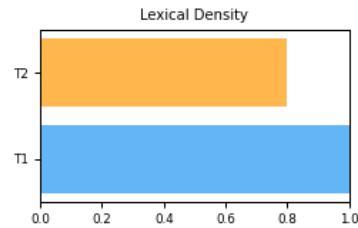


the time when

men's minds

the spirits of the people

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



are still

hot and

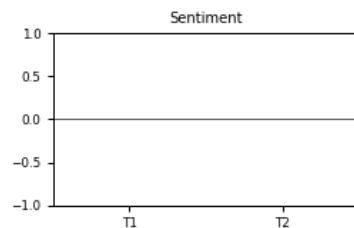
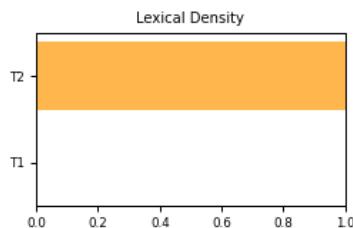
eager to defend themselves,

ready for the defence;

and therefore

, so much the less ought

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



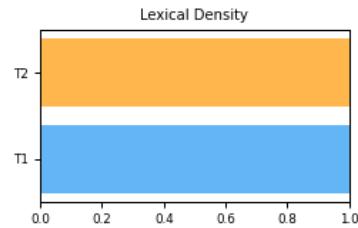
the prince

has still

to hesitate; because after a time, when spirits

less to fear, for after some days, when people

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



have cooled

down, ,

the

damage is

already

done, the

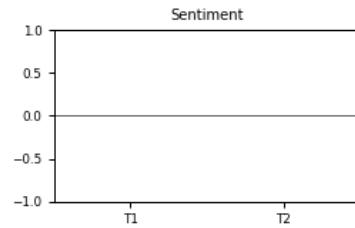
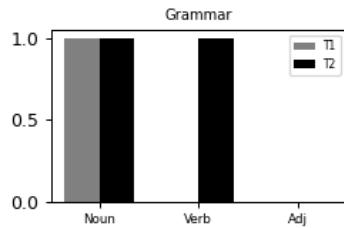
evil has been suffered, ills are incurred,

and there is no

remedy, so longer

that any remedy; and therefore

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



they are

so much

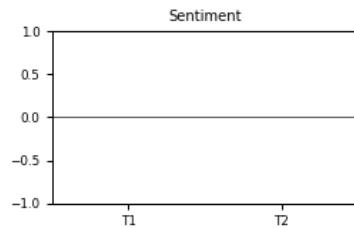
the more ready to unite with their prince

, as it appears

, he appearing to be under obligations

that he is under an obligation

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



to them

now that

,  
their houses

having have

been burnt

and their possessions ruined in his defence

For

It is the nature of men to be

as much

bound by the benefits

that

they

confer

as much

as by those they receive

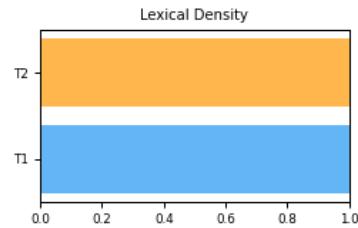
. From which it follows that, everything

considered, a prudent prince

. Therefore, if everything is

well considered, it

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

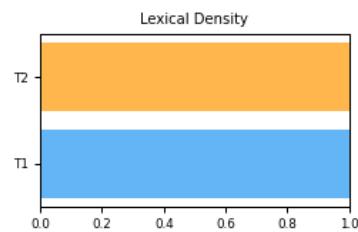


will not

find it difficult to uphold the  
courage

be difficult for a wise prince to keep the  
minds

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

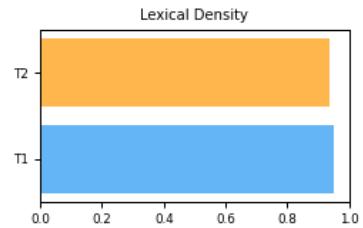


of his

subjects both at the commencement and  
during a state of  
siege, if he possesses provisions and means  
to defend himself.

citizens steadfast from first to last, when he  
does not  
fail to support and defend them.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



## CHAPTER XI

OF

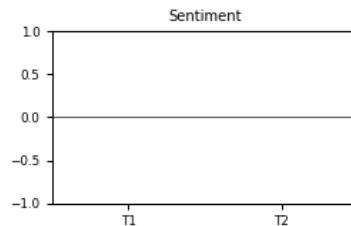
CONCERNING

ECCLESIASTICAL PRINCIPALITIES

It now remains to us only

It only remains now

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



to speak of ecclesiastical principalities

,

, touching

with regard to which the difficulties lie

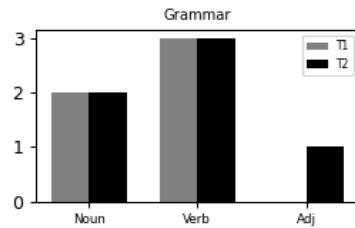
which all difficulties are prior to getting

wholly before they are

possession, because

possessed.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

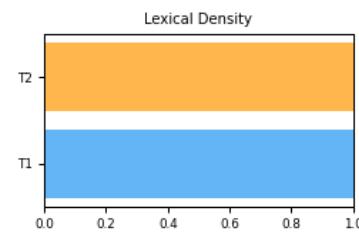
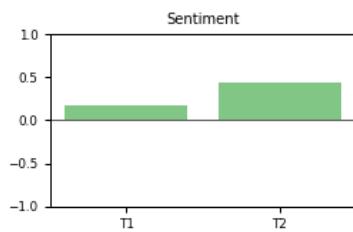


They are acquired either by

ability or by fortune; but  
are maintained

capacity or good fortune, and they can be  
held

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



without either, for they are sustained by the ancient

religious customs,

ordinances of  
religion,

which are so

all-

powerful and of such

quality, that they

a character that the

keep

principalities may be held no matter how

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

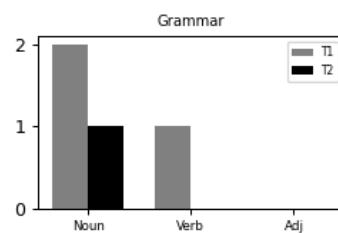


their princes

in power in whatever manner they proceed

behave

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



and live.

These

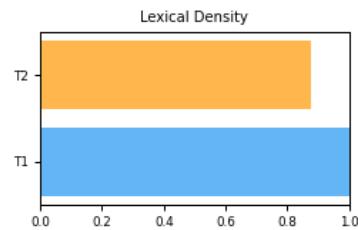
princes

alone have

a state without defending it,

states and do not defend them; and they

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



have subjects

without

and do not rule

governing

them, and the states

, not being defended,

, although unguarded,

are not taken from

them

;

, and

the subjects

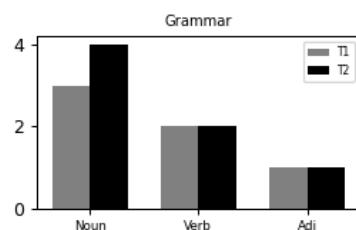
not being governed

, although not ruled,

do not

disturb themselves, and care,  
 neither think of nor are capable of alienating and they have neither the desire nor the  
 themselves from them. ability to alienate  
 Only these principalities, therefore, themselves. Such principalities only

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.

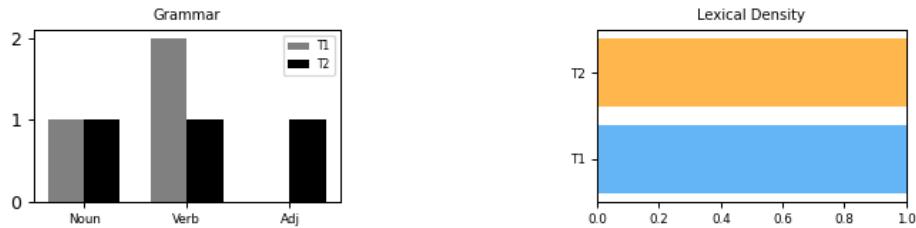


are secure and happy. But  
 as they being  
 are upheld by

higher causes, powers, to  
 which the human mind cannot

attain to, I reach, I shall speak  
 will abstain from speaking no more

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of them

; for , because,

being exalted and maintained by

God, it would be the

work act

of a presumptuous and

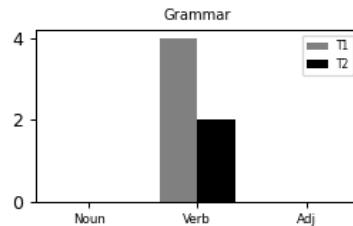
foolish rash

man to discuss

them

. . .  
However, I might be asked how it has come Nevertheless, if any one should ask of me  
about how comes it

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



that the Church has

reached such great

attained such greatness in

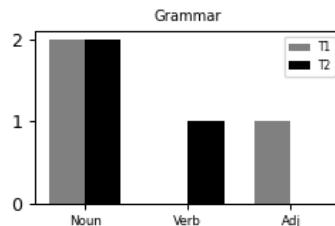
temporal power

, when, previous to Alexander VI.,

, seeing that from

Alexander backwards

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



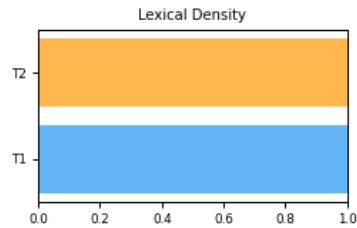
the Italian potentates

--and not merely the really powerful ones,

(not only those who have

been called potentates,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



but

every

lord or baron, however insignificant, held it

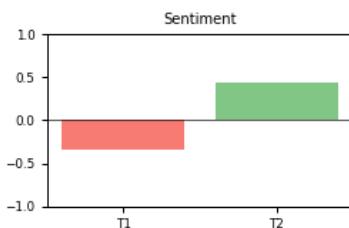
baron and lord, though the smallest)

in slight esteem

have valued the

as regards

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

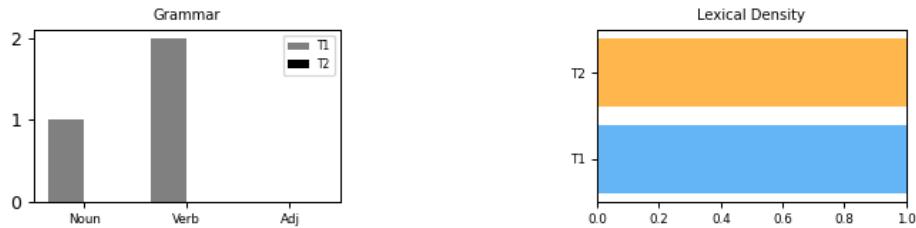


temporal power

; whereas now it is dreaded by

very slightly—yet now

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



a king of

France

, whom

trembles before it, and

it has been able to drive

out of

him from

Italy, and

has also been

able

to ruin the Venetians

. Therefore,

—

although this

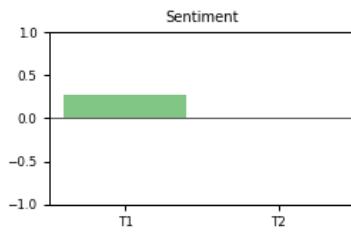
is well known, I

may be very manifest, it does not

do not think it

appear to me

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

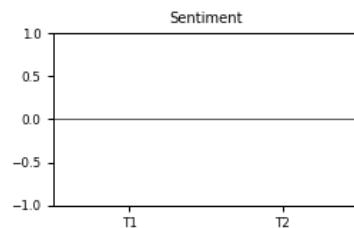
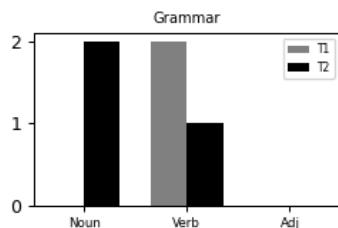


superfluous to

call it to mind.

recall it in some measure to memory.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



Before Charles, King

of France

, came

, passed

into Italy

,

, [1]

this country was under the

rule dominion

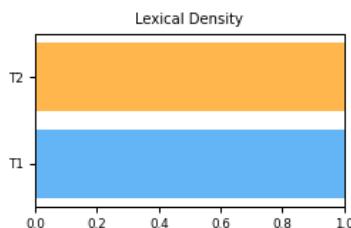
of the

pope, the Venetians, the King of Naples, the Duke of Milan, and the  
Florentines. These potentates had

to have two chief cares: two principal

anxieties: the

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



one, that no

foreigner should enter Italy

by force of under

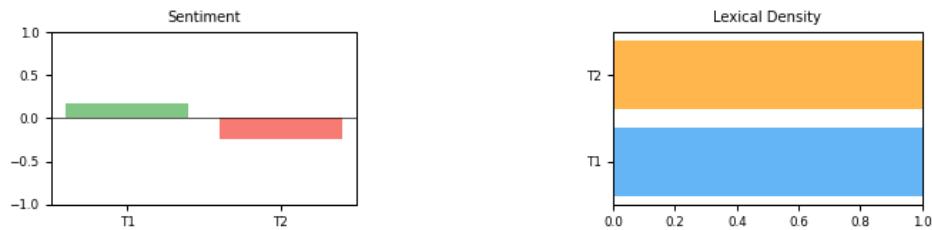
arms, the other that none of

the existing governments should extend its themselves should seize more territory.

dominions. Those chiefly to Those

be watched about whom there was the most anxiety

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



were the pope and the Venetians. To

keep back

restrain

the Venetians

required the ruin

the union

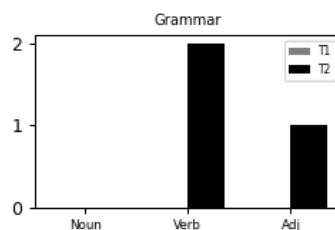
of all the others

, as in

was necessary, as

it was for

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the defence of Ferrara,

and to keep down the pope they made use of the

Roman barons. These  
were

barons of Rome, who, being

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



divided into two factions

, the Orsinis and the Colonnas, and as

, Orsini

there was constant quarrelling between them,

and Colonna, had always a pretext for

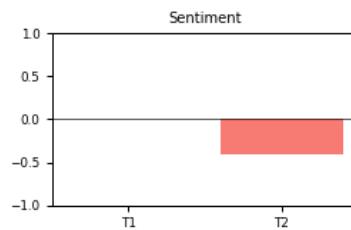
and they were constantly

disorder, and, standing with

under arms, before

arms in their hands under

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



the eyes of the

pope, they Pontiff,

kept the

papacy pontificate

weak and

infirm. powerless.

And although there

arose now and then a resolute pope like might arise sometimes a

Sextus, yet his fortune or ability was never courageous pope, such as Sixtus, yet neither

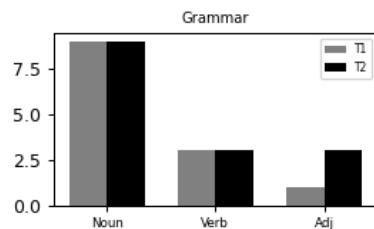
able to liberate him from fortune nor wisdom could

these evils. The shortness of their life was the rid him of these annoyances. And the short

reason of this, life of a pope is also a

cause of weakness;

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



for

in the

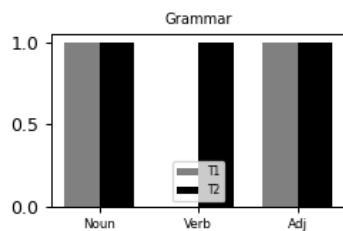
course of

ten years which

, as a general rule,

is the average life of

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



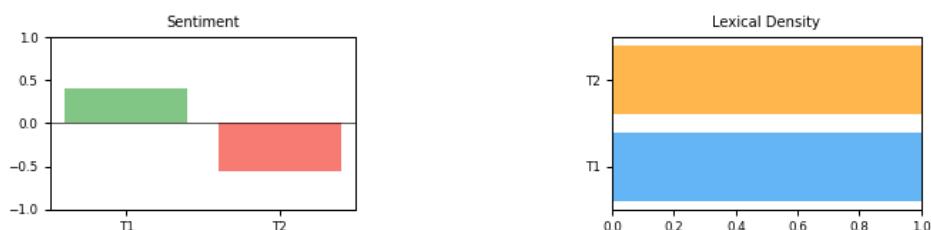
a pope

lived, he

, he can with difficulty lower

had great difficulty in suppressing even

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



one of the factions, and if

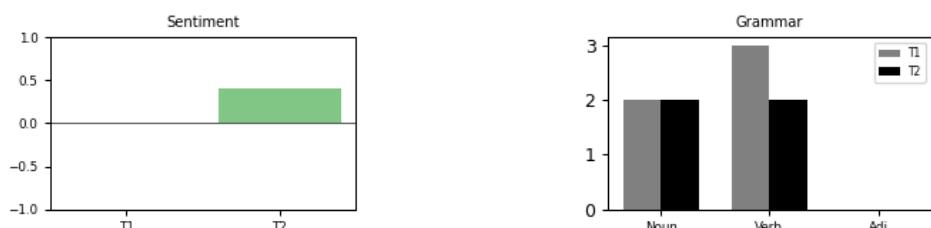
, so to  
for example, a pope had almost put down the speak, one people should almost destroy the  
Colonnas, a new pope would Colonnesi, another would  
succeed who was arise

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



hostile to the  
Orsinis, which caused the Colonnas to Orsini, who would support their opponents,  
spring up again, and he was not in and yet  
would not have

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.

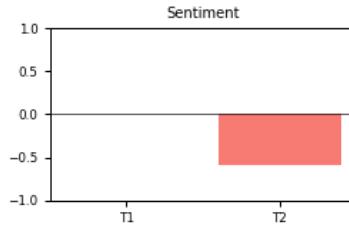


time to

suppress them. This caused

ruin the Orsini. This was the reason why

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the temporal

power

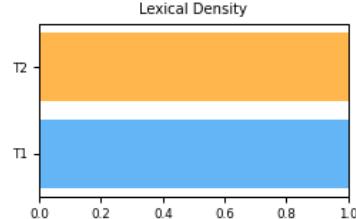
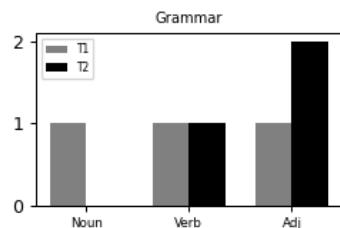
powers

of the pope

to be of little esteem

were little esteemed

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



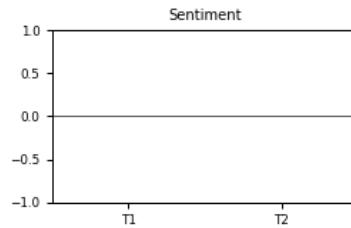
in Italy

Then arose Alexander VI.

[1] Charles VIII invaded Italy in 1494.

Alexander the Sixth arose afterwards,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



who of all the pontiffs

who that

have ever

reigned, best been

showed how a pope

might prevail both by with both

money and

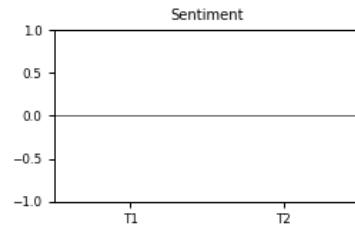
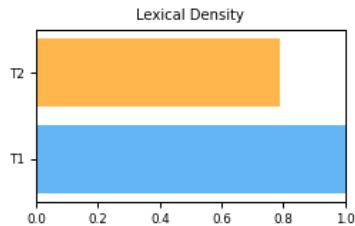
by arms was able to

force. With Duke Valentine as his prevail; and through the instrumentality of

instrument, and on the occasion the Duke Valentino, and by

reason of the entry

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



of

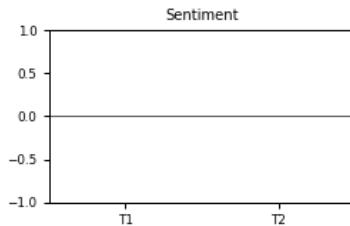
the French

invasion, he did all that

, he brought about all those things

which

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



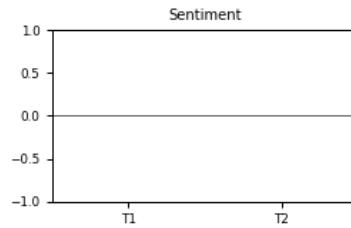
I have

previously described

discussed above in

in speaking of

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



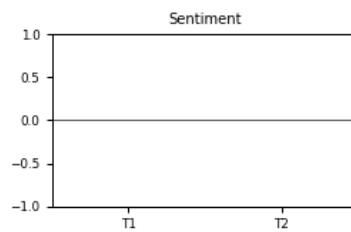
the actions of the duke. And although his

object was

intention was not to aggrandize

to aggrandise not

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the Church but the duke

,

,

nevertheless,

what he did

resulted in

contributed to the greatness

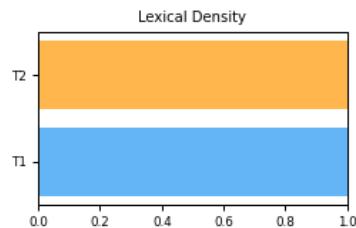
the aggrandisement

of the Church, which after

the death

his death and the ruin

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of the duke

became the heir

of

to all

his labours

. Then came

.

Pope Julius

, who

came afterwards and

found

the Church

powerful,

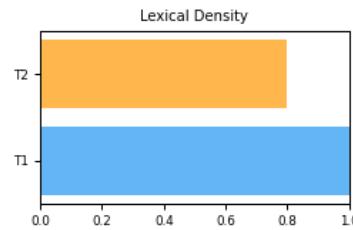
strong,

possessing all

Romagna, all the Roman barons suppressed, and

the Romagna, the barons of Rome reduced to impotence, and, through the chastisements of Alexander,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

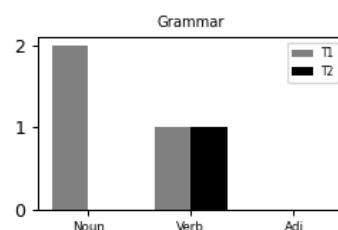


the factions

destroyed by the severity of Alexander.

wiped out;

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



He also found the way open

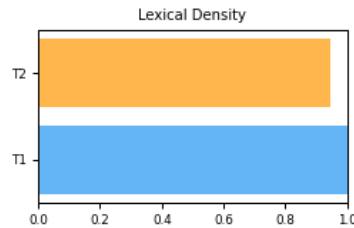
for accumulating wealth in ways never used before the time of Alexander. These

to accumulate money in a manner such as had never been

measures were

practised before Alexander's time. Such things Julius

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

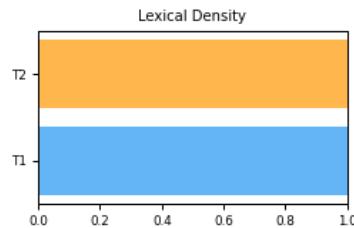


not only followed

by Julius, but increased; he resolved

, but improved upon, and he intended

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to gain Bologna

, put down

, to ruin

the

Venetians and

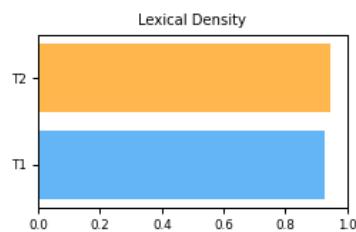
to

drive the French

from Italy, in all which enterprises  
he was successful. He merits the greater  
praise,

out of Italy. All of these  
enterprises prospered with him, and so much  
the more to his credit,  
inasmuch

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



as he did everything  
to

increase the power of  
the Church and not  
strengthen

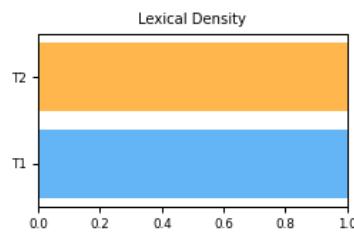
of  
any private person. He

also kept  
the Orsini and  
kept also

Colonna parties in the conditions

Colonnesi factions within  
the bounds

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



in which he

found them, and although there

were some leaders

was

among them

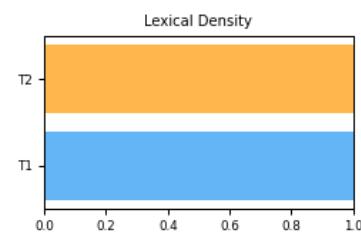
who might

some mind to make disturbance, nevertheless

have made changes, there were

he held

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



two things

that kept them steady: firm:

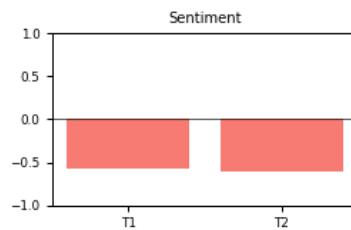
the

one,

the greatness of the Church

, which they dreaded; , with which he terrified them; and

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

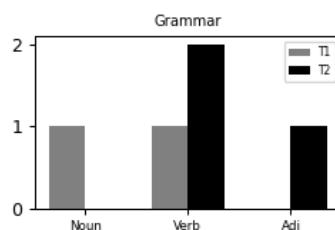


the other

, the fact , not allowing them to have their own

that they had no

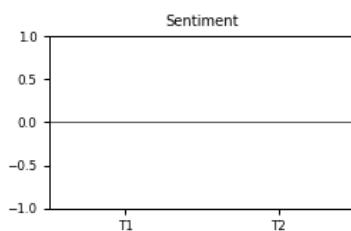
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



cardinals, who

are the origin of the tumults caused  
the disorders

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



among

them. For

these parties are never at rest when they have

cardinals,

for these stir up the parties both within

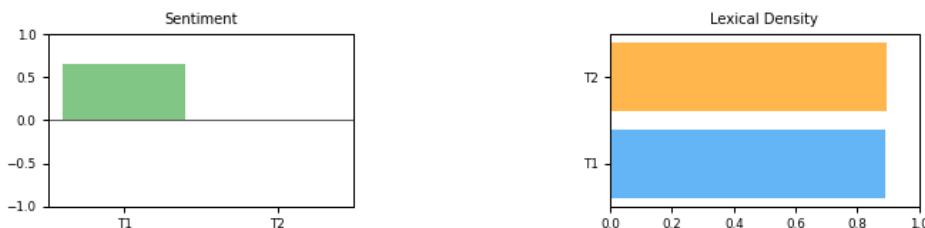
whenever these factions have their

cardinals they do not remain quiet for long,

because cardinals foster

the factions in

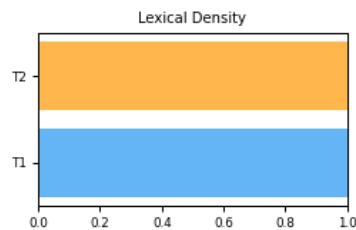
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



Rome and

outside, out of it,  
and the  
barons are  
  
forced to defend them. compelled to  
support them, and

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



Thus from the ambitions of prelates  
arise

the discords disorders

and tumults among the barons

.

. For these reasons

His holiness, Pope Leo

X., therefore, has [2]

found the pontificate

in a very powerful condition,  
most powerful, and  
from which

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



it is

to be

hoped, that

as those popes ,

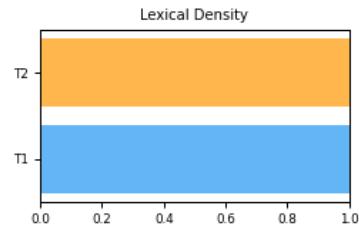
if others

made it great

by force of in arms, he will make it still greater and more

armies, so he through venerated by

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



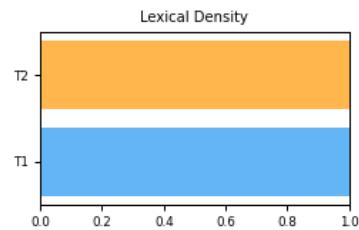
his goodness and infinite other virtues

will make

it both great and venerated.

[2] Pope Leo X was the Cardinal de' Medici.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

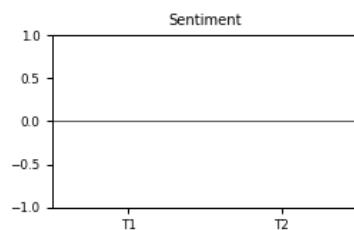


CHAPTER XII

# THE DIFFERENT KINDS OF SOLDIERS THERE ARE, AND CONCERNING MERCENARIES

## MILITIA AND MERCENARY SOLDIERS

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



Having now discussed fully the qualities of these principalities of which

Having discoursed particularly on the  
characteristics of such  
principalities as in the beginning

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



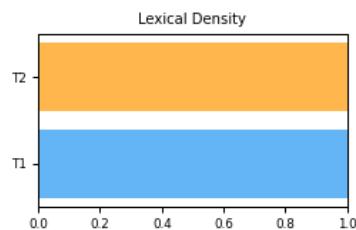
I proposed to

treat, and partially considered

discuss, and having

considered in some degree

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



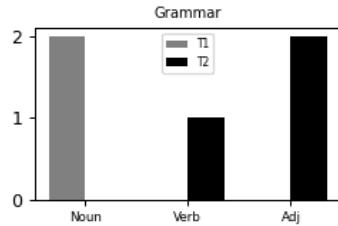
the causes of

their

there being good or bad,

prosperity or failure,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



and having

also showed

shown

the methods by which

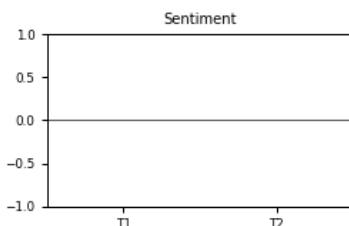
many have sought to

obtain such states,

acquire them and

to hold them,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



it now remains for me to

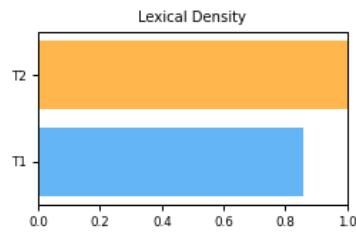
treat

discuss generally the means of

generally of the methods of attack

offence

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.

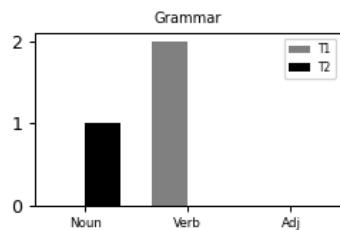


and defence

that can be used in

which belong to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



each of them. We have

said already

seen above

how necessary it is for a prince

to have his foundations

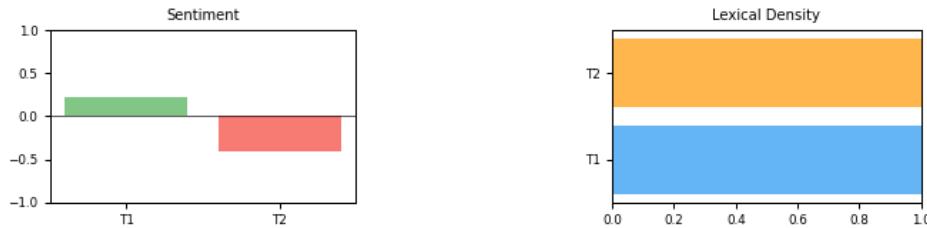
good, otherwise he is certain to be ruined.

well laid, otherwise it follows of necessity he

will go to

ruin.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



The chief foundations of all states

, whether new,  
old, or

mixed,  
are

good laws and good arms. And as there cannot be good laws where

there  
are not good arms, and where there are good  
arms there should be  
the state is not well armed, it follows that  
where they are  
well armed they have

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



good

laws, I

will not now discuss

shall leave

the laws

, but will

out of the

discussion and shall

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



speak of the arms. I

say, therefore, that the arms

by

with

which a prince defends his

possessions state

are either his own, or

else mercenaries, or they are mercenaries,

auxiliaries, or mixed

. The .

mercenaries and auxiliaries are useless and dangerous, and if

any one one holds

keeps

his state based on

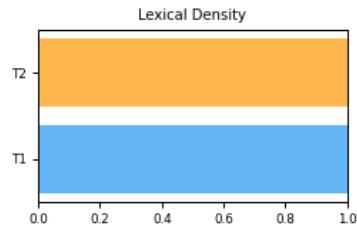
the arms of mercenaries, these arms,

he will

never stand stand neither firm nor safe; for

firm or sure, as

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



they are disunited, ambitious

, and

without discipline

, unfaithful,

faithless, bold amongst valiant before

friends, cowardly

amongst before

enemies, they have

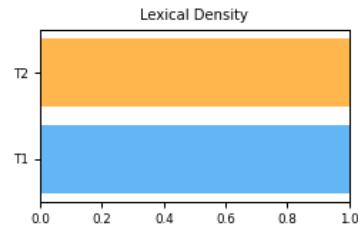
no neither the

fear of God

, and keep no faith with men. Ruin is only nor fidelity to men, and destruction is

deferred as deferred only so

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



long

as the

assault is postponed;

attack is; for

in peace

you are despoiled

one is robbed

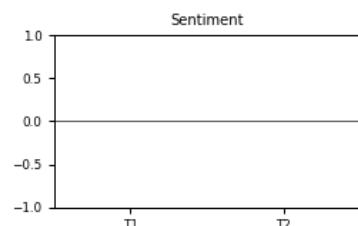
by them, and in

war by the enemy. The

cause of this is that

fact is,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



they have no

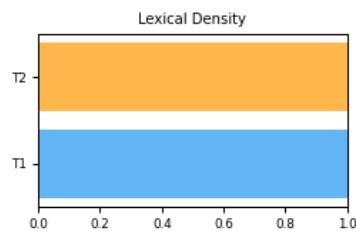
love or other

other attraction or reason for

motive to keep them in

keeping

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

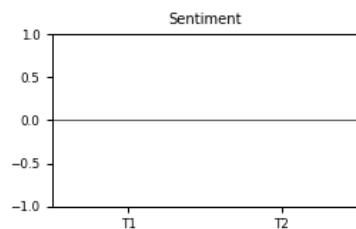


the field

beyond a trifling wage,

than a trifle of stipend,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



which is not

enough

sufficient

to make them

ready willing  
to die for you. They are

quite willing ready enough  
to be

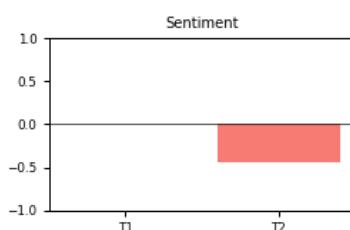
your soldiers

so long as whilst  
you do not make war, but

when if  
war comes

, it is they take  
either fly or be off. I ought to themselves off or run from the foe; which I  
should

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



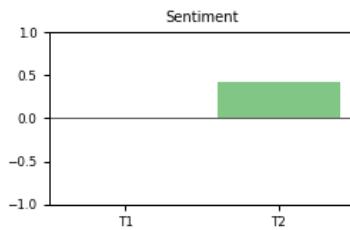
have little trouble

in proving this,  
since  
the ruin of Italy

is now  
has been  
caused by nothing else

but through her  
than by  
having relied  
resting all her hopes

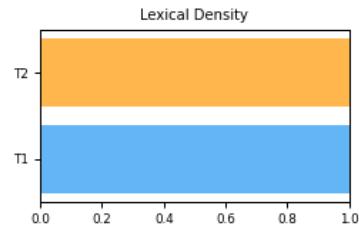
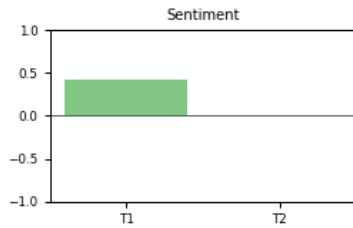
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



for many years on

mercenary arms. These were somewhat  
improved in a few cases,  
mercenaries, and although they  
formerly made some display

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



and appeared

courageous among themselves, but

valiant amongst themselves, yet

when the

foreigner

foreigners

came they showed

their worthlessness.

what they were.

Thus it

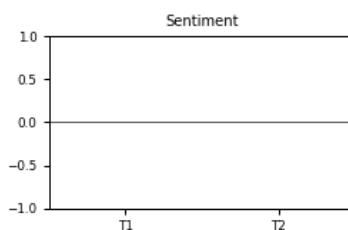
came

was that

about that King Charles

Charles, King

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

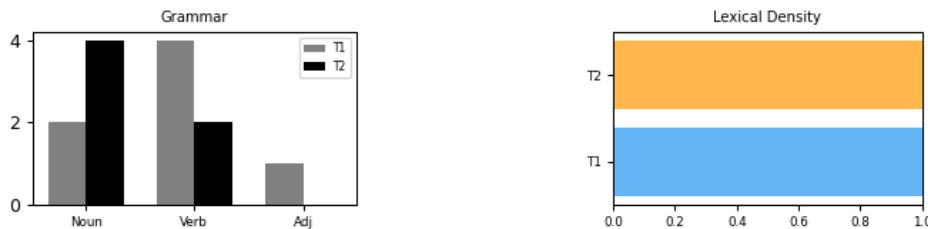


of France was allowed to

take Italy without the  
 slightest trouble, and those who said that it  
 was owing to

seize Italy with chalk in  
 hand;[1] and he who told us that

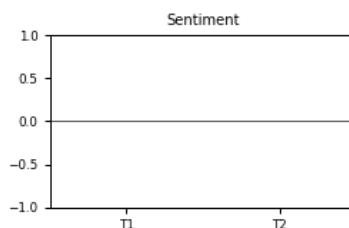
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



our sins

,  
 spoke  
 were the cause of it told

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



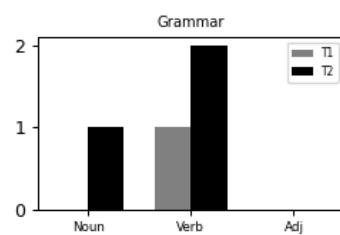
the truth, but

that they believed he imagined,  
but those

I have related. And as

, they too have , it is the princes who  
have also

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



suffered the

punishment. I will explain more fully the penalty.

defects

[1] “With chalk in hand,” “col gesso.” This is

one of the \_bons mots\_

of Alexander VI, and refers to the ease with

which Charles VIII seized

Italy, implying that it was only necessary for

him to send his

quartermasters to chalk up the billets for his

soldiers to conquer the

country. \_Cf. “The History of Henry VII,”

by Lord Bacon: “King

Charles had conquered the realm of Naples,

and lost it again, in a

kind of a felicity of a dream. He passed the

whole length of Italy

without resistance: so that it was true what

Pope Alexander was wont

to say: That the Frenchmen came into Italy

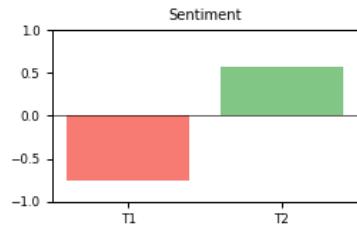
with chalk in their hands,

to mark up their lodgings, rather than with

swords to fight.”

I wish to demonstrate further the infelicity

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of these

arms

. The

Mercenary captains are either

very

capable men or

they are

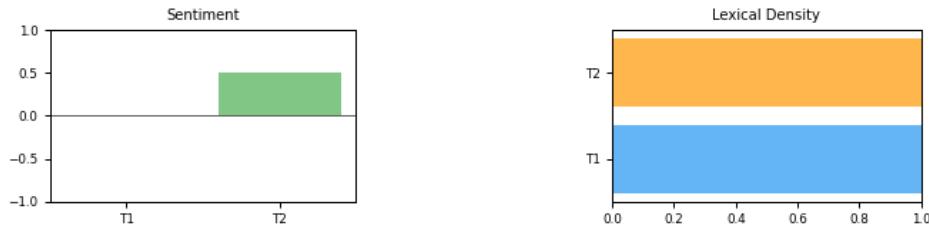
not; if they

are, you cannot

rely upon them, for they will

trust them, because they

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



always aspire to their

own greatness, either by oppressing you

, who are

their master, or

by oppressing others

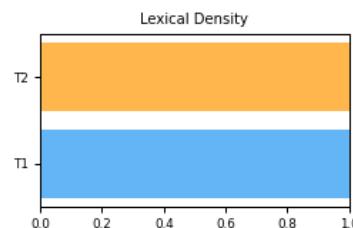
others against contrary to

your intentions; but if the captain is not

an able man, skilful, you are

he will generally ruin you. ruined in the usual way.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



And if it

is replied to this,

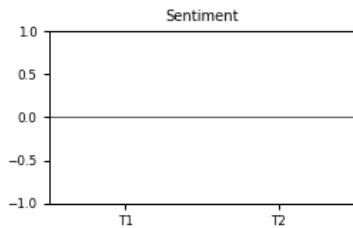
be urged

that whoever

has armed forces will do

is armed will act in

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the same

, whether these are

way,

whether

mercenary or not,

I

would

reply that

as armies are

when arms have

to be

used resorted  
to,

either by a prince or

by

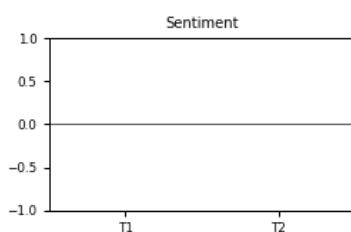
a  
republic

, then  
the prince

must ought to  
go in person

to take the position of captain, and perform the duty of a captain;  
and

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

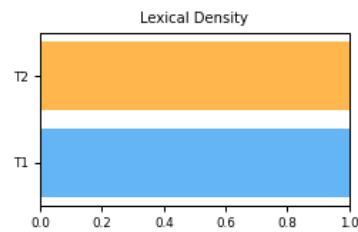


the republic

must has to  
send its

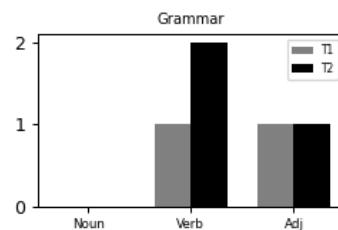
own citizens. If the one sent turns citizens, and when one is sent who does not out incompetent, it must change turn out satisfactorily, it ought to recall

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



him; and  
if capable, keep when one is worthy, to hold

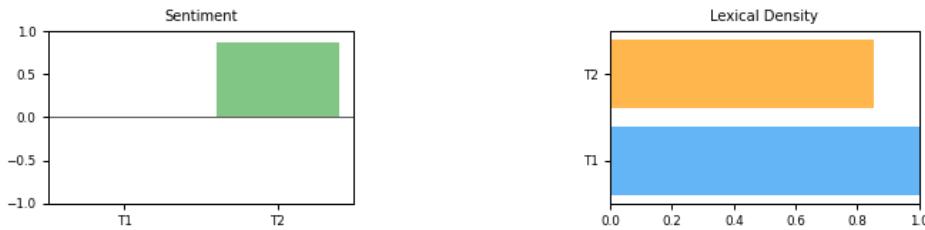
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



him by

law from going beyond the proper limits. the laws so that he does not leave the command. And experience has shown princes and republics, single-handed, making the greatest progress, and mercenaries doing nothing except damage;

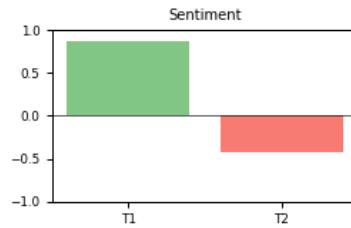
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



And it is

seen by experience that more difficult to only princes and armed republics make very bring a republic, armed with its own arms, great progress, whereas under the sway mercenary forces do nothing but damage, and also an armed republic submits less easily to the rule

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



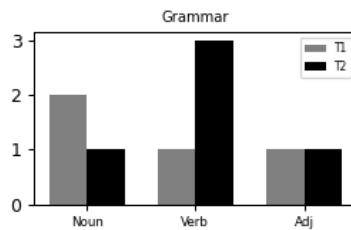
of one of its citizens than

a republic

it is to bring one armed with foreign arms.

armed by foreign forces.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



Rome and Sparta

were

stood

for many

centuries well

ages

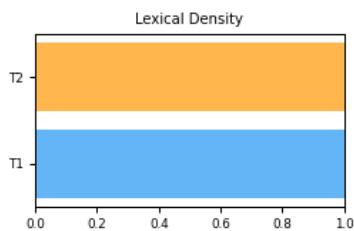
armed and free. The

Swiss are well  
Switzers are completely  
armed and

enjoy great freedom. As an  
example of mercenary armies in antiquity  
quite free.

Of ancient mercenaries, for example,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



there are the Carthaginians,  
who were oppressed by their mercenary soldiers, after the

termination  
of the  
first war with the Romans

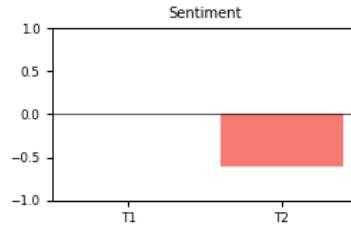
, even while they still , although the Carthaginians

had their own  
citizens

as captains. for captains.

After the death of Epaminondas,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

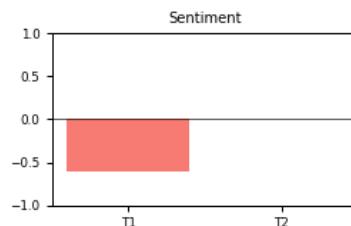


Philip of Macedon was made captain of their

forces soldiers  
by the Thebans

after the death of Epaminondas, ,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



and after

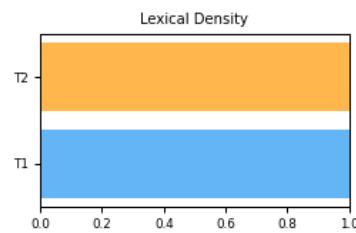
gaining  
the  
victory he

deprived them of liberty.

took away their  
liberty.

Duke Filippo being dead,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



The Milanese

, on the death enlisted  
of Duke Philip, hired

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



Francesco Sforza against the Venetians

, who , and he,

having overcome the enemy at Caravaggio

,

,[2]

allied himself with them to

oppress

crush

the Milanese his

employers. The father of this Sforza, being

masters. His

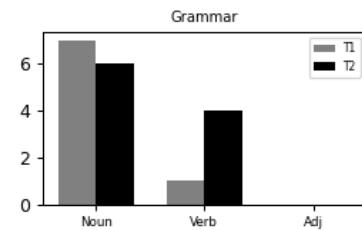
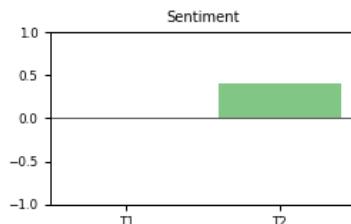
a soldier in the service of the Queen

father, Sforza, having been engaged by

Giovanna

Queen Johanna[3]

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



of Naples, left her

suddenly unarmed, by which

unprotected, so that

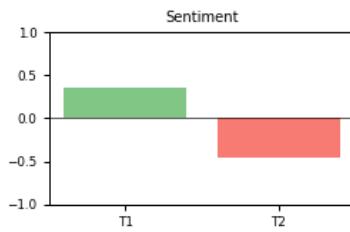
she was

compelled, in order not to lose the

forced

kingdom,

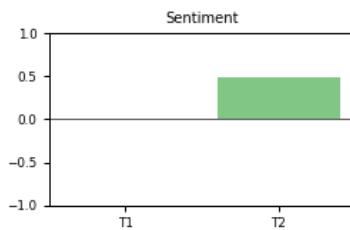
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to throw herself into the arms of the King of Aragon

, in order to save her kingdom.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



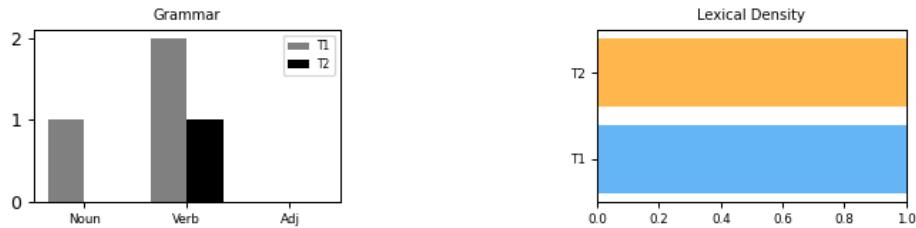
And

if the Venetians and Florentines

have in times past increased

formerly extended

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



their

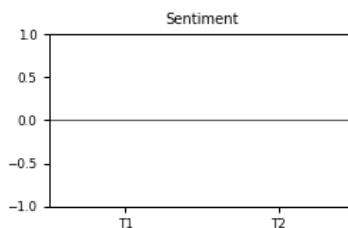
dominions by

means of such forces, and

these

arms, and yet

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



their captains

have not made

did not make

themselves princes but have defended them, I reply that the Florentines

in this case have been favoured by chance, for of the

capable leaders

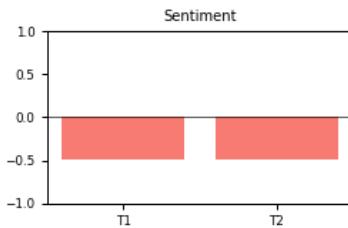
able captains, of

whom they might have

feared, some did not conquer, some met with  
opposition,

stood in fear, some have not conquered,  
some have been opposed,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



and others

directed their ambition elsewhere. The

have turned their ambitions elsewhere.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



one who

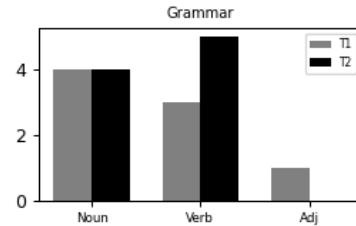
did not conquer was

Sir John Hawkwood, whose fidelity could  
not be

Giovanni Acuto,[4] and since he did not  
conquer his fidelity cannot

known as he was not victorious, be proved;

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



but every one will

admit acknowledge

that, had he

conquered, the Florentines would have

been stood

at his

mercy. discretion.

Sforza had

always

the Bracceschi

always

against him

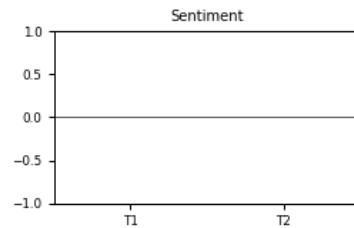
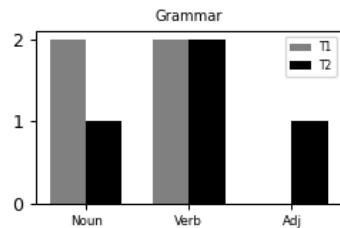
, they being constantly at enmity.

, so they watched each other. Francesco

Francesco directed

turned

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



his ambition

towards

to

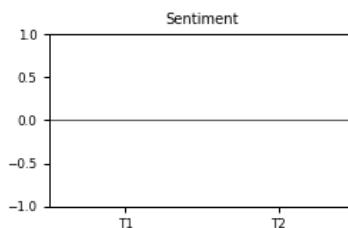
Lombardy; Braccio against the

Church and the kingdom of Naples. But let us

look at what followed

come to that which happened

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



a

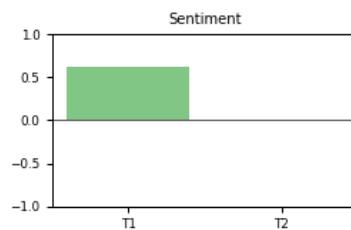
short

time while  
ago. The Florentines appointed

Paolo Vitelli as  
their captain

, Pagolo Vitelli, a most  
a man of great prudence, who had risen prudent man, who

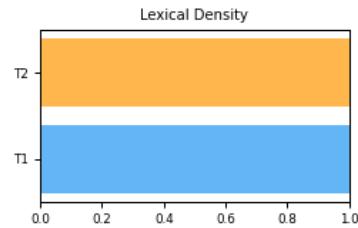
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



from a private  
station position had risen  
to the

highest reputation. If he greatest  
renown. If this man

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



had taken Pisa

no one , nobody

can deny that it

was would have

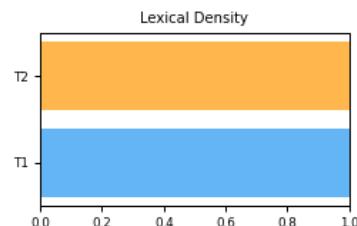
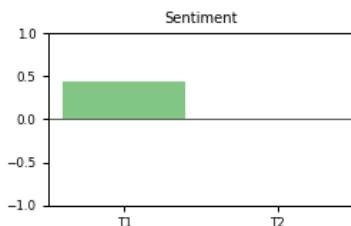
highly important been proper

for the Florentines to

retain his friendship, because keep in with him, for if he became

had he become

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the soldier of their enemies they

would have

had no

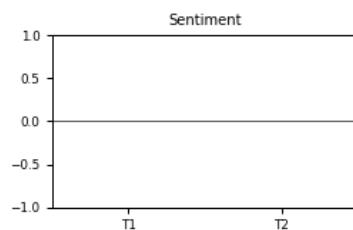
means of

opposing him; and in order to retain

resisting, and if

they held to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



him they

would have been

must

obliged to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



obey him

. As to

the Venetians, if

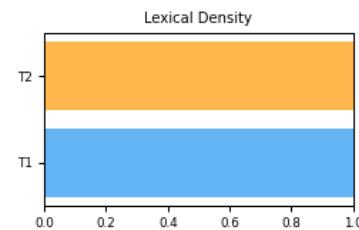
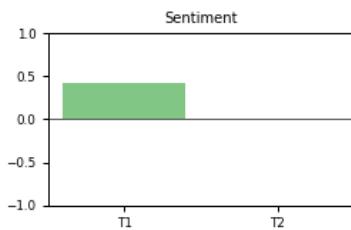
one considers the progress

their

they made, it

achievements are considered,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



will be seen

that they acted surely

to have acted safely

and gloriously so

long as they

made war with

sent to war

their own

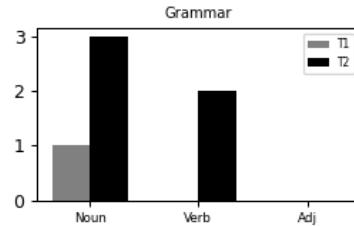
forces; that it

men, when with armed

gentlemen and plebians they did valiantly.

This

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



was before they

commenced their

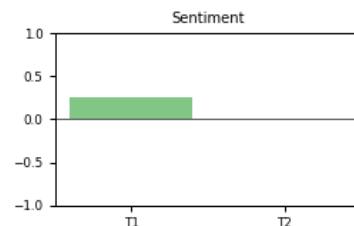
turned

to enterprises on land

that they fought courageously with ,

their own gentlemen and armed populace,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



but when they began to fight

on land they

abandoned  
forsook  
this virtue, and

began to follow the Italian  
followed the custom of Italy. And in the  
custom. And at the commencement  
beginning

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



of their

land conquests  
expansion on land, through not having much  
territory, and because of their great  
reputation,

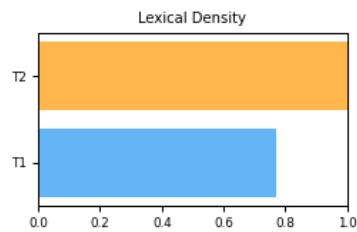
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



they had not  
much to fear from their captains

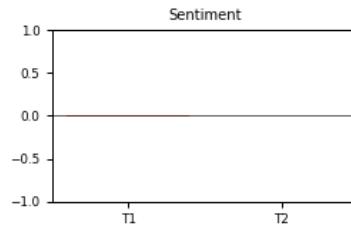
, their land possessions not being ; but when they expanded, as under  
very large, and their reputation being great, Carmignuola,[5]  
but as their possessions  
increased, as they did under Carmagnola,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



they had  
an example of their a taste of this  
mistake. For  
seeing that he was very powerful, after he , having found him  
had defeated a most valiant man (they beat

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the Duke of Milan

, and knowing,

under his leadership),

and,

on the other hand

, that

, knowing how lukewarm

he was

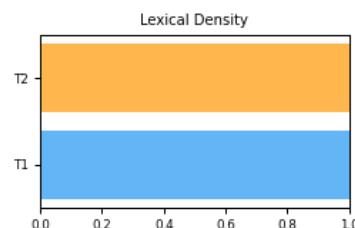
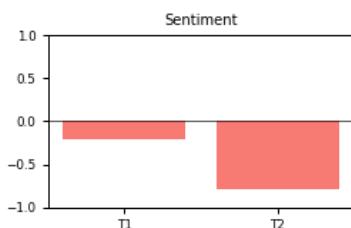
not

in the war, they

enterprising in warfare, they considered that

feared

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



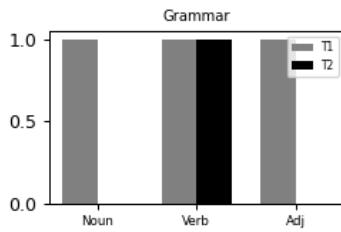
they would

not make any

no longer conquer under

more conquests with

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



him, and

they neither would nor could dismiss him,

for this reason they

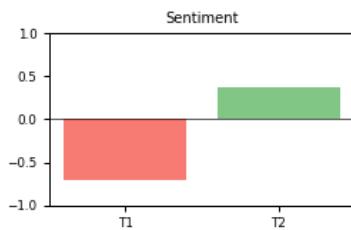
for fear of losing what

were not willing, nor were they able, to let

him go; and so, not to

lose again that which

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



they had

already gained.

acquired,

They were

therefore

compelled,

obliged,

in order to

make sure of him, to have him killed. They

secure themselves, to murder him. They had

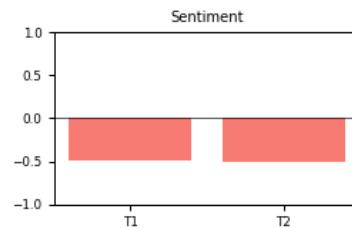
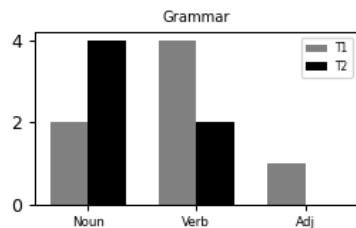
then

afterwards for their

had for captains Bartolommeo

captains Bartolomeo

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



da Bergamo, Roberto da San Severino

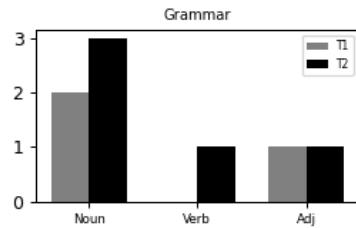
, Count

, the count of

di Pitigliano, and such like, from

Pitigliano,[6] and the like, under

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



whom they had to

fear loss instead

dread loss and not

of

gain, as happened

subsequently at Vailà,

afterwards at Vaila,[7]

where in one

day

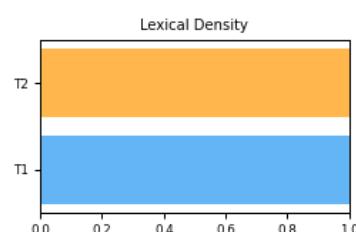
battle

they lost

what they had laboriously gained

that which

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



in eight hundred years

; for

they had acquired with so much trouble. Because from such arms conquests come but slowly, long delayed and inconsiderable, but the losses sudden and portentous.

[2] Battle of Caravaggio, 15th September  
1448.

[3] Johanna II of Naples, the widow of  
Ladislao, King of Naples.

[4] Giovanni Acuto. An English knight  
whose name was Sir John Hawkwood. He fought in the English wars  
in France, and was knighted by Edward III; afterwards he collected a body  
of troops and went into

Italy. These became the famous “White Company.” He took part in many  
wars, and died in Florence in 1394. He was

born about 1320 at Sible Hedingham, a village in Essex. He married  
Domnia, a daughter of

Bernabo Visconti.

[5] Carmignuola. Francesco Bussone, born at

Carmagnola about 1390,

executed at Venice, 5th May 1432.

[6] Bartolomeo Colleoni of Bergamo; died

1457. Roberto of San

Severino; died fighting for Venice against

Sigismund, Duke of Austria,

in 1487. "Primo capitano in Italia."—

Machiavelli. Count of Pitigliano;

Nicolo Orsini, born 1442, died 1510.

[7] Battle of Vaila in 1509.

And as

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



with these

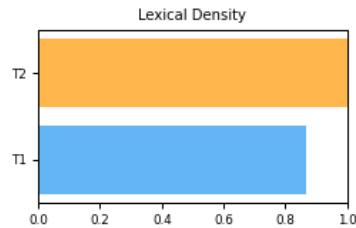
forces, only slow and trifling acquisitions are

examples

made, but sudden and

miraculous losses. And as

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



I have

cited these examples from

reached

Italy,

which has

now

been ruled

for many years

been governed by mercenary forces, I will

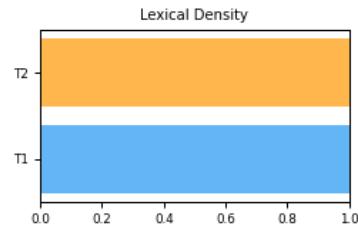
by mercenaries, I wish to discuss them more

now deal more largely with them, so

seriously,

in order

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



that having seen their

origin rise

and

progress

, they can , one may

be better

remedied. prepared to counteract them.

You must understand that

in

these latter times, as soon as

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



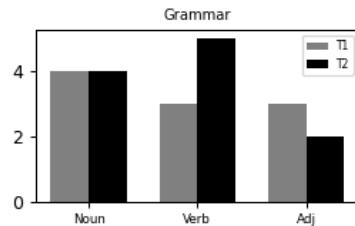
the empire

began has  
recently come  
to be repudiated in  
Italy

and , that  
the pope

to gain greater reputation in temporal has acquired  
matters, more temporal power, and that Italy has been  
Italy was divided into many states; divided up into more  
states, for the reason that

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



many of the

principal great

cities took

up arms against their nobles, who

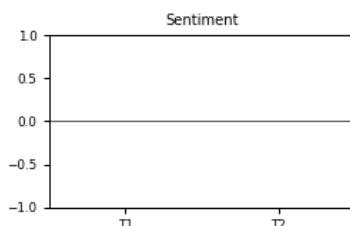
, formerly

favoured by the emperor

, had held , were

them in subjection, and oppressing them, whilst

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

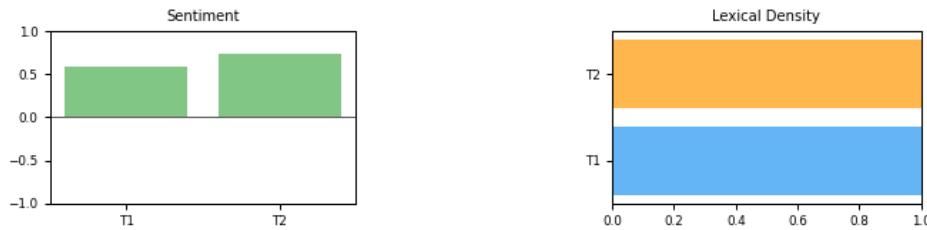


the Church

encouraged this in order to increase  
its

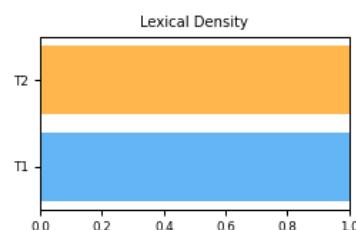
was favouring them so as to gain  
authority in

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



temporal power. In many  
other cities one of the inhabitants became  
prince. Thus Italy having fallen almost  
entirely  
others their citizens became  
princes. From this it came to pass that Italy  
fell partly

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



into the hands of  
the Church and

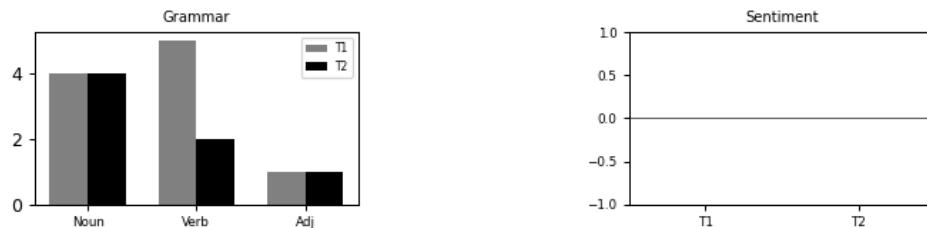
a few  
of  
republics, and the

Church consisting of  
priests and

other citizens  
not being accustomed to bear arms, they  
began to hire foreigners as  
soldiers.

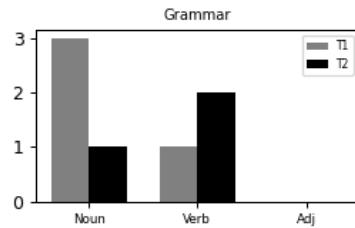
the republic of citizens unaccustomed to  
arms, both  
commenced to enlist foreigners.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



The first  
to bring reputation for this kind of militia  
who gave renown to this soldiery

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



was

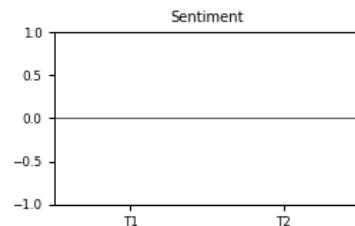
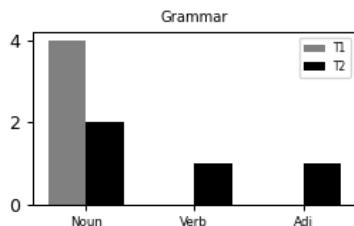
Alberigo da

Como, a native of Romagna. The discipline

Conio,[8]

the Romagnian. From the school

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



of this man

produced,

sprang,

among others, Braccio and Sforza, who

were

in their

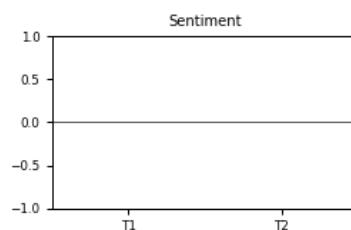
day time were  
 the  
 arbiters of Italy. After these came all  
 those others who up to the the other captains who till now have directed  
 present day have commanded the armies the arms

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



of Italy, and the  
 result of their end of all their valour  
 prowess

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



has been that

Italy she

has been overrun by Charles

, preyed on , robbed

by

Louis

, tyrannised over by Ferrando, , ravaged by Ferdinand,

, ravaged by Ferdinand,

and insulted by the

Swiss. The principle that has guided them

Switzers. The principle that has guided them

system adopted by them was, in the first

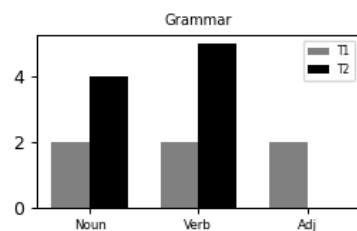
has been, first, to

place, to

lower the credit of infantry so that they might

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

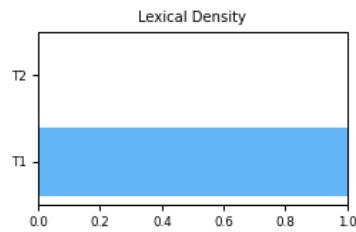
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



increase their own

reputation by discrediting the infantry.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

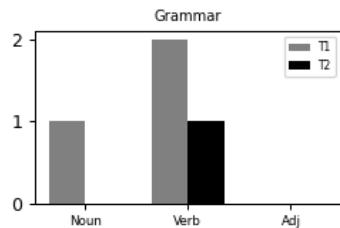


They did this because

, as they , subsisting

had no country and lived

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



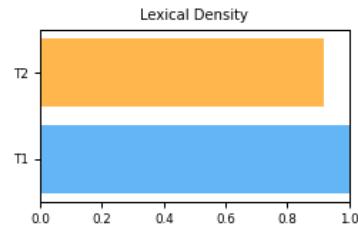
on their

earnings, pay and without territory,

they were unable to support many soldiers,

and

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



a few

foot soldiers

infantry

did not

augment their reputation, and they could not

give them any authority; so they were led to

maintain a large number

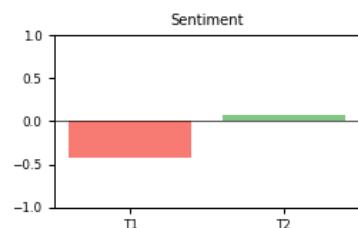
employ cavalry,

and therefore they restricted themselves

almost entirely to cavalry,

by which

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



with a

smaller number moderate force of which  
they were

well paid maintained

and honoured

. They ; and affairs

reduced things were brought

to such a

state pass

that in an army of

20,000 twenty thousand

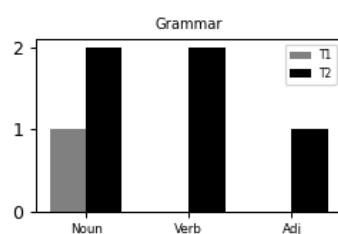
soldiers there

were not

2000 foot. to be found two thousand foot soldiers.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



They had

also

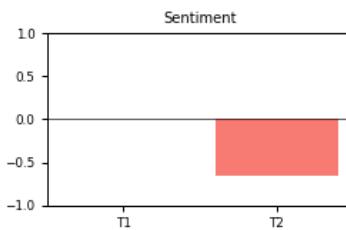
, besides this,

used every

means to spare

art to lessen fatigue and danger to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



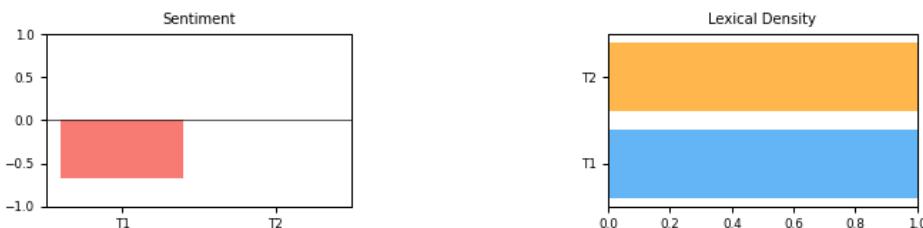
themselves

and

the soldiers any hardship or fear by

their soldiers,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



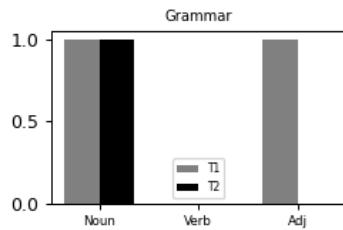
not killing

each other in

in the fray,

their encounters,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



but taking prisoners

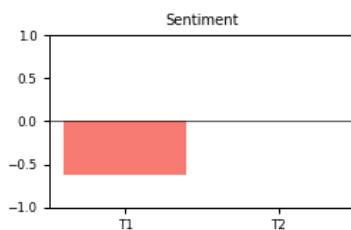
without a blow. They made no

and liberating without ransom. They

attacks on fortifications by night; and those

in the fortifications

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



did

not attack

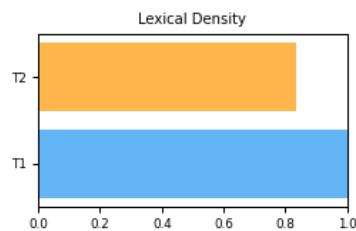
the tents

towns at

night, nor did the garrisons of the towns

attack encampments

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

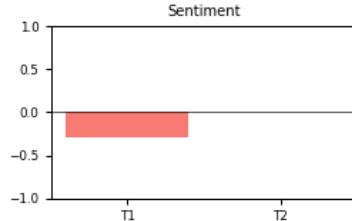
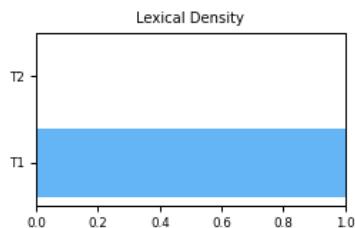


at night, they

made no stockades on ditches round

their camps, and

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



did not

take the field in

surround the camp either with stockade or

ditch, nor did

they campaign in the

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



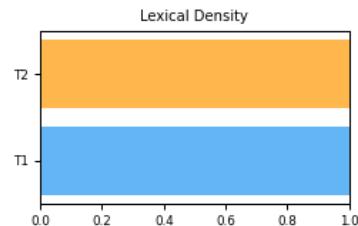
winter. All these things

were permitted by their military rules, and

adopted, as we

devised by them to avoid, as I

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



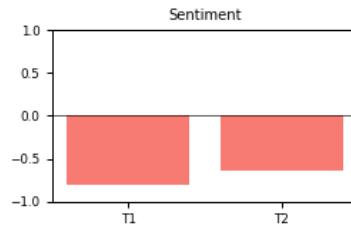
have said

, both

to avoid trouble and danger, so that

fatigue and dangers; thus

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



they have

reduced

brought

Italy to slavery

and

degradation.

contempt.

[8] Alberigo da Conio. Alberico da Barbiano,

Count of Cunio in

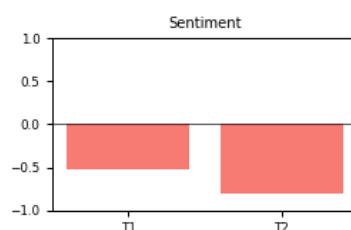
Romagna. He was the leader of the famous

“Company of St George,”

composed entirely of Italian soldiers. He

died in 1409.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



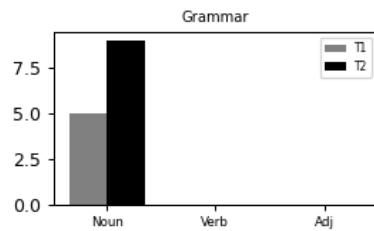


## CHAPTER XIII

OF AUXILIARY, MIXED, AND NATIVE  
TROOPS

CONCERNING AUXILIARIES, MIXED  
SOLDIERY, AND ONE'S OWN

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

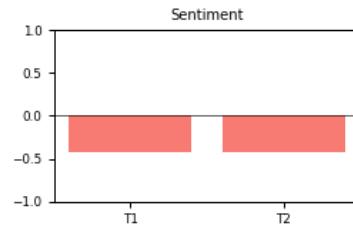


Auxiliary forces,  
which are the other

kind of useless forces, are  
when one calls on a potentate to come and  
aid one

Auxiliaries,  
useless arm, are employed when a  
prince is called in

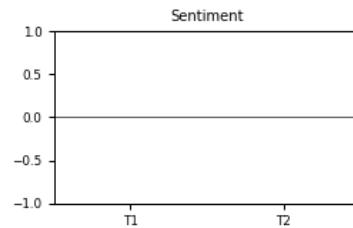
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



with his

troops, forces to aid and defend,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



as

was done

in by

Pope Julius in the most

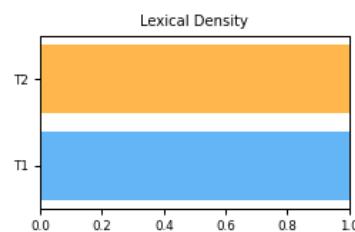
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



recent times

by Julius, who seeing the wretched failure ; for he, having, in the enterprise  
against Ferrara, had poor proof

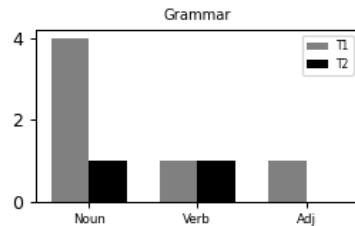
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of his

mercenary forces, in his Ferrara enterprise, mercenaries, turned  
had recourse

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



to

auxiliaries, and

arranged with Ferrando,

stipulated with Ferdinand,

King of Spain

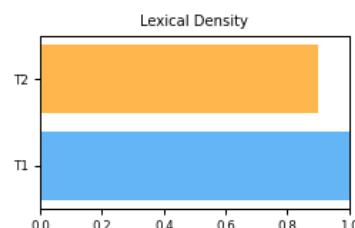
, that he should

,[1] for his

help him with his armies. These forces

assistance with men and arms. These arms

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



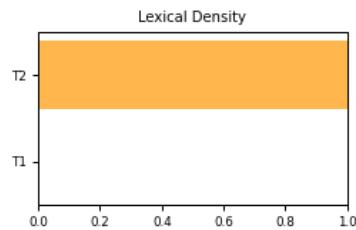
may be

useful and

good in themselves, but

for him who calls them in

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



they are always

dangerous for those who borrow them, for if

disadvantageous; for losing, one is undone,

they lose

and winning, one is their

you are defeated, and if they conquer you

captive.

remain their prisoner.

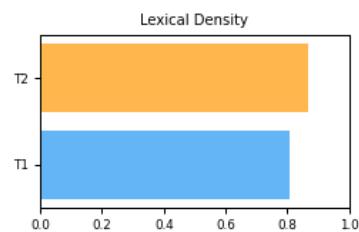
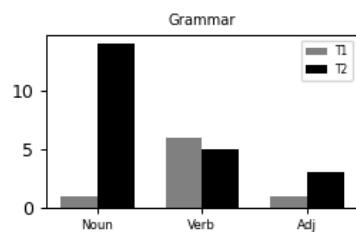
[1] Ferdinand V (F. II of Aragon and Sicily,

F. III of Naples),

surnamed "The Catholic," born 1452, died

1516.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



And

although ancient

history is

histories may be

full of examples

of this, I will not depart

, I do not wish

from the example

to leave this recent one

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



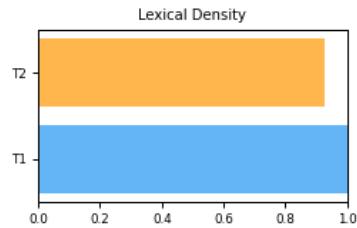
of Pope Julius

II., which is still fresh. Nothing

the Second, the peril of which

could be less prudent than the course he  
adopted; for,

cannot fail to be perceived; for he,



wishing to

take

get Ferrara, threw

Ferrara, he put

himself entirely into the

power of a

hands of the

foreigner. But

by

his

good fortune

there arose

brought about

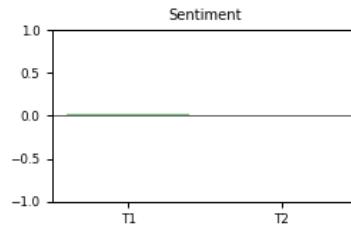
a third

cause which prevented him reaping

event, so that he did not reap the fruit

the effects

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of his

bad choice; for when

rash choice; because, having

his auxiliaries

were beaten

routed

at Ravenna

, the Swiss rose up and drove back the

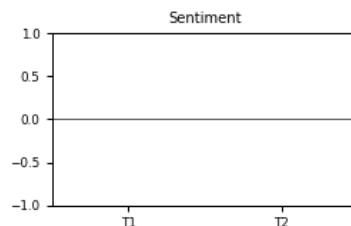
, and the

victors,

Switzers having risen and driven out the

conquerors (

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



against all

expectation

of himself or others, so

, both his and others), it so came to pass

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



that he

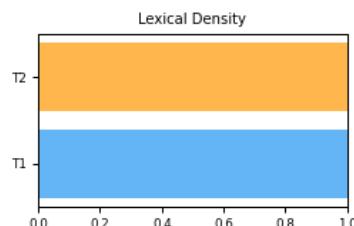
was not taken prisoner by

did not

the enemy which had

become prisoner to his enemies, they having

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



fled, nor

by his own auxiliaries,

to his

auxiliaries, he

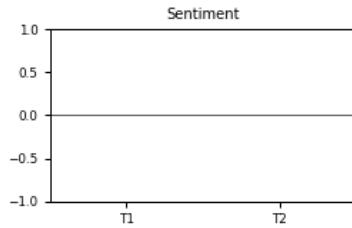
having conquered

by other arms than theirs. The Florentines, being

totally disarmed,  
hired 10,000

entirely without arms, sent ten thousand

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

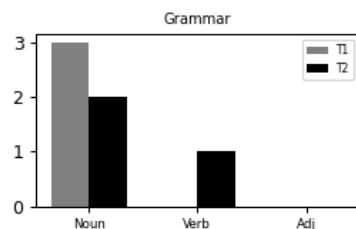


Frenchmen to

attack Pisa, by which measure

take Pisa, whereby

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



they ran

greater risk

more danger

than at any

period other  
time

of their  
struggles. troubles.

The emperor of  
Constantinople

, [2]  
to oppose his neighbours

, put 10,000 , sent ten  
thousand

Turks into Greece,  
who

after , on  
the war

would not go away again, which being finished, were not  
willing to quit; this

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



was the beginning of

the servitude of Greece to the infidels

. Any one, therefore, who wishes

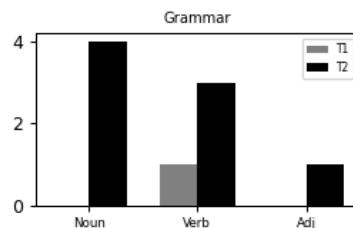
not

[2] Joannes Cantacuzenus, born 1300, died

1383.

Therefore, let him who has no desire

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to conquer

, would do well to use these forces, which

make use of these arms,

for they

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



are much more

dangerous

hazardous

than mercenaries

, as

, because

with them

the

ruin is

complete, for

ready made;

they

are all united

, and owe

, all yield

obedience to others

, whereas ; but  
with mercenaries,  
when they have conquered

, it requires ,  
more time and

a good opportunity better opportunities are needed  
for them

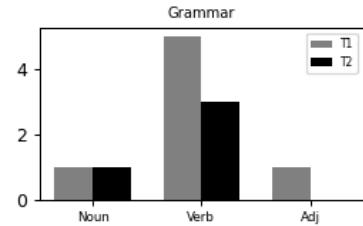
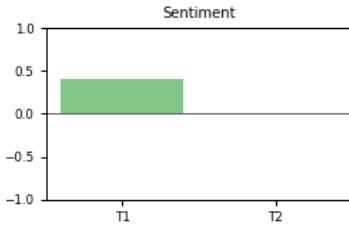
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to injure you

, as they do not form a single body and have ; they are not all of one  
been community, they are found  
engaged

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



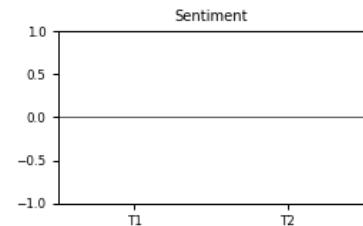
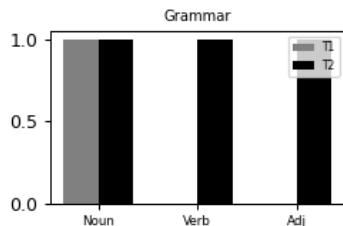
and paid by you

, therefore , and  
a third party

that , which  
you have made

leader cannot their head, is not able all

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

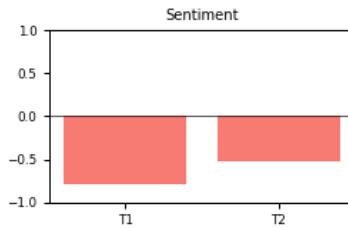


at once

acquire to assume  
enough authority

to be able  
 to injure  
 you. In  
  
 a word, the greatest dangers with mercenaries conclusion, in mercenaries dastardly is most  
 lies in their dangerous; in auxiliaries, valour. The  
 cowardice and reluctance to fight, but with  
 auxiliaries the danger  
 lies in their courage. A

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



wise prince, therefore  
  
 , always avoids these , has  
 forces and has recourse always avoided these arms and turned

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to his own, and

would prefer

has been willing

rather to lose

with

his own men than

them than to

conquer with the

forces of

others, not deeming

it a true

that a real

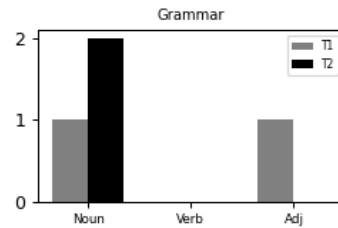
victory which is gained

by foreign arms. I

with the arms of others.

I shall

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



never hesitate to

cite

the example of

Cesare Borgia and his actions. This duke entered

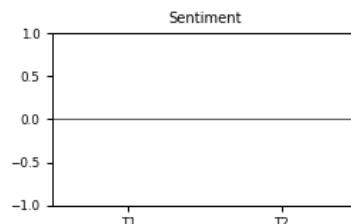
the

Romagna with

auxiliary troops, leading forces composed  
entirely of

auxiliaries, taking there only

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



French soldiers, and with

these he took

them he captured

Imola and Forli; but

as they

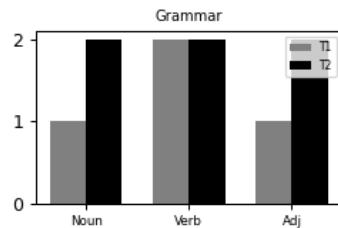
afterwards,

seemed unsafe, he had recourse

such forces not appearing to him reliable, he

turned

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



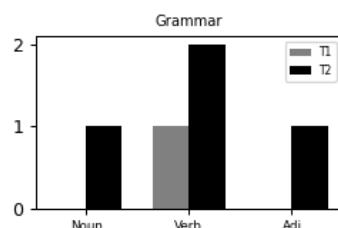
to mercenaries

, and hired

,

discerning less danger in them, and enlisted

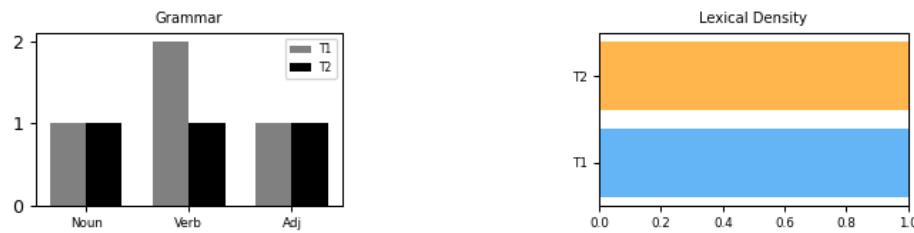
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the Orsini and  
Vitelli

; afterwards finding these uncertain to ;  
handle, whom presently, on handling and finding  
them doubtful,

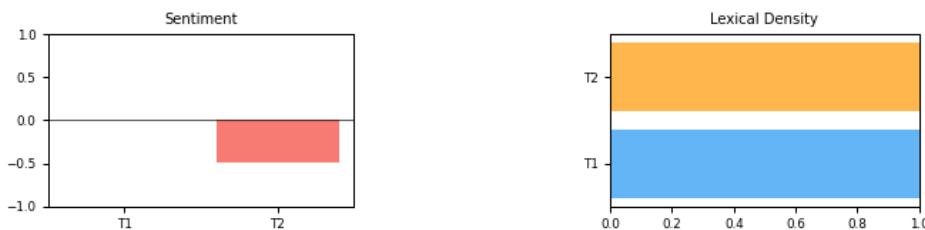
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



unfaithful and  
dangerous, he

suppressed them, and relied upon destroyed and turned to

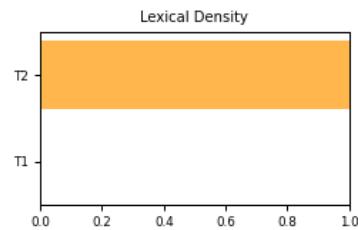
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



his own men. And the  
difference between

one and the other of

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



these forces can

be easily seen if

easily be seen when

one considers

the difference

between

there was in

the reputation of the duke when he had

only

the

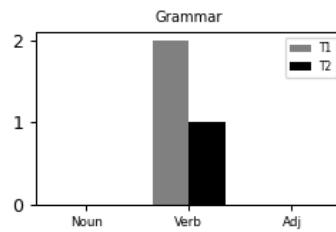
French, when he had the Orsini and Vitelli, and when he

had to rely

relied on

on himself and

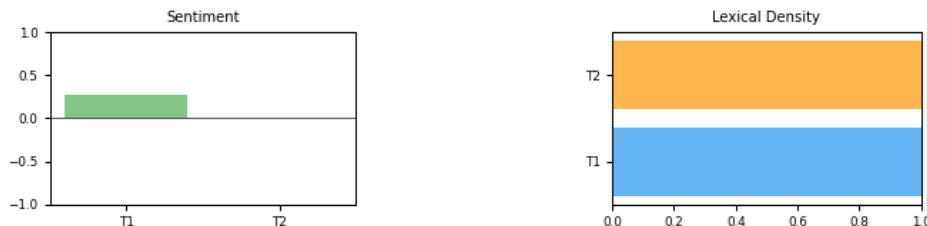
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



his own soldiers

. His reputation will be found to have , on whose fidelity he could always count  
constantly increased, and and  
found it ever increasing;

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



he was never

so highly esteemed as esteemed more highly than  
when  
every one saw that he was

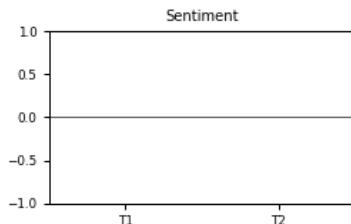
the sole complete  
master of his  
own  
forces.

I

do not wish was not intending  
to go

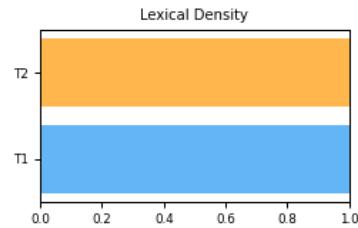
away from recent Italian instances, beyond Italian and recent examples,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



but I  
cannot am  
omit Hiero of Syracuse, whom unwilling to leave out Hiero, the Syracusan,  
he being one of those

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



I have

already mentioned. named above.

This man

being, ,

as I

have

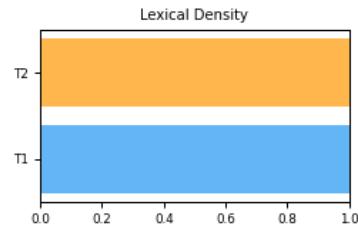
said, made head of the army by the Syracusans

, immediately , soon found out that a mercenary soldiery,

recognised the uselessness of that mercenary constituted

militia which was composed

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



like our Italian

mercenary troops, and as he thought it unsafe either to retain them or dismiss them,

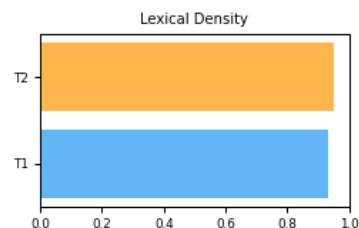
condottieri, was of no use; and it appearing

to him

that he could neither keep them nor let them

go,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



he had them

cut in

all cut to

pieces and

thenceforward

afterwards

made war with his own

arms forces

and not

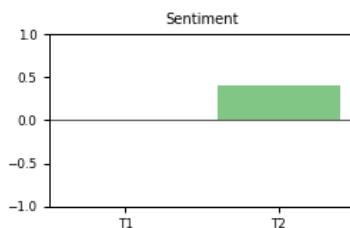
those of others. I with

would also call to mind a figure out of aliens.

I wish also to recall to memory an instance

from

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

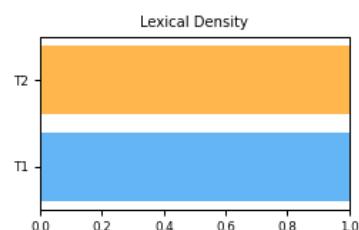
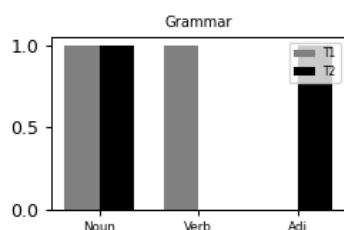


the Old Testament

which well applicable to this subject.

illustrates this point. When

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



David offered  
 himself  
 to Saul to  
 go and  
 fight with  
 Goliath,  
 the Philistine champion

Goliath, Saul, to encourage him, , and, to give him courage, Saul

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

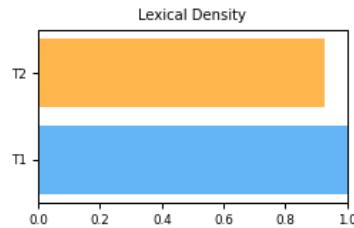


armed him  
 with his own  
 arms, which when David had tried on he  
 refused saying,  
 weapons; which David rejected as soon as he  
 had them

that with them

on his back, saying

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



he could

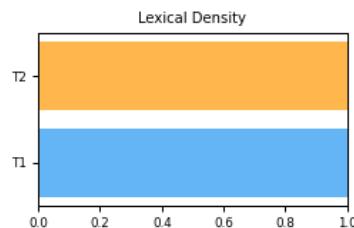
not fight so well; he preferred, therefore,

make no use of them, and that he wished to

to face

meet

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the enemy with his

own

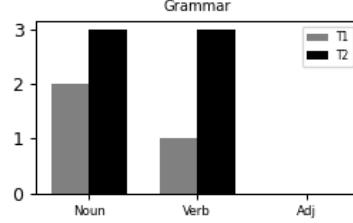
sling and

his

knife. In

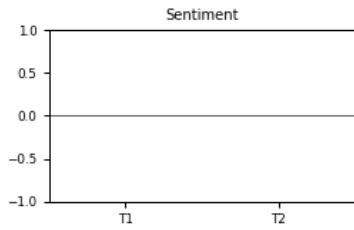
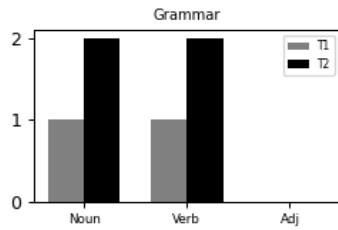
short, conclusion,  
 the arms of  
 others either fall  
 away from you, or overburden you, or else from your back, or they weigh you down, or  
 impede they bind  
 you. Charles VIII., you fast.  
 Charles the Seventh,[3] the

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



father of King Louis  
 XL, having through the Eleventh,[4]  
 having by

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



good

fortune and

## bravery

valour

liberated France from the English

, recognised this

1

recognized the

necessity of being armed with

forces of

his own

forces, and

, and he

established in his

## kingdom

a system of

## ordinances concerning

men-at-arms and infantry. Afterwards

his son,

King Louis

his son

,

abolished the infantry and began to

hire Swiss,

enlist the Switzers,

which mistake

being

,

followed by others is, as

may now be

is now

seen, a

cause of danger

source of peril

to

that kingdom

. For by giving such reputation to the Swiss,

; because, having raised

France has

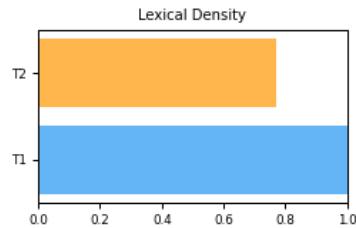
the reputation of the Switzers, he has entirely

disheartened all her own troops,

diminished the value of

his own arms, for he has destroyed

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the infantry

having been abolished and

altogether; and his

the

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

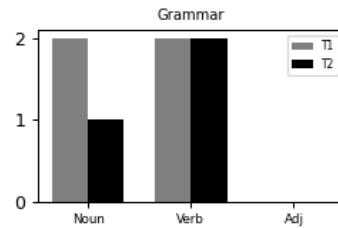


men-at-arms

being obliged to foreigners for assistance;

he has subordinated to others,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



for being

as they are so

accustomed to fight

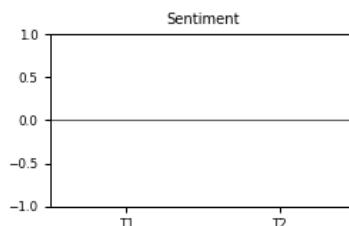
with Swiss troops, they think they cannot

along with Switzers, it does not appear that

they

can now

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



conquer

without them

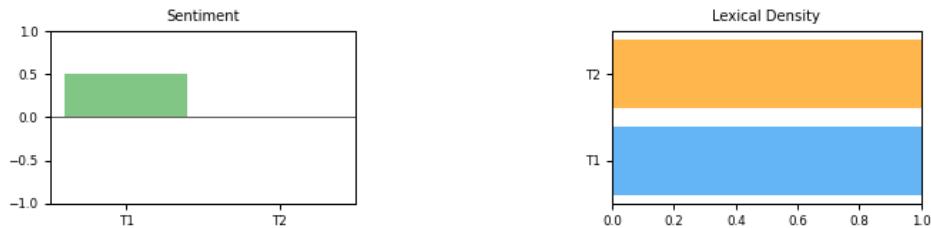
. Whence it comes

. Hence it arises

that the French

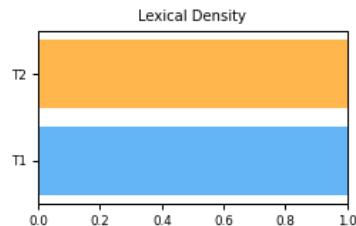
are insufficiently strong cannot  
to oppose the Swiss, stand against the Switzers,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



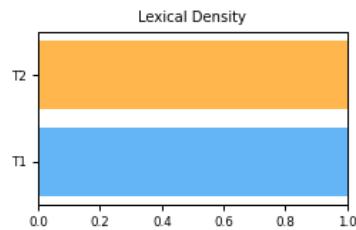
aid of the Swiss they will not  
venture and without the  
Switzers they do not come  
off well

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



against others. The armies of the French  
are thus of a mixed have thus become  
kind, mixed,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



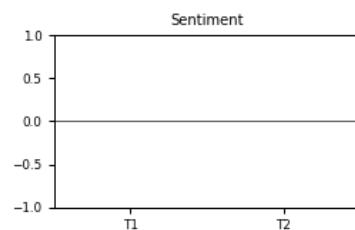
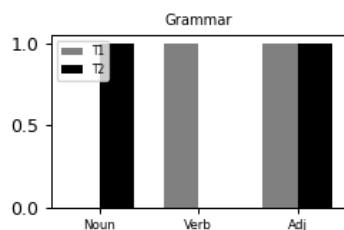
partly mercenary and partly

her own; taken together they

national, both of which arms

together

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



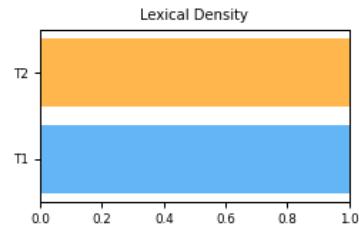
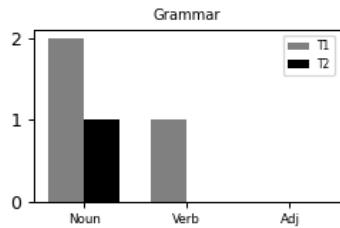
are much

better than

troops entirely composed of mercenaries

mercenaries alone

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



or auxiliaries

, alone,

but

much inferior to

national forces.

one's own forces. And this example proves

it, for

the kingdom of France would be

unconquerable if the ordinance of

Charles had been enlarged or maintained.

[3] Charles VII of France, surnamed "The

Victorious," born 1403, died

1461.

[4] Louis XI, son of the above, born 1423,

died 1483.

But the scanty wisdom of man, on entering

into an affair which looks

well at first, cannot discern the poison that is  
hidden in it, as I  
have said above of hectic fevers. Therefore,  
if he who rules a  
principality cannot recognize evils until they  
are upon him, he is not  
truly wise; and this insight is given to few.

And if the first disaster  
to the Roman Empire[5] should be examined,  
it will be found to have  
commenced only with the enlisting of the  
Goths; because from that time  
the vigour of the Roman Empire began to  
decline, and all that valour  
which had raised it passed away to others.

[5] “Many speakers to the House the other  
night in the debate on the  
reduction of armaments seemed to show a  
most lamentable ignorance of  
the conditions under which the British  
Empire maintains its existence.

When Mr Balfour replied to the allegations  
that the Roman Empire sank

under the weight of its military obligations,  
he said that this was  
'wholly unhistorical.' He might well have  
added that the Roman power  
was at its zenith when every citizen  
acknowledged his liability to  
fight for the State, but that it began to  
decline as soon as this  
obligation was no longer recognised."—

*\_Pall Mall Gazette\_, 15th May*  
1906.

I conclude, therefore, that no principality is  
secure without having  
its own forces; on the contrary, it is entirely  
dependent on good  
fortune, not having the valour which in  
adversity would defend it. And  
it has always been the opinion and judgment  
of wise men that nothing  
can be so uncertain or unstable as fame or  
power not founded on its own  
strength. And one's own forces are those  
which are composed either of

subjects, citizens, or dependents; all others  
 are mercenaries or  
 auxiliaries. And the way to make ready one's  
 own forces will be easily  
 found if the rules suggested by me shall be  
 reflected upon, and if one  
 will consider how Philip, the father of  
 Alexander the Great, and many  
 republics and princes have armed and  
 organized themselves, to which  
 rules I entirely commit myself.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



## CHAPTER XIV

WHAT THE DUTIES OF

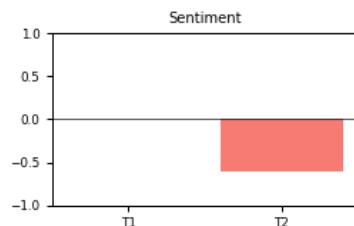
THAT WHICH CONCERNS

A PRINCE

ARE WITH REGARD TO THE MILITIA

ON THE SUBJECT OF THE ART OF WAR

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



A Prince

should therefore

ought to

have no other aim or thought, nor

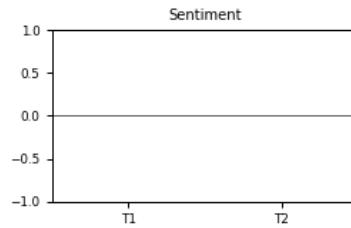
take up

select anything

any other thing

else

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



for his study

, but , than

war and its

order rules

and discipline,

for

that this

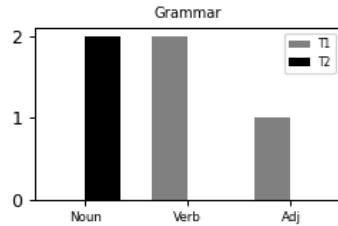
is the

only sole

art that

is necessary to one who commands, belongs to him who rules,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



and

it is of such

virtue

force

that it not only

maintains

upholds

those who are born

princes, but

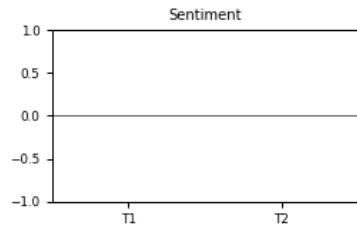
it

often enables men

of private fortune to attain

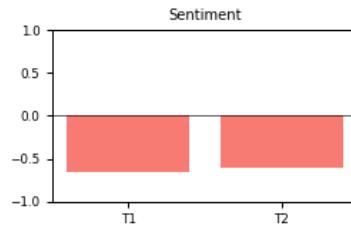
to rise from a private station

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



to that  
rank. And  
one sees,  
on the  
other hand,  
contrary, it is seen  
that when princes  
think  
have thought  
more of  
luxury  
ease  
than of arms, they  
lose their state. The chief cause which makes  
have lost their states. And the first cause of  
any one lose  
your losing

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



it, is

the contempt of

to neglect

this art, and

the way

what enables you

to acquire

it

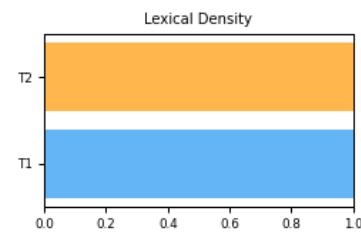
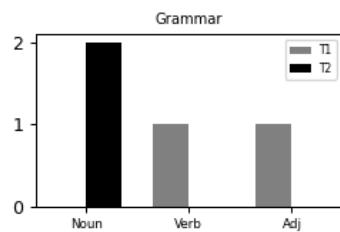
a state

is to be

well versed in the same.

master of the art.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



Francesco Sforza, through being

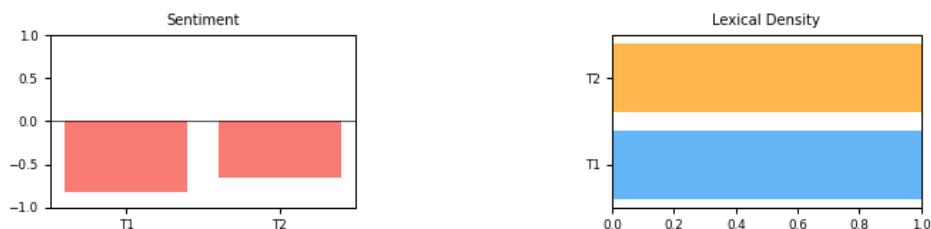
well armed, became, martial,  
from a private

position, person became  
Duke of Milan

; his ; and the  
sons,  
through

wishing to avoid the fatigue and hardship of avoiding  
war, the hardships and troubles of arms,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



from dukes  
became private persons. For among other evils

caused by being disarmed, which being unarmed brings you, it causes

it renders you contemptible; which you to be despised, and this

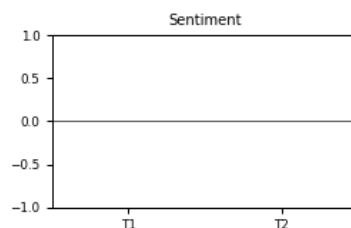
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



is one of those

must guard against, as will be explained later. ought to guard himself, as is shown later on.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

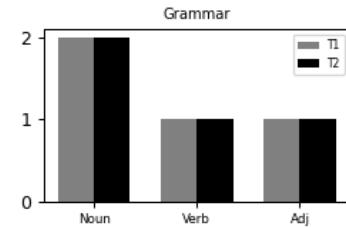
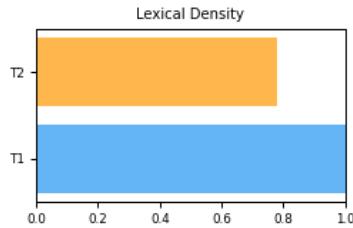


Because

there is

no comparison whatever between an armed nothing  
 man and a disarmed proportionate between the armed and the  
 one; unarmed; and

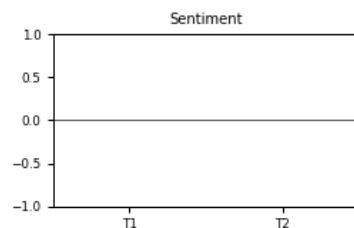
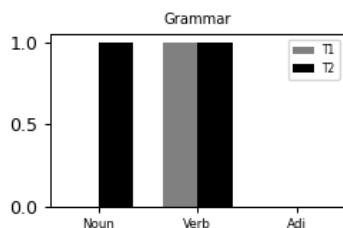
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



it is not reasonable  
 to suppose that one that he  
 who is armed

will obey should yield obedience willingly to him  
 willingly one

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



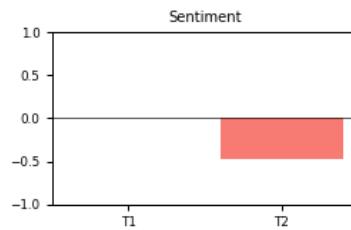
who is unarmed; or that

any the  
unarmed man

will remain should be secure  
safe  
among armed servants

. For one being disdainful and . Because, there being in the one disdain and  
in

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the other  
suspicious, suspicion,  
it is not possible for them to

act work  
well together. And

yet therefore  
 a prince who

is ignorant of military matters, besides does not understand the art of war, over and above

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

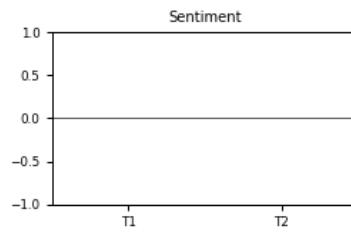


the other  
 misfortunes already mentioned, cannot be  
 esteemed respected  
 by his soldiers, nor

have confidence in can he rely on  
 them. He ought

, therefore, never to let never, therefore, to  
 have out of

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



his thoughts

stray from the exercise

this subject

of war; and in peace he

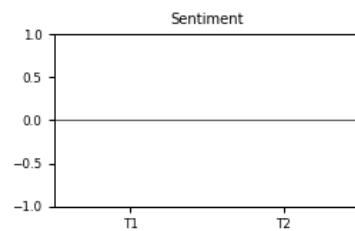
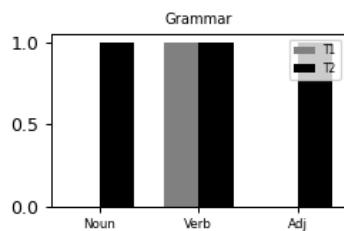
ought to practise it

should

more

addict himself more to its exercise

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



than in war

, which

; this

he can do in two ways

: both , the one  
by action

and , the other  
by  
study. As

to regards  
action, he

must, besides keeping ought above all things to keep

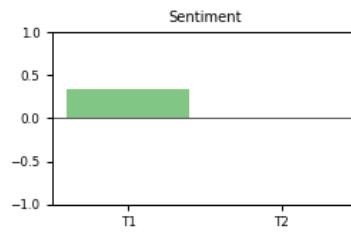
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



his men well

disciplined organized and drilled, to follow incessantly  
and exercised, engage continually in hunting, the chase, by which he  
and thus accustom accustoms

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



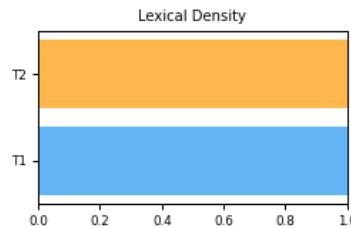
his

body to hardships; and

on the other hand learn

learns something of

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the nature of

the

localities, and gets to find out

land,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



how the mountains rise, how the valleys

are disposed, where

open out, how

the

plains lie, and

to

understand the nature of

the

rivers and

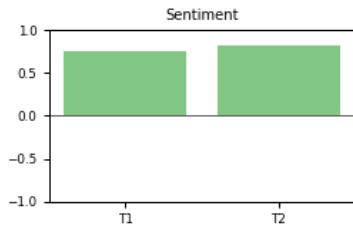
swamps, and

marshes, and in all this to take the greatest

to this he should devote great attention. This

care. Which

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



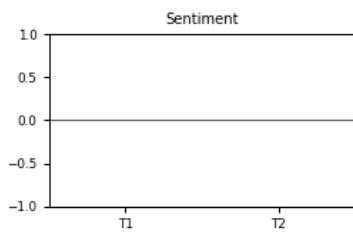
knowledge is useful in

two ways

. In the first place, one

. Firstly, he

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



learns to know

one's

his

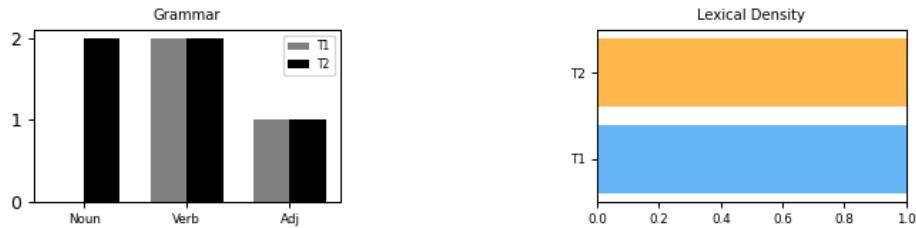
country, and

can the better see how to defend it. Then

is better able to undertake its defence;

afterwards,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



by means of the knowledge

and

experience gained in one locality, one can

observation of that locality, he understands

easily understand

with ease

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



any other

that

which

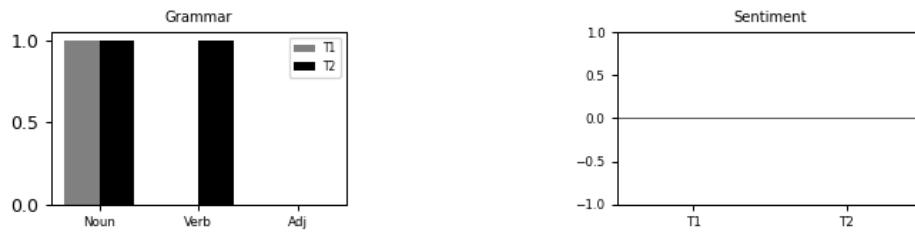
it may be necessary

to venture on, for

for him to study

hereafter; because

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the hills

and , valleys, and  
valleys,

plains and rivers

of Tuscany, and  
marshes that are,

for instance

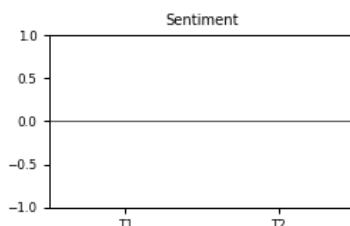
, in Tuscany,  
have a certain  
resemblance to those of other

provinces, countries,  
so that

from with  
a knowledge of  
the  
  
country in one province aspect of  
one country  
  
one can easily arrive at a knowledge of  
others. And

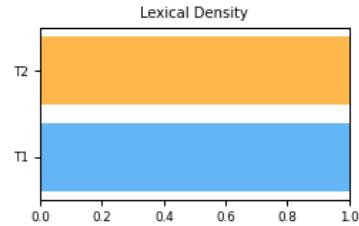
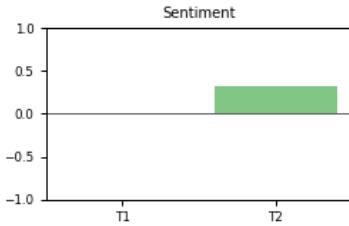
that prince who is lacking in the  
prince that lacks

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



this skill  
  
is wanting in the lacks the essential which it is desirable  
first essentials of a leader; that a captain should possess,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

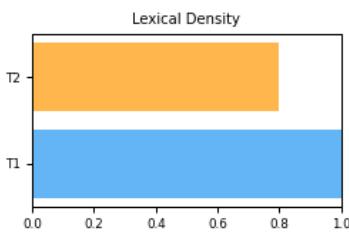


for it

is this which teaches how to find  
the enemy, take up quarters,

teaches him to surprise his  
enemy, to select quarters, to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



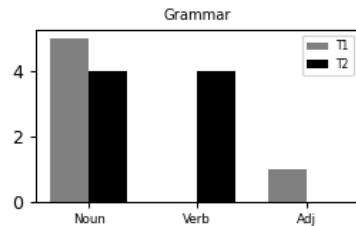
lead armies

, arrange marches and occupy  
positions with advantage. Philopœmen,

, to array the battle, to  
besiege towns to advantage.

Philopoemen,[1]

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



prince of the

Achæi,

Achaeans,

among other

praises

which

writers have

bestowed on him

by writers, is lauded

, is commended

because in

times

time

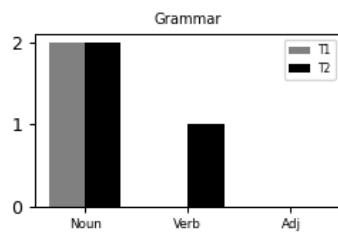
of peace

he

thought of nothing

never had anything in his mind

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



but the

methods of warfare, rules of war;

and when he was in

the country with

his

friends, he often stopped and

asked

reasoned with

them: If the

enemy

were on

should be upon

that hill and we

found

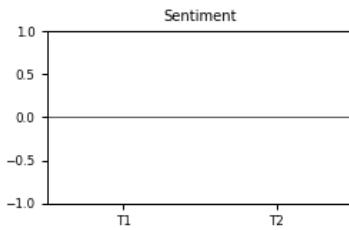
should find

ourselves here with our army

, with whom would be

which of us would have

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the advantage? How

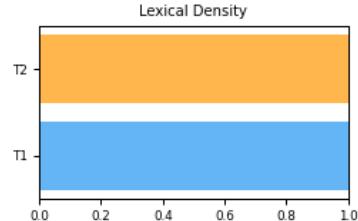
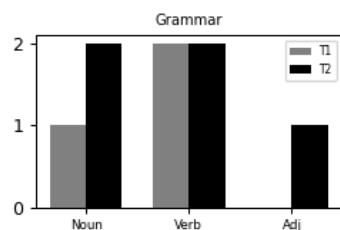
could we safely approach

should one best

him maintaining our order?

advance to meet him, keeping the ranks?

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



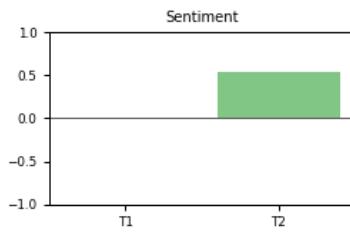
If we

wished to retire, what

should wish to retreat,

how

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



ought we to

do? If they retired, how should we follow  
them?pursue?"

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



And he

put beforewould set forth to

them

as

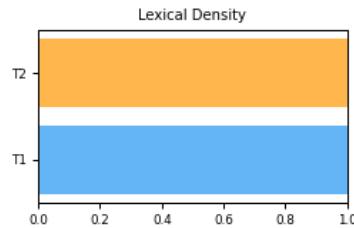
they went alonghe went,

all the

cases that might happen to

chances that could befall

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



an army

, heard

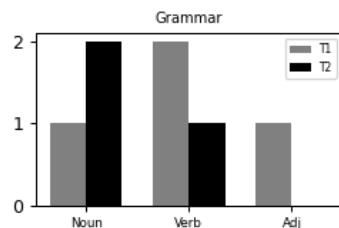
; he would listen to

their opinion

, gave his own, fortifying it by argument;

and state his, confirming it with reasons,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



so that

through

by these

these continued cogitations

continual discussions

there could never

happen any incident when

arise, in time of war, any

leading his armies for which he was not

unexpected circumstances that he could not

prepared. But as

deal with.

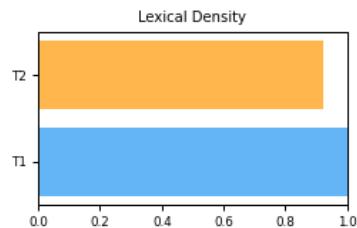
[1] Philopoemen, "the last of the Greeks,"

born 252 B.C., died 183

B.C.

But

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to exercise

for the mind,

the intellect

the prince

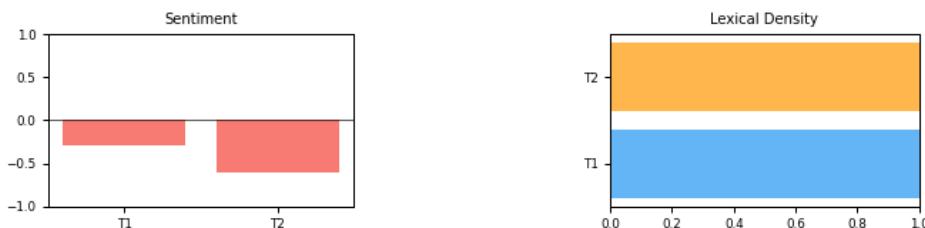
ought to read history

should read histories,

and study

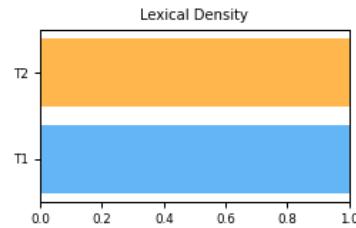
there  
 the actions  
 of  
 eminent men,  
 illustrious men, to  
 see how they  
 acted in warfare,  
 have borne  
 themselves in war, to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



examine the causes of  
 their victories and  
 losses in order to  
 defeat,  
 so as to avoid the latter and

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



imitate the former

and avoid the

;

latter,

and above all, do as

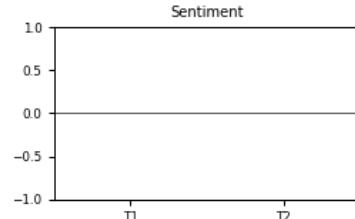
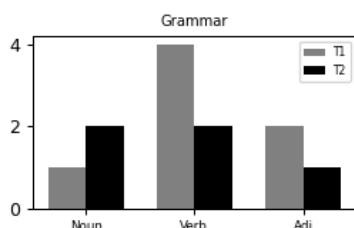
some eminent men have done in the past,

an illustrious man did, who took as an

who have imitated some

exemplar

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



one, who

has been much

had been

praised and

glorified,

famous before him, and whose achievements

and have

and deeds he

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



always kept

their deeds and actions before them, as they

in his mind, as it is said

say

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



Alexander the Great imitated Achilles

, Cæsar Alexander, and

, Caesar Alexander,

Scipio

Cyrus. And whoever reads the life of Cyrus written by Xenophon, will

perceive

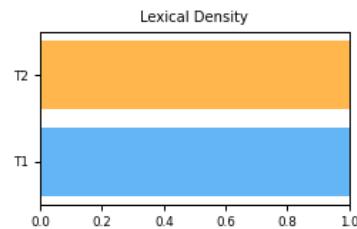
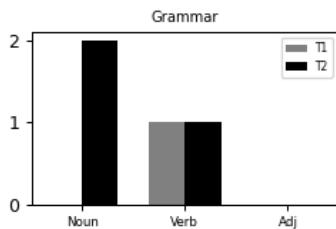
recognize afterwards

in the life of Scipio how

gloriously he imitated him,

that imitation was his glory,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



and how,

in chastity, affability, humanity, and liberality Scipio conformed to

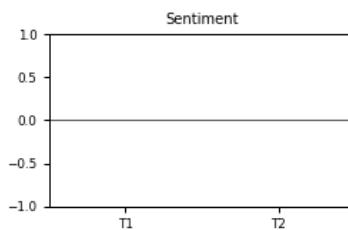
those

qualities

things

which have been written

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



of Cyrus

described

by Xenophon.

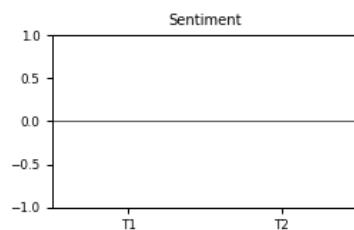
A wise prince

should follow similar methods

ought to

observe some such rules,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



and never

remain idle

in

peaceful times

, but by industry make such good use of the

stand idle, but

time as may

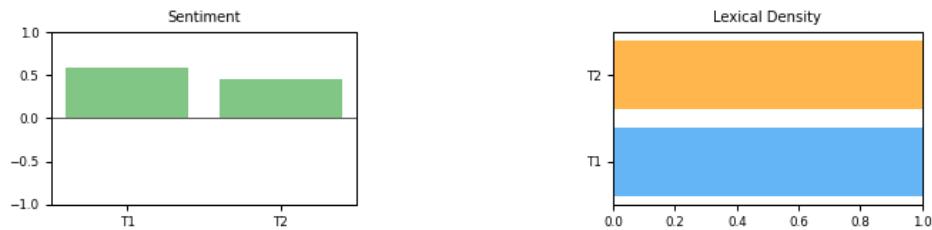
increase his resources with industry in such a

serve

way that they may be

available to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



him in adversity, so that

when fortune changes she

if fortune chances it

may find him

prepared to resist her blows

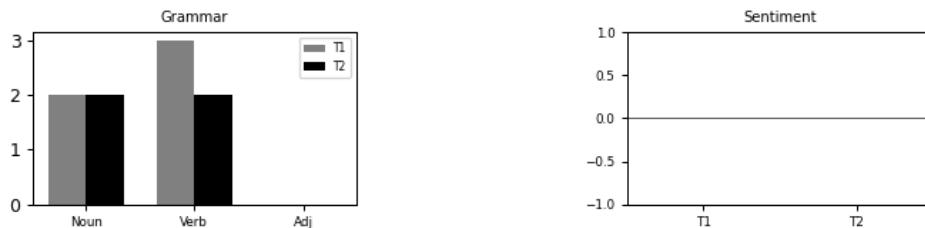
## CHAPTER XV

OF THE CONCERNING  
THINGS FOR WHICH MEN, AND ESPECIALLY PRINCES, ARE PRAISED OR  
BLAMED

It remains now to

be seen what are the methods and rules see what ought to be the rules of conduct

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



for a

prince

as regards his subjects towards subject

and friends. And as I know that many

have written

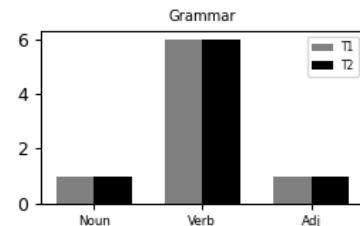
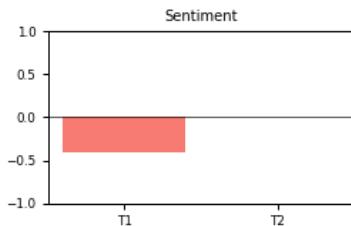
of this, I fear that my writing about it may be  
deemed

presumptuous, differing as I do, especially in  
this matter,

on this point, I expect I shall be considered  
presumptuous in

mentioning it again, especially as in  
discussing it I shall depart

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.

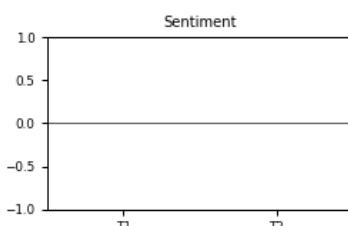


from the

opinions of others. But

methods of other people. But, it being

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



my intention

being

to write

something of use to

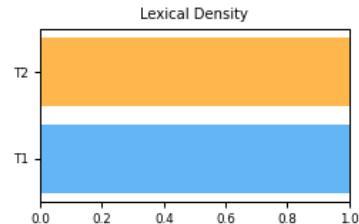
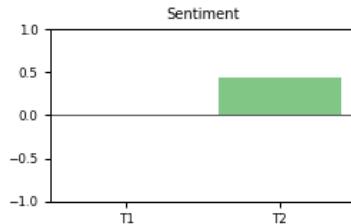
a

those who understand

thing which shall be useful to him who

apprehends

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



it, it appears to me more

proper to go to

appropriate to follow up

the real

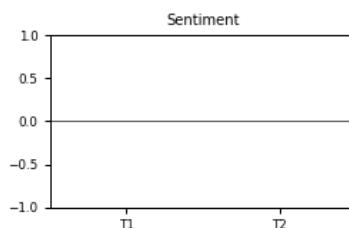
truth of the matter than

to its imagination; and

the

imagination of it; for

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



many have

imagined

pictured

republics and principalities which

in fact

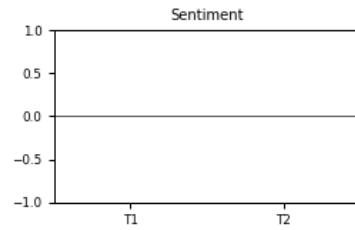
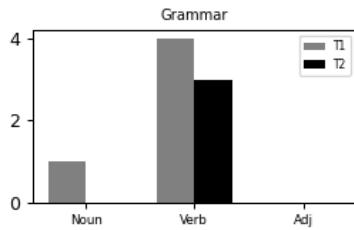
have never been

seen or known to

known or seen, because how one lives

exist in reality; for how we live

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



is so far

removed

distant

from how

we

one

ought

to live, that he who

abandons

neglects

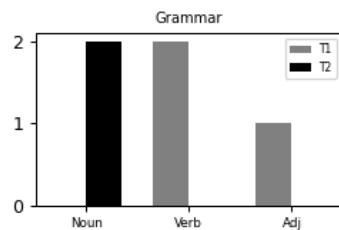
what is done for what ought to be done

,

, sooner effects his

will rather learn to bring about his own

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



ruin than his preservation

1

; for

A man who wishes to

make a profession of goodness in everything

act entirely up to his

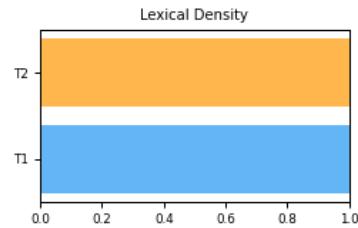
must

professions of virtue soon meets with what

necessarily come to grief

destroys him

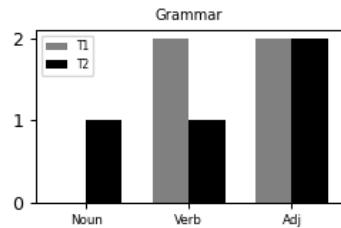
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



among so

many who are not good. Therefore much  
that is evil.  
Hence

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

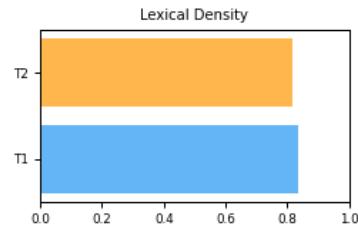


it

is necessary for a prince

, who wishes to maintain himself, to learn wishing to hold his own to know how  
how to do wrong,  
not to be good,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



and to

use it and not use it

make use of it or not

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



according to

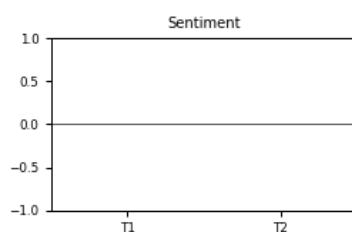
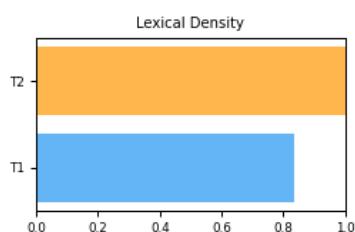
the necessity

necessity.

of the case. Leaving

Therefore, putting

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

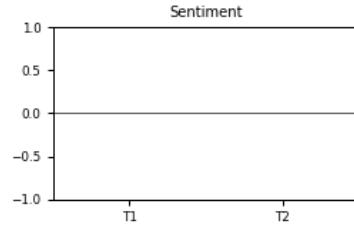
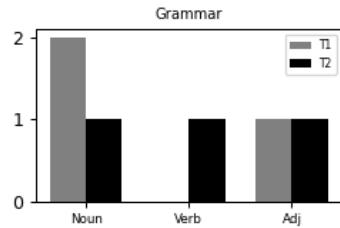


on one side

then those things which concern only  
an imaginary

imaginary things concerning a

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



prince, and

speaking of those that

discussing those which

are real, I

state

say

that

all men, when

they are

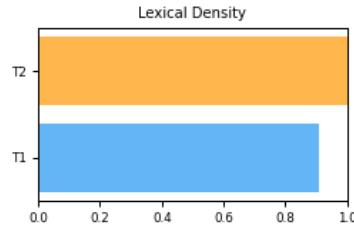
spoken of, and

especially princes, who are placed at

chiefly princes for being more highly placed,

a greater height, are noted are  
remarkable

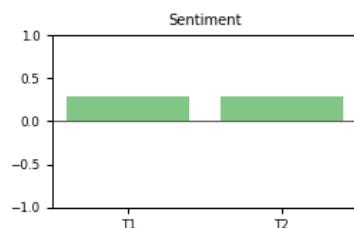
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



for some of those qualities which bring  
them either

praise or blame. Thus blame or  
praise; and thus it is that

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

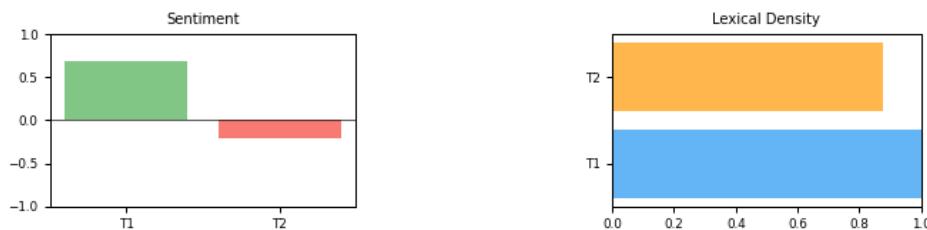


one is

considered reputed  
liberal, another  
miserly

; one a free giver, another ,  
 using a Tuscan term (because an avaricious  
 person in our language is  
 still he who desires to possess by robbery,  
 whilst we call one miserly  
 who deprives himself too much of the use of  
 his own); one is reputed  
 generous, one

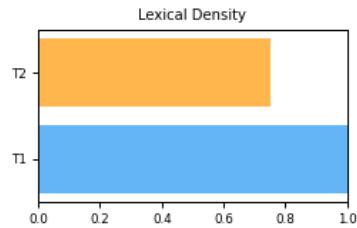
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



rapacious; one cruel

, another , one compassionate; one faithless,  
 merciful; one a breaker of his word,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



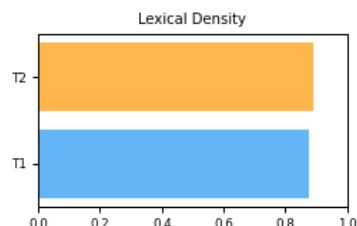
another faithful; one effeminate

and

pusillanimous, another fierce and high-spirited; one humane, another proud;

cowardly, another bold and brave; one affable, another haughty;

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



one lascivious, another chaste; one

frank, another astute;

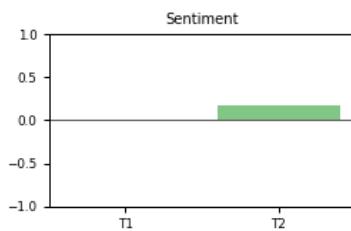
sincere, another cunning;

one hard, another easy; one

serious,  
grave,  
another frivolous; one  
religious, another

incredulous, and so on. unbelieving, and the like. And

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



I know that every one will

admit confess

that it would be

highly most

praiseworthy in a prince to

possess exhibit

all

the above

-named

qualities that are

reputed

considered

good, but

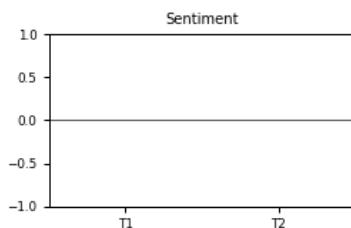
as they cannot all

because they can neither be entirely

be possessed or observed,

possessed nor observed, for

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



human conditions

not permitting of

do not permit

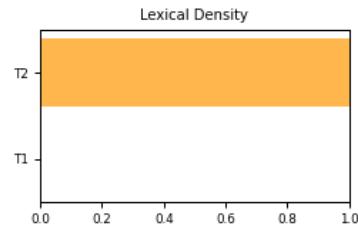
it, it is

necessary

for him to be sufficiently

prudent

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



that he

should be prudent enough

may know how

to avoid the

disgrace

reproach

of

those vices which would lose him

the

his

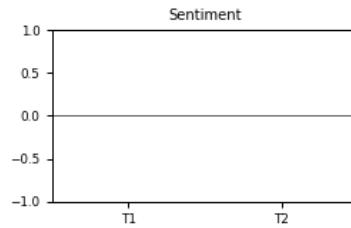
state, and

guard himself against

also to keep himself, if it be possible,

from

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



those which

will

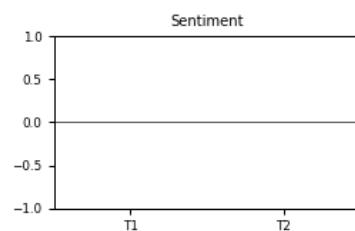
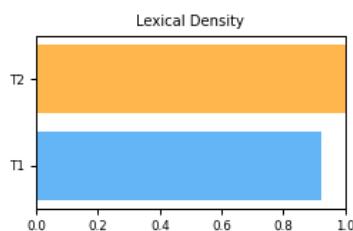
would

not lose

it him, if possible, but if not able to, he  
can indulge them

him it; but this not being possible, he  
may

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



with less

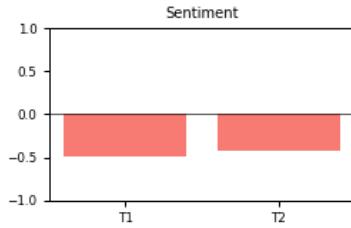
scruple. And yet he must not mind incurring  
the disgrace of

hesitation abandon himself to them. And  
again, he need

not make himself uneasy at incurring a

reproach for

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



those vices, without which

it would be difficult to

save

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

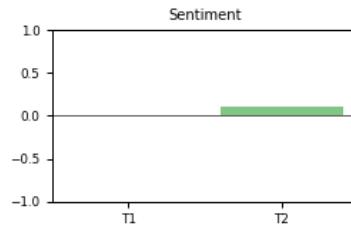


the state

,

can only be saved with difficulty,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

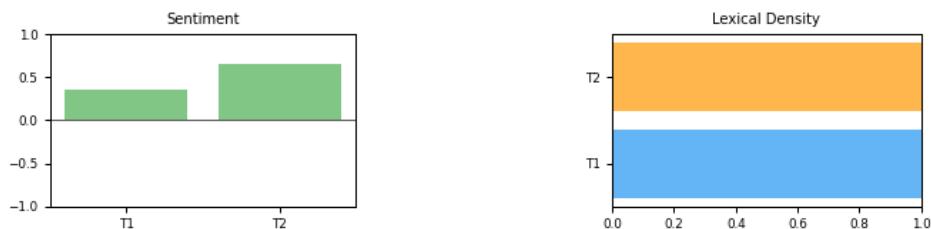


for if

one considers well, everything is  
considered carefully,  
it will be found that

some something which looks like  
things which seem virtues would, virtue,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



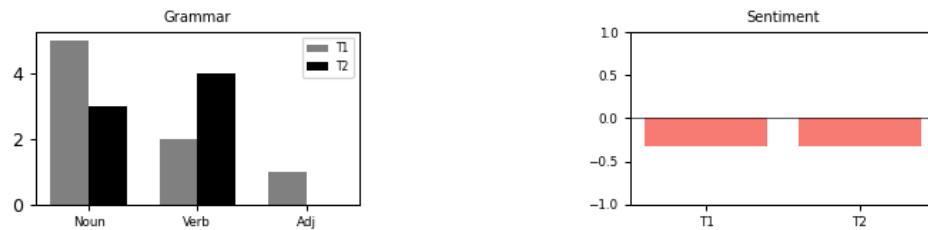
if followed

, lead to one's ruin, and , would be his ruin; whilst something else,  
some others which appear vices result, if which

followed, in one's greater

looks like vice, yet followed brings him

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



security and

well being.

prosperity.

## CHAPTER XVI

OF

CONCERNING

LIBERALITY AND

NIGGARDLINESS

MEANNESS

Beginning now

Commencing then

with the first

qualities

of the

above named

,

characteristics,

I say that it

would be well to be

considered

reputed

liberal; nevertheless liberality

used

exercised in

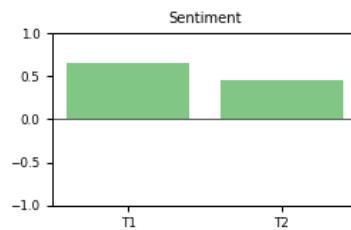
in such

a way that

you are not feared will injure you, because if  
used virtuously and in the proper way, it will  
not be

does not bring you the reputation  
for it, injures you; for if one exercises it  
honestly and as it should  
be exercised, it may not become

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.

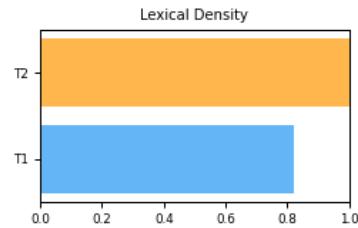


known, and you  
will not

incur the disgrace of the contrary vice. But  
one who wishes  
to obtain the reputation of liberality

avoid the  
reproach of its opposite. Therefore, any one  
wishing to maintain

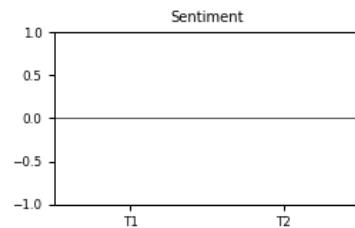
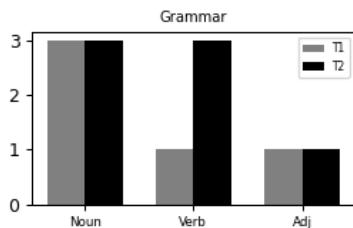
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



among men

, must not omit every kind of sumptuous display, and to such an extent the name of liberal is obliged to avoid no attribute of magnificence; so

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



that a prince

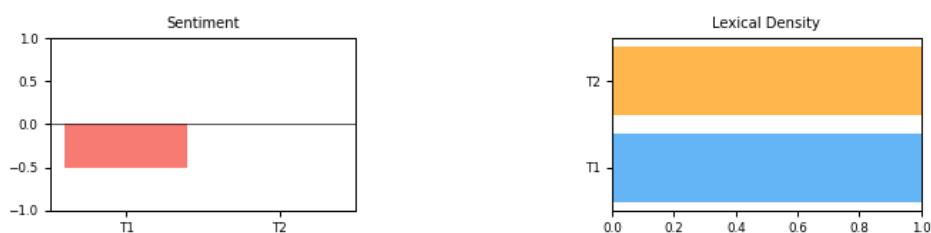
of this character thus inclined

will consume

by such means in such acts  
all his

resources, property,  
 and will be  
 at last compelled, compelled in the end,  
 if he  
 wishes wish  
 to maintain  
 his name for liberality, the name of liberal, to unduly weigh down  
 to impose heavy charges on

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



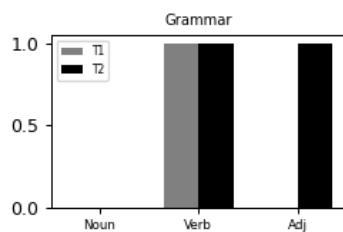
his people  
 , become an extortioner, , and tax  
 them,

and do  
 everything

possible to obtain he can to get  
money. This will

make soon make him  
odious to

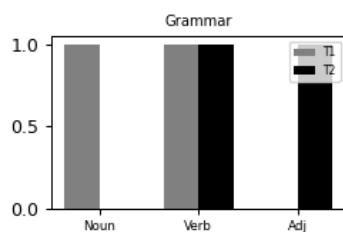
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



his subjects

begin , and becoming poor  
to hate him and

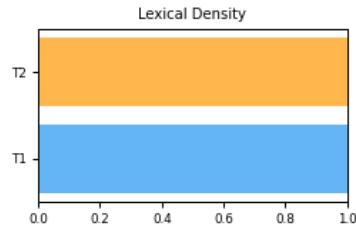
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



he will be little

esteemed being poor, so that having valued by  
by this liberality injured any one; thus, with his liberality, having  
offended

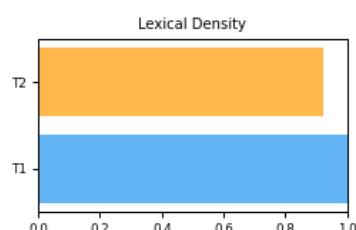
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



many and  
benefited but rewarded  
few, he

will feel is affected by the very first trouble and  
imperilled by  
whatever may be

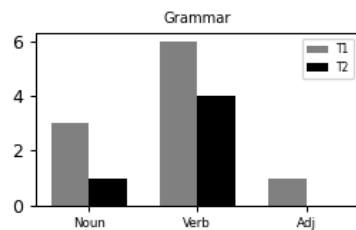
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the first

little disturbance and be endangered by every accident. If he recognises this and wishes to change his system, he incurs danger; recognizing this himself, and wishing to draw back from it, he runs

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

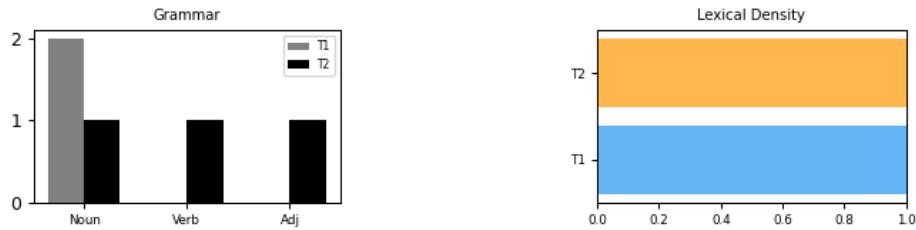


at once

the charge of niggardliness; into the reproach of being miserly.

Therefore,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



a prince

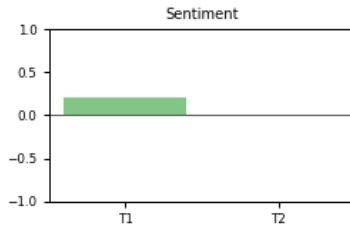
, therefore, ,

not being able to

exercise this virtue of liberality

without risk if in such a way that

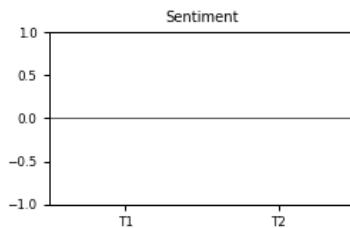
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



it is

known, must recognized, except to his cost,  
not,

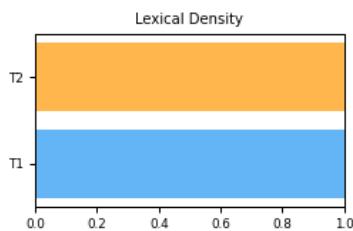
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



if he is

prudent, object to be called miserly. In course wise he ought not to fear the reputation of  
of being mean, for in

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



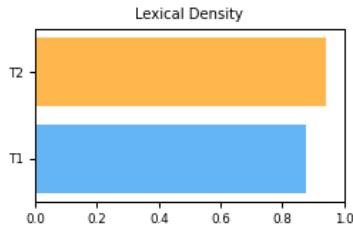
time

he will

be thought more liberal, when it is seen that come to be more considered than if liberal,  
by his parsimony seeing that

his revenue is sufficient, with his economy his revenues are enough,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



that he can defend himself against

those all attacks, and is able to engage in  
who make war on him, and undertake

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



enterprises without burdening his  
people

, so ; thus it comes to pass

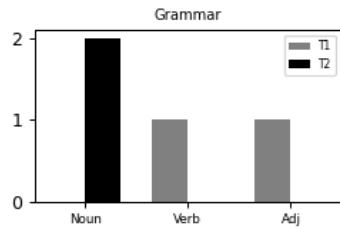
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



that he

is really liberal to all those exercises  
liberality towards all

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



from whom he does not

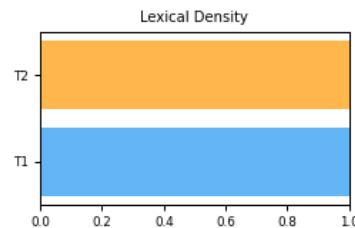
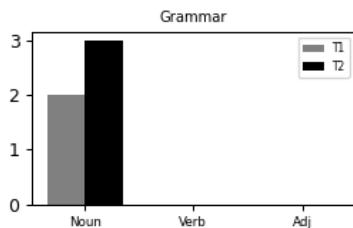
take, who are

infinite in number, and niggardly to all

numberless,

and meanness towards those

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

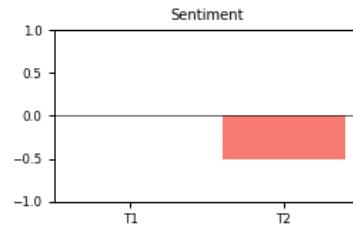


to whom he does

not give, who are few

We have not seen great things done

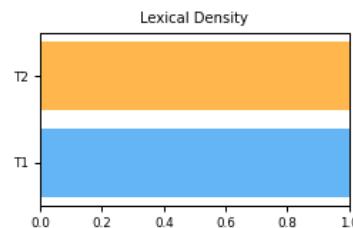
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



In our

times we have seen nothing great done time

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

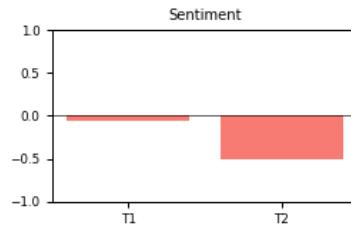


except by those who have

been

esteemed niggardly; the others have all been considered mean; the rest have failed.  
ruined.

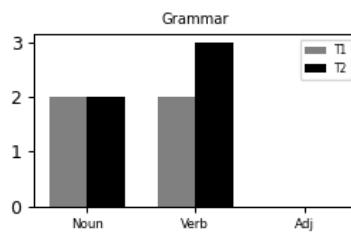
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



Pope Julius

II., although he had made use of  
the Second was  
assisted in reaching the papacy by

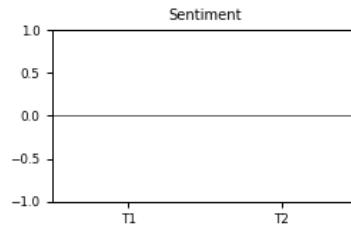
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



a reputation for liberality

in order , yet he  
to attain the papacy,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

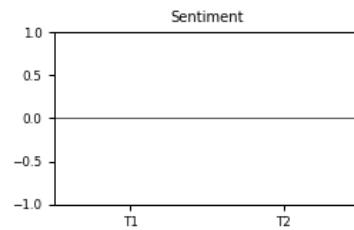
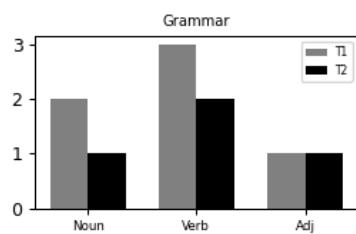


did not

seek to retain it afterwards, so that  
he might be able to make

strive afterwards to keep it up, when he made

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



war on the King of France, and he

earned on

made

so

many wars without imposing

an

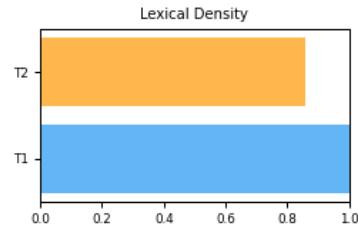
any

extraordinary tax

, because his extra expenses were covered by the parsimony he had so long practised.

on his subjects, for he supplied his additional expenses out of his long thriftiness.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

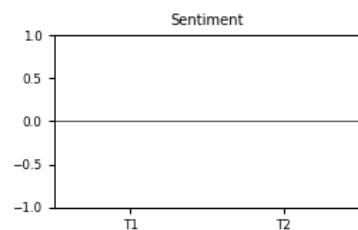


The  
present King of Spain

,

would not have undertaken  
or conquered in so many enterprises

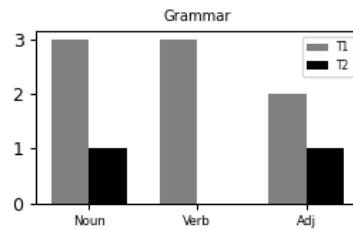
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



if he had been

thought liberal, would not have  
engaged in and won so many enterprises. For  
these reasons

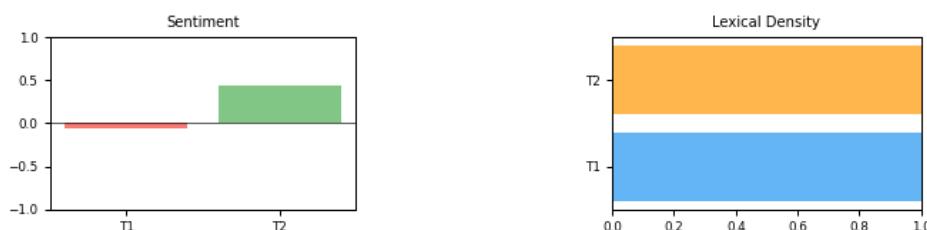
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



a prince

must , therefore, provided that he has not to rob  
care little for the reputation of being a miser,  
if he wishes to avoid  
robbing

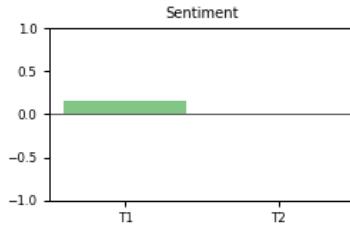
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



his subjects

, if he wishes to be able to , that  
he can

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

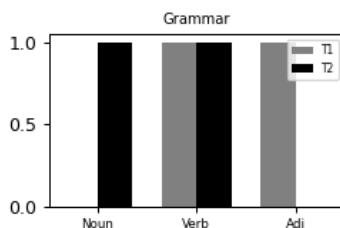


defend himself

, to , that he does  
not  
become poor and

contemptible, and not to be abject, that he  
is not

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



forced to become rapacious

; , ought to hold of little account a  
this vice of niggardliness reputation for being mean, for it

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



is one of those vices which

will

enable him to

reign. If it is said that Cæsar attained the govern.  
empire through And if any one should say: Caesar obtained

empire by

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



liberality,

and

that

many others have reached the highest positions

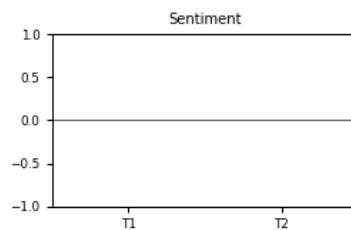
through being

by having been liberal,

liberal or being thought

and by being considered

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



so, I

would reply that

answer: Either

you are

either

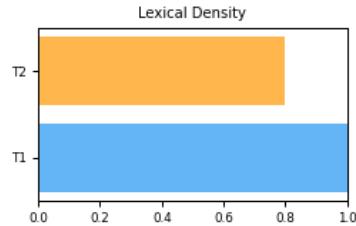
a prince

already or else on the

in fact,

or in a

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



way to become one. In the first case, this

liberality is

harmful;

dangerous,

in the second, it is

certainly

very

necessary to be

considered liberal, and

Cæsar

Caesar

was one of those who wished to

attain the

become pre-eminent in

mastery over

Rome, but if

after attaining it

he had

lived

survived after becoming so,

and had not

moderated his expenses, he would have destroyed

that empire. And should

his government. And if

any one

reply that there

should

reply: Many

have been

many princes, who

princes, and

have done great

things with

their

armies, who have been

thought extremely

considered very

liberal, I

would answer by saying that the prince may  
either spend

reply: Either a prince spends  
that which is

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



his own

wealth or

and that of

his subjects or

the wealth else that

of others. In the first case

he

must ought to

be sparing

, but ,

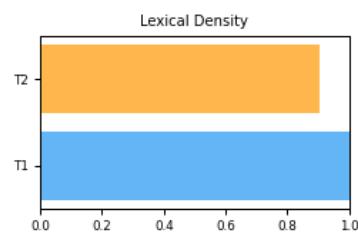
in the second he

must not neglect to be very  
liberal.

ought not to  
neglect any opportunity for liberality. And to  
the prince who goes  
forth with his army, supporting it by pillage,  
sack, and extortion,

handling that which belongs to others,

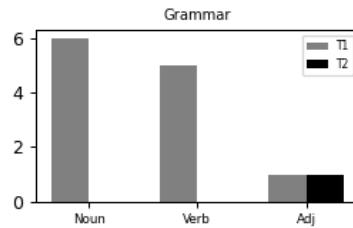
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



This liberality is

very necessary to a prince who marches with  
his armies, and lives by plunder, sacking and  
extorting, and is dealing  
with the wealth of others, for without it  
necessary,  
otherwise

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



he would not be followed

by

his

soldiers. And

you may be very generous indeed with what

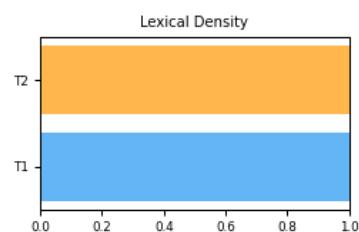
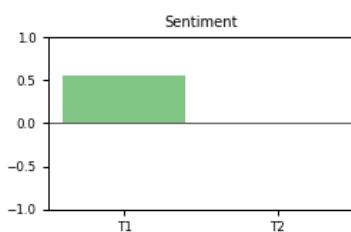
of that which is

is

neither yours nor

not the property of yourself or

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

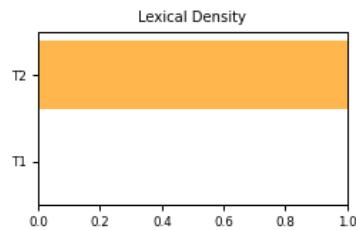


your subjects

,

' you can be a ready giver,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



as were Cyrus

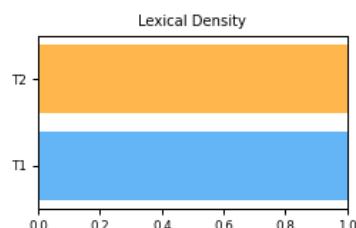
, Cæsar,

and Alexander

; for spending the wealth

; because it does not take away your  
reputation if you squander that

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of others

will not diminish

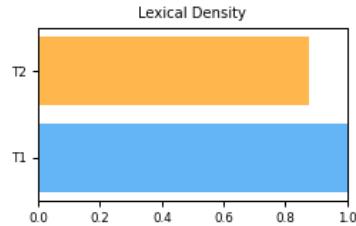
, but adds to it; it is only

your reputation, but increase it, only

squandering

spending

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



your own

resources

that injures you.

will injure you.

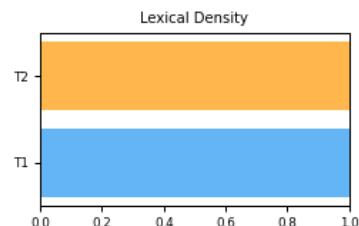
And

There is nothing

which destroys itself so much

wastes so rapidly

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



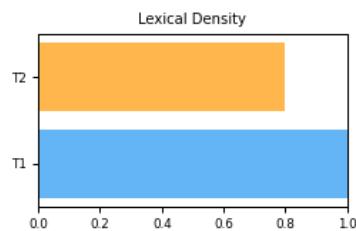
as

liberality, for

by using even whilst  
you exercise  
it you lose the power

of using it, and to do so, and so

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

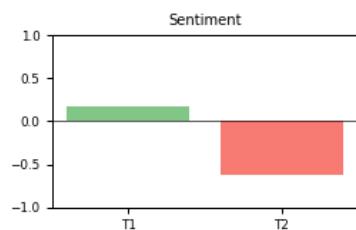


become

either poor

and despicable, or, to escape or despised, or else, in avoiding

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



poverty, rapacious and hated.

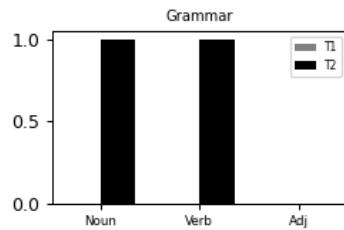
And

of

a

prince should guard himself, above

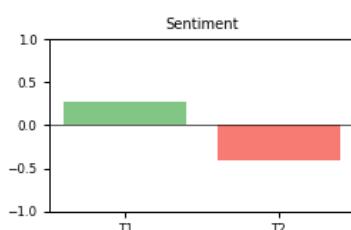
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



all things

that a prince must guard against, the most important, against being despised and are being despicable or

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



hated, and liberality

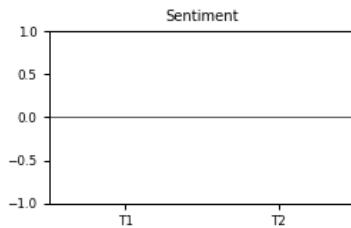
will lead

leads

you to

one or both. Therefore  
other of these conditions.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



It is

, therefore,

wiser to have

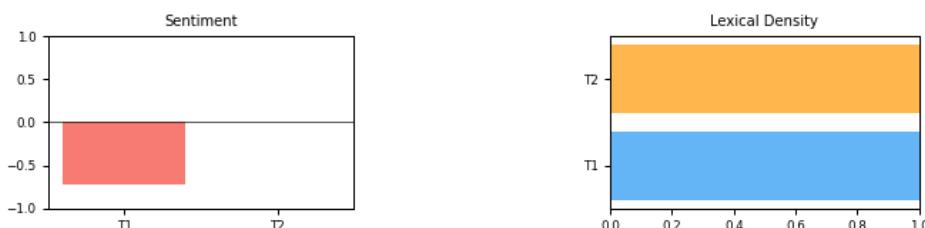
the name

a reputation for meanness which brings

of a miser, which produces disgrace

reproach

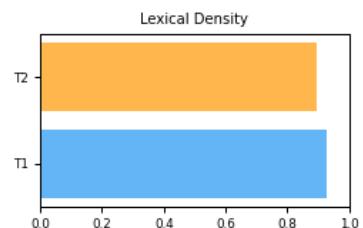
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



without hatred, than to

incur of necessity the name of being rapacious, which produces both disgrace and hatred. be compelled through seeking a reputation for liberality to incur a name for rapacity which begets reproach with hatred.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



## CHAPTER XVII

OF CONCERNING

CRUELTY AND CLEMENCY, AND WHETHER IT IS BETTER TO BE LOVED

OR FEARED THAN FEARED

Proceeding Coming now

to the other qualities

before named, mentioned above,

I say that every prince

must ought to

desire to be considered

merciful clement

and not cruel

. He must, however, .

Nevertheless he ought to

take care not to misuse this

mercifulness.

clemency.

Cesare Borgia was considered

cruel

, but

; notwithstanding,

his cruelty

had settled

reconciled

the Romagna

, united

, unified

it, and

brought

restored it to

it

peace and

confidence.

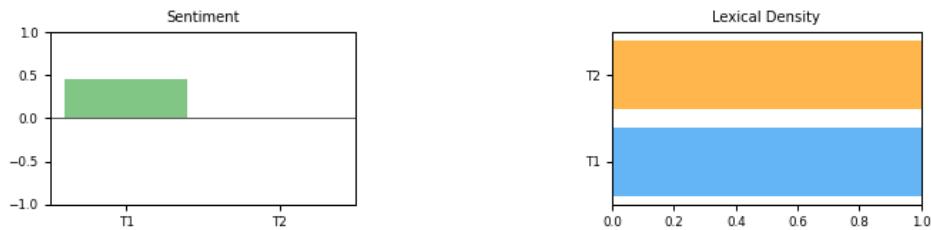
loyalty. And

If this

is considered a benefit, it

be rightly considered, he

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



will be

seen

that he was really

to have been

much more merciful than the Florentine people,

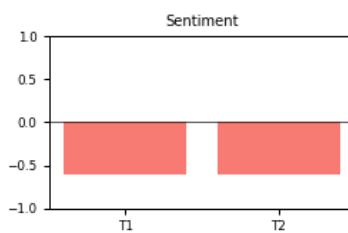
who, to avoid

the name of cruelty, allowed

a reputation for

cruelty, permitted

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



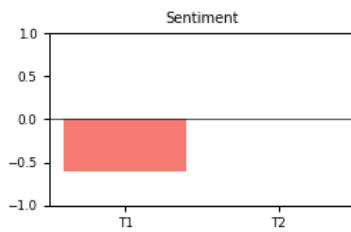
Pistoia to be destroyed

. [1] Therefore

A  
prince

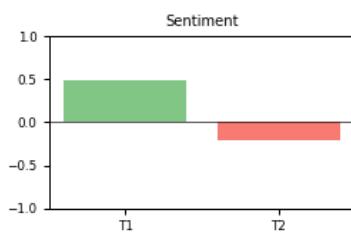
, therefore, must not mind incurring the , so  
charge of cruelty for long as he keeps  
the purpose of keeping

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



his subjects united and  
confident; for, loyal, ought not to mind the  
reproach of cruelty; because

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



with a

very

few examples, he will be more merciful than those who

, from excess  
of tenderness,

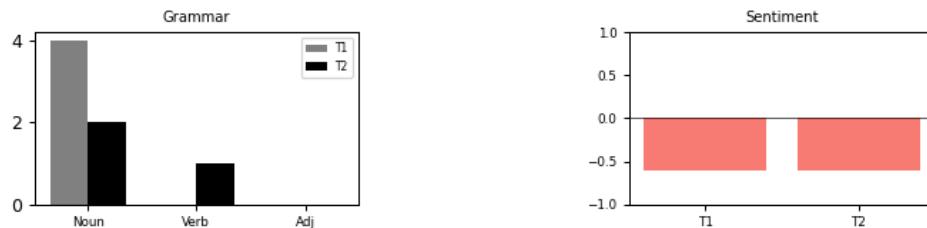
, through too much mercy,

allow disorders to arise, from

whence spring murders  
and rapine;

which follow murders or robberies;

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



for these

as a rule

are wont to

injure the whole

community, while the  
executions carried out by the prince injure

people, whilst those executions which  
originate with a

only one individual.

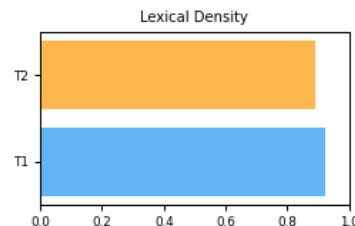
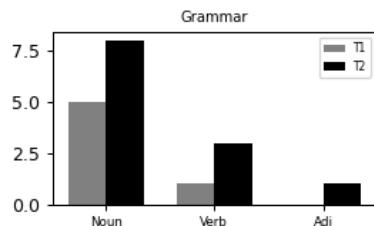
prince offend the individual only.

[1] During the rioting between the

Cancellieri and Panciatichi

factions in 1502 and 1503.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



And of

all princes, it is impossible for

a

the

new prince to

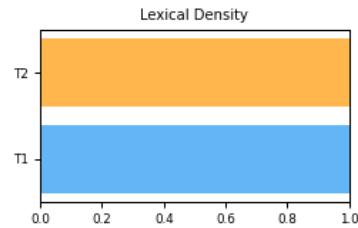
escape the name of

avoid the

cruel,

imputation of cruelty, owing to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



new states being

always

full of dangers

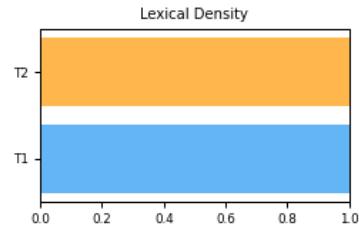
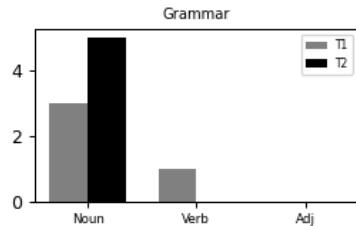
. Wherefore Virgil makes

. Hence

Dido excuse

Virgil, through the mouth of Dido, excuses

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the inhumanity of her

rule by

reign

owing to

its being new

, where she says: , saying:

“

Res dura, et regni novitas me talia cogunt

Moliri, et late fines custode tueri

.”[2]

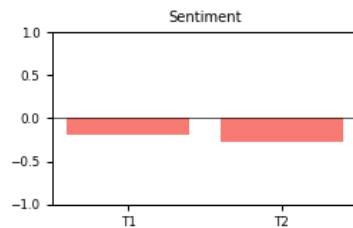
Nevertheless, he

must be cautious in believing and acting, and ought to be slow to believe and to act, nor

must should he

not inspire fear of his own accord, and must himself show fear, but

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



proceed in a temperate

manner with prudence and humanity, so that too much confidence

does may not make

not render

him incautious, and too much

diffidence does not

## distrust

render him

intolerant.

intolerable.

From this arises the question

[2] . . . against my will, my fate

A throne unsettled, and an infant state,

Bid me defend my realms with all my

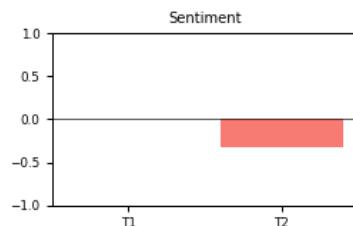
pow'rs,

And guard with these severities my shores.

Christopher Pitt.

Upon this a question arises:

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



whether it

is

be

# better to be loved

more

than feared, or feared

more

than loved

. The reply is,

? It may be answered

that one

ought

should wish

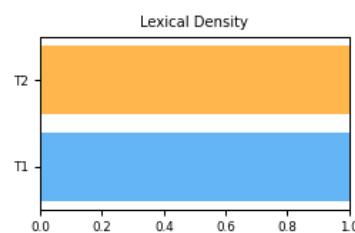
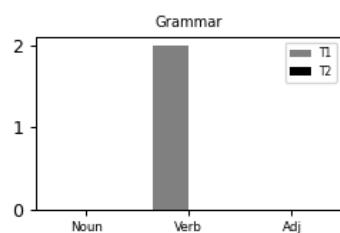
to

be both

feared and loved, but as

, but, because

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

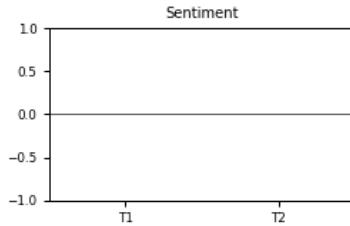


it is difficult

for the two to go  
together,

to unite them in one person,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



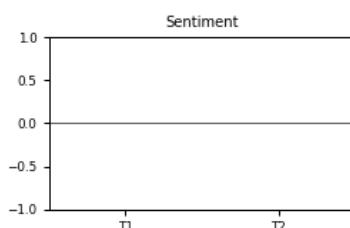
it is much safer to be feared than loved

, if one , when,

of the two

has , either must be  
dispensed with. Because this is

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



to be

wanting. For it may be said

asserted in general

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



of men

in general

,

that they are

ungrateful

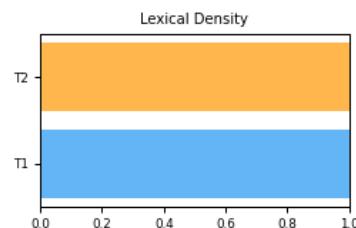
, voluble, dissemblers, anxious to avoid

, fickle, false, cowardly, covetous, and

danger, and covetous

of gain;

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



as long as you

benefit them, succeed

they are

entirely yours; they yours entirely; they will

offer you their blood

, their goods, their ,

property,

life, and

their

children, as

I have before said, is said above,

when the

necessity is remote; need is far

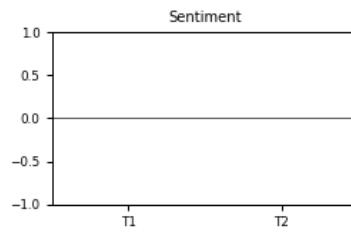
distant;

but when it

approaches, they

revolt. And the turn against you. And that

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

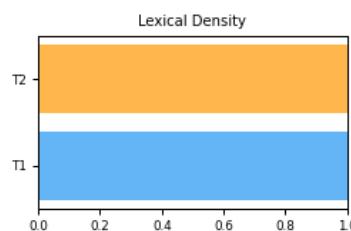


prince who

has relied solely , relying entirely  
on their

words, without making other preparations, promises, has neglected other  
precautions,

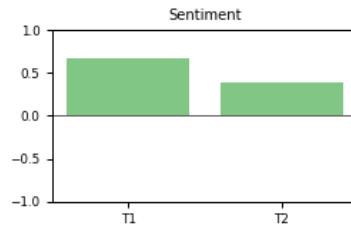
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



is ruined

, for the friendship ; because friendships that are obtained by  
which is gained by purchase payments,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



and not

through grandeur and

by greatness or

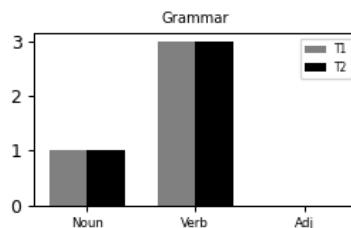
nobility of

spirit is merited but is

mind, may indeed be

earned, but they are

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



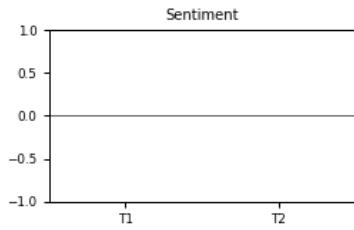
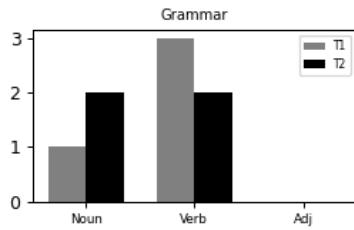
not secured, and

at times is not to be had.

in time of need cannot be relied

upon;

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



And men have less scruple in offending one who

than

one who

makes himself is

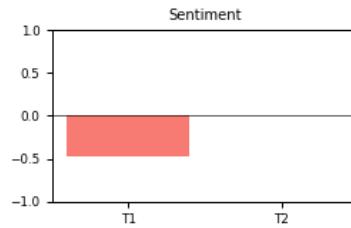
feared; for love is

of obligation

which

, men being selfish, , owing to the baseness of men,

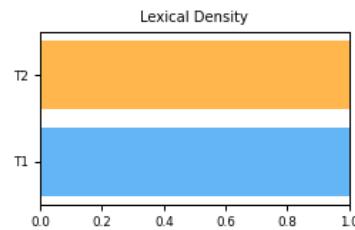
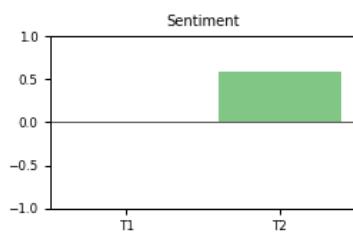
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



is broken

whenever it serves their purpose;  
at every opportunity for  
their advantage;

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

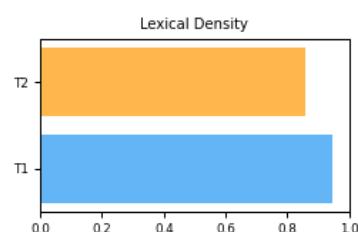


but fear

is maintained  
by a dread of punishment which never fails

Still,  
a prince  
Nevertheless

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



abstains from

interfering with

the property of his citizens and

subjects

or with

and from

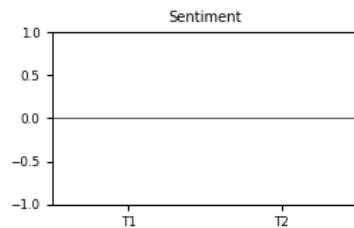
their women

. And when he is obliged to take

. But when it is necessary for him to proceed

against

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



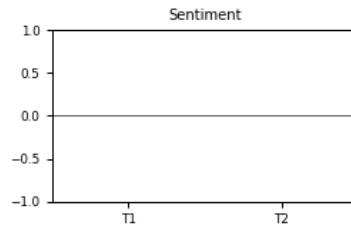
the life

of

any one, to do so when there is a

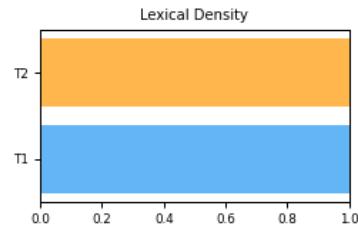
someone, he must do it on

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



proper justification and  
 manifest for manifest cause,  
 reason for it;  
 but above all  
 things  
 he must  
 abstain from taking keep his hands off  
 the property  
 of others  
 , for men forget more easily ,  
 because men more quickly forget

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the death of their father than  
the loss of their patrimony

. Then also . Besides,  
pretexts for  
  
seizing taking away the  
property  
are never wanting  
  
, and one who begins ; for he who has once begun

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



to live by

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



for

taking life

are rarer and more quickly destroyed. , on the contrary, are more difficult to find and sooner lapse.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



But when

the

a

prince

is with his army and has

a large number

under control a

multitude

of soldiers

under his control,

,

then it is

extremely necessary that he should not mind

quite necessary for him to disregard

being thought

the reputation of cruelty,

cruel;

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



for without

this reputation he could not keep an

it he would never hold his

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



army united,

or disposed to

any duty.

its duties.

Among the

noteworthy actions

wonderful deeds

of Hannibal

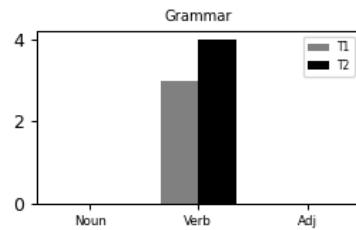
is numbered this, that

this one is enumerated: that

although he had

having led

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



an enormous army, composed of

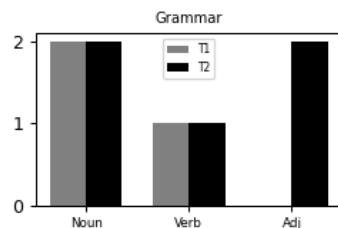
men of all nations

many various races of men, to

and fighting

fight

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

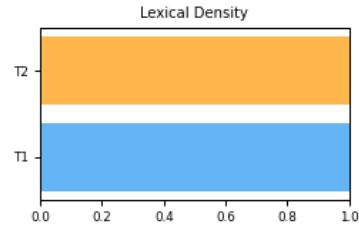
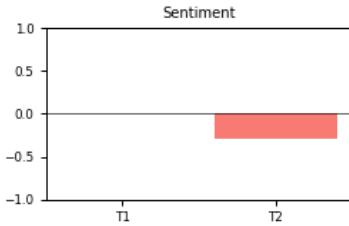


in foreign

countries, there never arose any dissension

lands, no dissensions arose

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

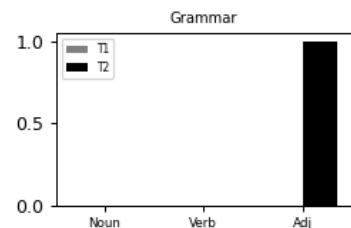
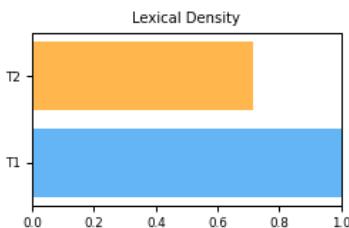


either among them or against the prince

, either in

, whether in his bad or in his

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



good fortune

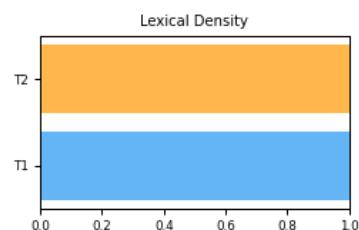
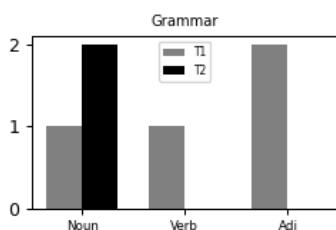
or in

. This

bad. This could not be due to anything but

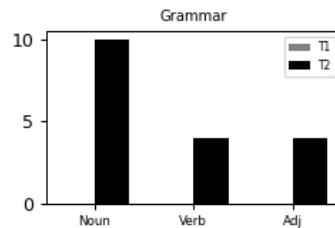
arose from nothing else than

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



his inhuman cruelty, which  
 together ,  
 with his  
 infinite other virtues, boundless valour,  
 made him  
 always revered  
 and terrible in the sight of his soldiers  
 , and without it , but without that cruelty, his other virtues  
 were not  
 sufficient to produce this effect. And short-  
 sighted writers admire his  
 deeds from one point of view and from  
 another condemn the principal  
 cause of them. That it is true

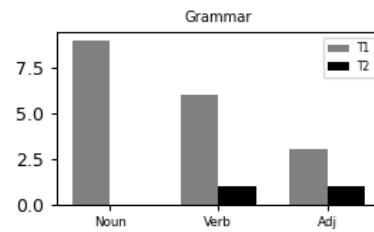
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



his other  
virtues would not have

sufficed to produce that effect. Thoughtless  
writers admire on the one hand his actions,  
and on the other blame the  
principal cause of them. And that it is true  
that his other virtues  
would not have sufficed

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



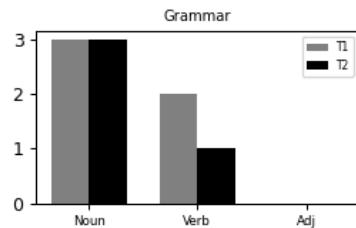
may be

seen from  
the case of Scipio

(very rare , that most  
excellent man,  
not only

in his own times, but of

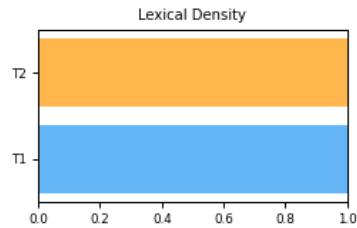
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



, which ; this arose from nothing but his

excessive kindness, which allowed too great forbearance, which gave his  
soldiers

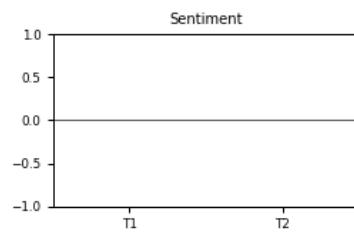
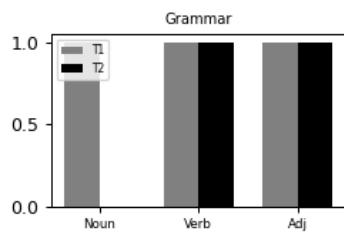
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



more license

to the soldiers than is consistent  
than was consonant

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



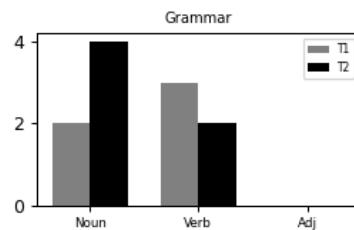
with military discipline

. For this  
He was  
reproached with upbraided  
this  
in the senate by Fabius Maximus

, who called him a , and called the  
corrupter of the  
Roman

militia. soldiery. The Locrians were laid waste by a  
The Locri having been destroyed by one legate

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of Scipio

's officers ,  
yet they  
were not

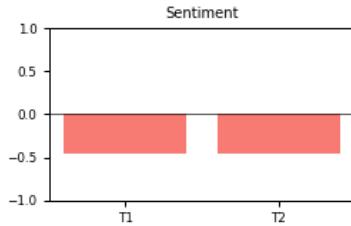
revenged avenged  
by him, nor was the insolence of

that officer punished, the legate

simply by reason of

punished, owing entirely to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



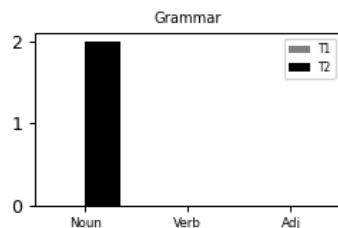
his easy nature

; so much so, that some one

. Insomuch that someone in

the Senate,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



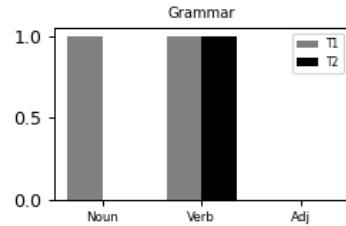
wishing

to excuse him

in the senate, said that

, said

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



there were many men who knew

rather much better

how not to err, than

how

to correct the errors of others. This

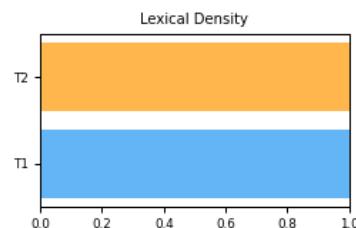
### disposition

, if he had been continued in the command,

would have

destroyed

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



in time

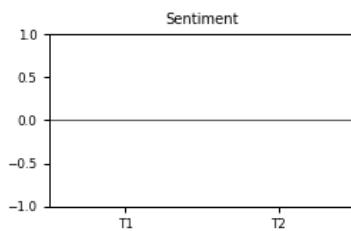
have tarnished

the fame and glory of Scipio

had he persevered in it

; but, he being

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

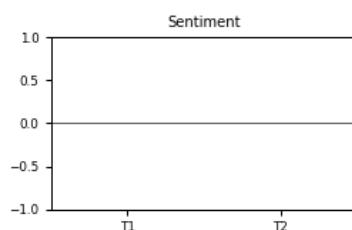
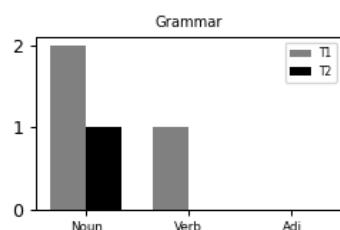


under the

empire, but living under the rule

control

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



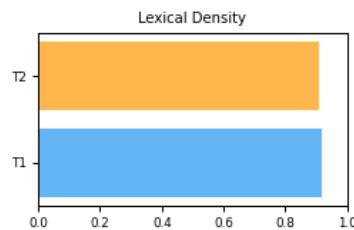
of

the senate this

harmful quality was injurious characteristic  
not only concealed

but became a itself, but contributed to his glory.  
glory to him. I conclude, therefore, with Returning to the question of  
regard to

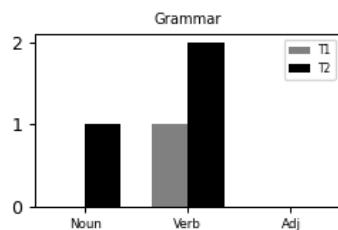
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



being feared

and or loved, I come to the  
loved, conclusion

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



that men

love at

loving according to

their own

free will, but fear at the will

## will and fearing

according to that

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



of

the prince

, and that

,

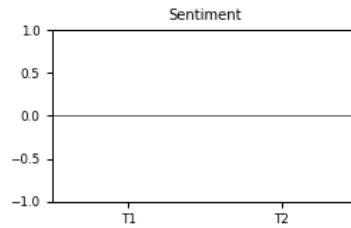
a wise prince

must rely on what

should establish himself

on that which

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

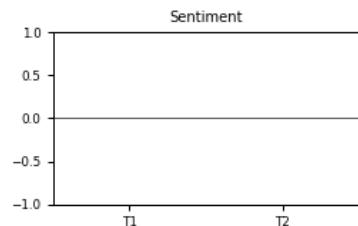
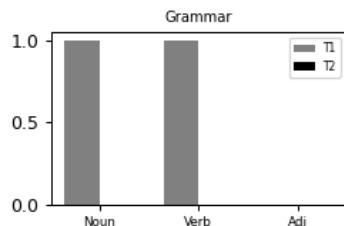


is in his

power and not own control

on what is in the power in that

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



of others

, and .

he must

only trouble endeavour only

himself

to avoid

incurring

hatred, as

has been explained.

is noted.

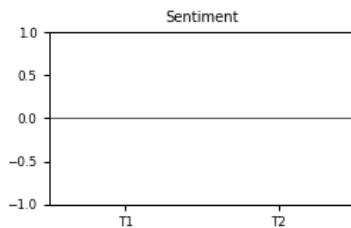
## CHAPTER XVIII

IN WHAT WAY PRINCES MUST

CONCERNING THE WAY IN WHICH

PRINCES SHOULD

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



KEEP FAITH

How laudable

[1] “The present chapter has given greater

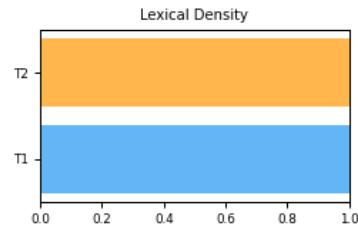
offence than any other

portion of Machiavelli’s writings.” Burd, “Il

Principe,” p. 297.

Every one admits how praiseworthy

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



it is

for in

a prince to keep

good

faith and

to

live with

integrity, and not with

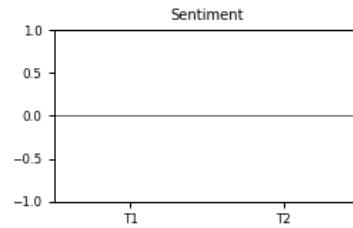
astuteness, every one knows. Still the

craft. Nevertheless our experience

experience of our times shows

has been that

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

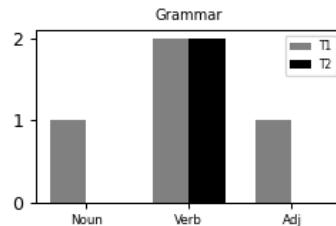


those princes

to who  
have done great things

who have had little regard for have held

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



good faith

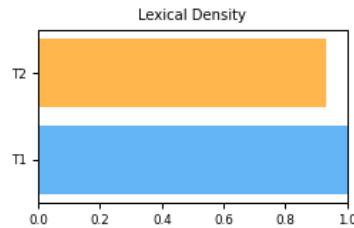
, of little account,  
and have

been able by known how to circumvent the intellect

astuteness to confuse men's brains, and who have ultimately

of men by craft, and in the end have

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



overcome

those who have

made loyalty their foundation.

relied on

their word.

You must know

, then,

that

there are two

methods of fighting,

ways of contesting,[2]

the one by

the

law, the other by

force: the first method is

that of

proper to

men, the second

of

to

beasts; but

as

because

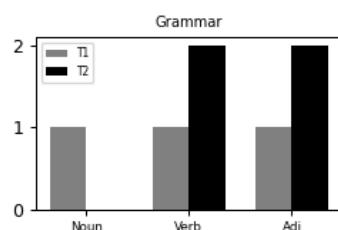
the first

method is often insufficient, one must

is frequently not sufficient,

it is necessary to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



have recourse to the

second

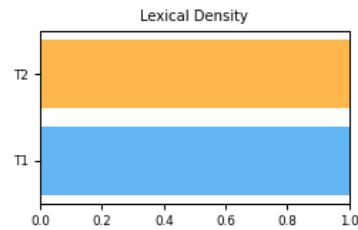
. Therefore

It is

therefore necessary to know well

necessary for a prince to understand

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



how to

use both

avail himself of

the

beast and the man. This

was covertly

has been figuratively

taught to princes by ancient

writers, who

relate

describe

how Achilles and many

others of those princes

other princes of old

were

given to

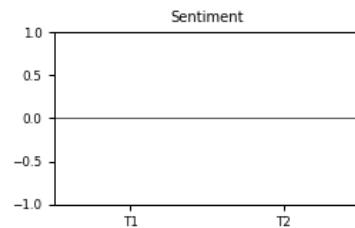
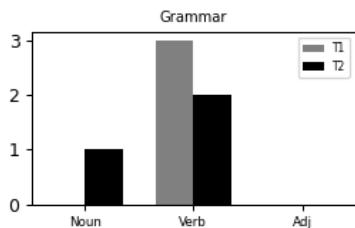
Chiron

the centaur

to be brought up, who kept them under

Chiron to nurse, who brought them up in

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



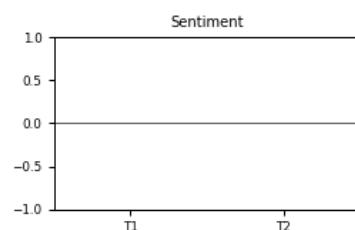
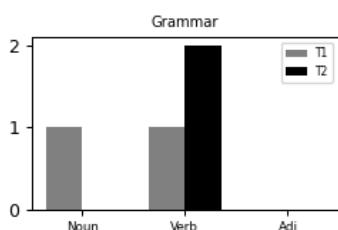
his

discipline

; this system of having for

; which means solely that, as they had for a

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



teacher one who was half beast  
and half man

is meant to indicate that , so it is necessary for

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



a prince

must to

know how to

use make use of

both natures, and that

the

one without the other is not durable. A

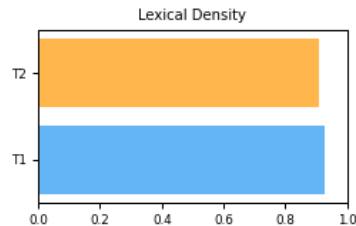
prince

being thus obliged to know well how to act , therefore, being compelled knowingly to

as a beast must  
imitate

adopt the  
beast, ought to choose

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the fox and the lion

, for ; because

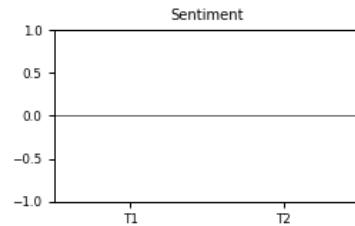
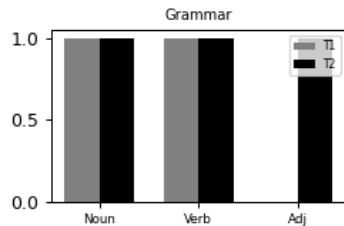
the lion cannot

protect himself  
from  
defend himself against

snares, and the fox cannot defend himself

from wolves. One must therefore  
against  
wolves. Therefore, it is necessary to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



be a fox to

recognise

discover the

snares, and a lion to

frighten

terrify the

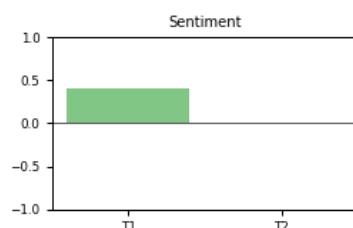
wolves.

Those

that wish to be only lions

who rely simply on the lion

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



do not understand

this.

what they are about.

Therefore,

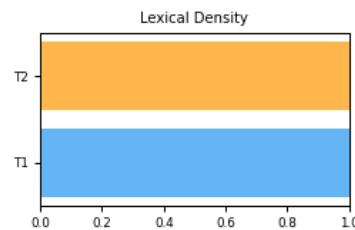
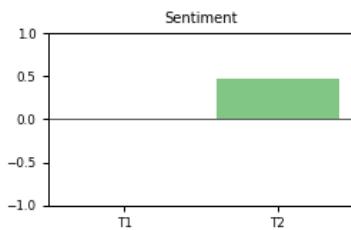
a

prudent ruler ought not

wise lord cannot, nor

ought he

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



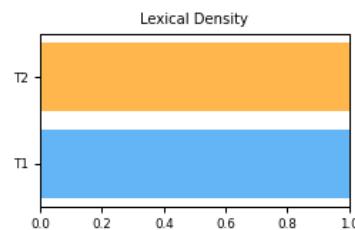
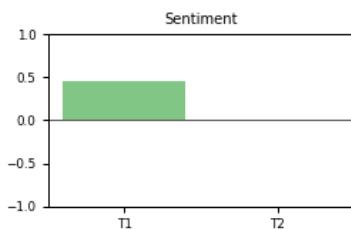
to keep faith when

by so doing it would be

such observance may be turned against him,

against his interest,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

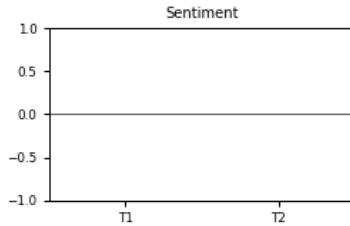


and when the reasons

which made him bind himself

that caused him to pledge it exist

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



no longer

exist.

If men were

.

all

entirely

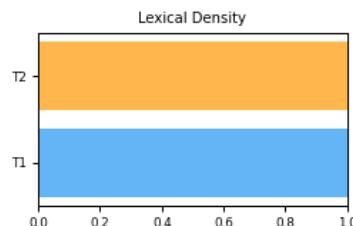
good, this precept would not

be a

hold, but because

good one; but as

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



they are bad, and  
 would not observe their will not keep  
 faith with  
 you

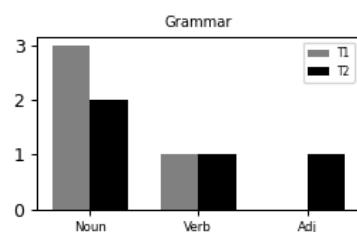
, so you , you too  
 are not bound to

keep faith observe it  
 with them. Nor

are legitimate will there ever be  
 grounds ever wanting to a prince

to give colour to the non-fulfilment legitimate reasons to excuse this non-  
 of his promise. observance.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

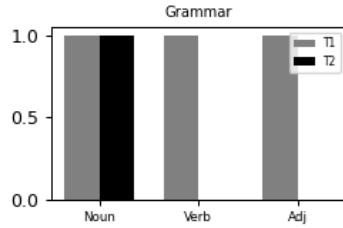


Of this

one could furnish an infinite number of

endless

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



modern

examples

, and show

could be given, showing

how many

times peace has been broken, and how many

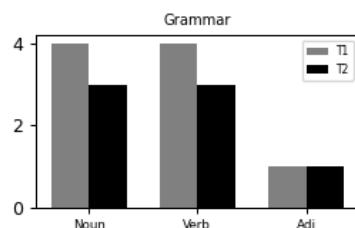
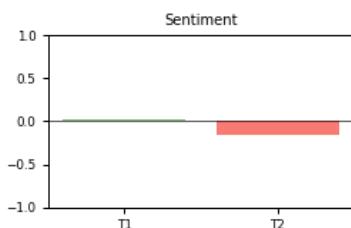
treaties and

promises rendered worthless, by

engagements have been made void and of no

effect through

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



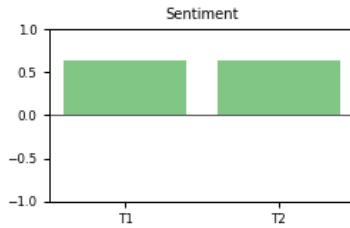
the faithlessness of princes, and

those

he who has known best how to employ

that have been best able to imitate

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the fox

have

has

succeeded best

[2] “Contesting,” i.e. “striving for

mastery.” Mr Burd points out

that this passage is imitated directly from

Cicero’s “De Officiis”:

“Nam cum sint duo genera decertandi, unum

per disceptionem, alterum

per vim; cumque illud proprium sit hominis,

hoc beluarum; configiendum  
est ad posterius, si uti non licet superiore."

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



But

it is necessary to

be able

know well how

to disguise this

character well,

characteristic,

and to be

a great

feigner

pretender

and dissembler; and men are so simple and so

ready to

subject to

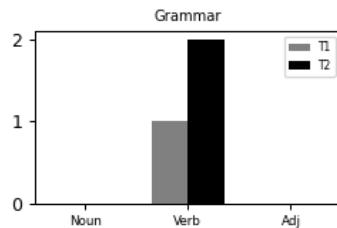
obey

present necessities, that

one who deceives

he who seeks to deceive

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



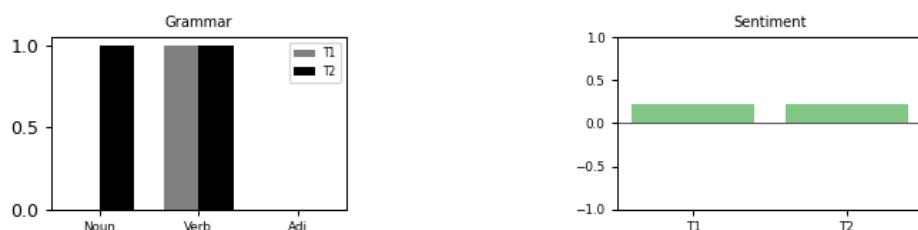
will always find

those

someone who will allow himself

who allow themselves

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



to be deceived

. I will only mention one modern

. One recent

instance. Alexander VI.

example I cannot pass over in silence.

Alexander the Sixth

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



did nothing else but deceive men

, he

, nor ever

thought

of

nothing else, and found the way to do it; no

doing otherwise, and

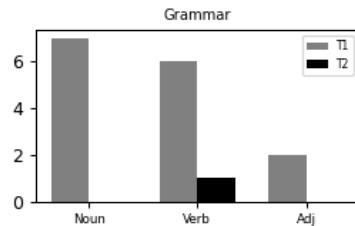
man was ever more able

to give assurances, or affirmed things with

stronger oaths, and no man

observed them less; however,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



he always

succeeded in his deceptions, as

he knew well

found victims; for there never was a man

who had greater power

in asserting, or who with greater oaths would

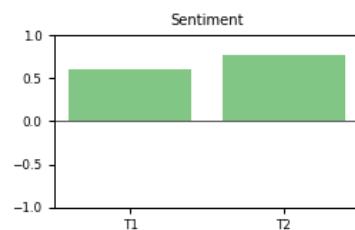
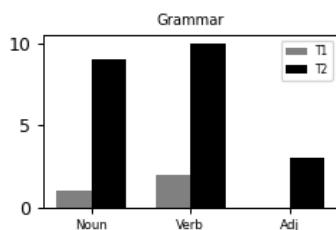
affirm a thing, yet would

observe it less; nevertheless his deceits

always succeeded according to

his wishes,[3] because he well understood

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



this side of

the world.

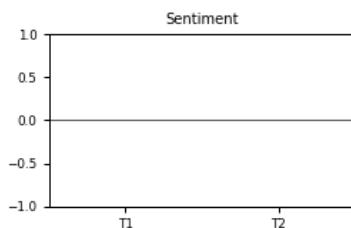
mankind.

[3] “Nondimanco sempre gli succederono gli  
inganni (ad votum).” The  
words “ad votum” are omitted in the Testina  
addition, 1550.

Alexander never did what he said,  
Cesare never said what he did.

Therefore

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



It is

not, therefore, necessary

unnecessary

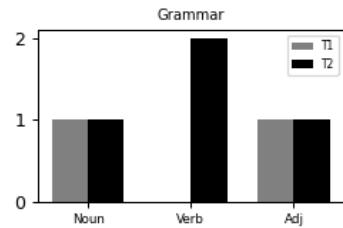
for a prince to have all the

above-named qualities,

good qualities

I have enumerated,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



but it is very

necessary to

seem

appear

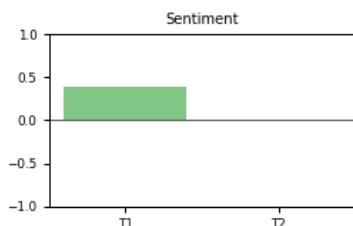
to have them

. I would even be bold

. And

I shall dare

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to say

this also,

that to

possess have  
 them and  
 to always always to  
 observe them is  
 dangerous, but injurious, and that  
 to appear  
 to  
 possess have  
 them is useful  
 . Thus it is well to seem pious, ; to appear  
 merciful,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



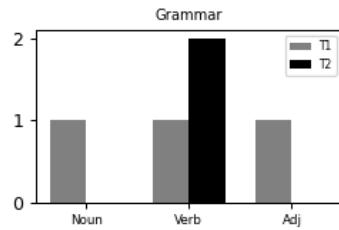
faithful,  
 humane, religious

, sincere, and also , upright, and  
to be so; but

you must have the with  
a  
mind so

watchful that when it is needful framed that should you require not

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



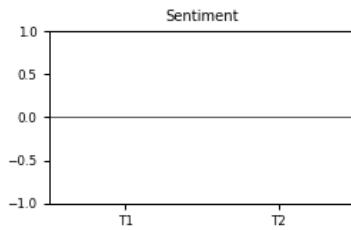
to be  
otherwise so,  
you may be  
able

and know how  
to change to the opposite

qualities. And it must be understood .

And you have to understand this,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



that a prince

, and ,

especially a new

prince,

one,

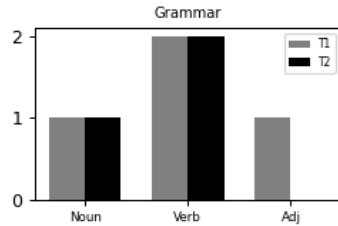
cannot observe all those

things

which are considered good in men,

for which men are esteemed,

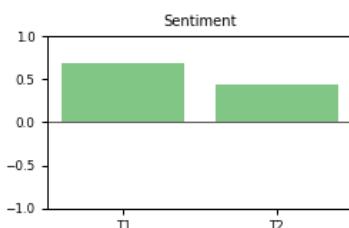
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



being often

obliged,  
in order  
to maintain the state, to act  
  
against faith, against charity, against  
contrary to fidelity,[4]  
friendship,

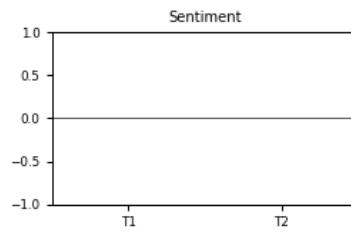
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



humanity, and

against religion. And, therefore, he must  
religion. Therefore it is necessary for him  
to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

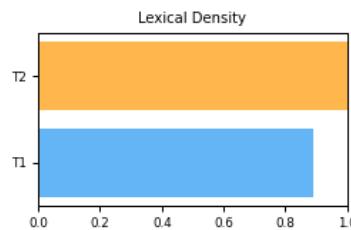


have a mind

disposed to adapt itself according to the  
wind, and

ready to turn itself accordingly

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



as the

winds and

variations

of fortune

dictate, and,

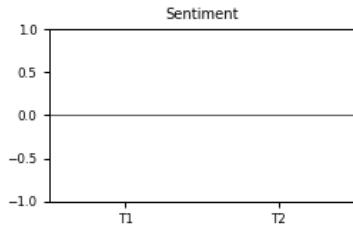
force it, yet,

as I

said before, not deviate from what is

have said above, not to  
diverge from the

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



good, if

possible, but be able to do evil if  
necessitated.

he can avoid doing so, but, if compelled, then  
to know how to set about it.

[4] “Contrary to fidelity” or “faith,” “contro  
alla fede,” and “tutto  
fede,” “altogether faithful,” in the next  
paragraph. It is noteworthy  
that these two phrases, “contro alla fede”  
and “tutto fede,” were  
omitted in the Testina edition, which was  
published with the sanction  
of the papal authorities. It may be that the  
meaning attached to the

word “fede” was “the faith,” i.e. the

Catholic creed, and not as

rendered here “fidelity” and “faithful.”

Observe that the word

“religione” was suffered to stand in the text

of the Testina, being

used to signify indifferently every shade of

belief, as witness “the

religion,” a phrase inevitably employed to

designate the Huguenot

heresy. South in his Sermon IX, p. 69, ed.

1843, comments on this

passage as follows: “That great patron and

Coryphaeus of this tribe,

Nicolo Machiavel, laid down this for a

master rule in his political

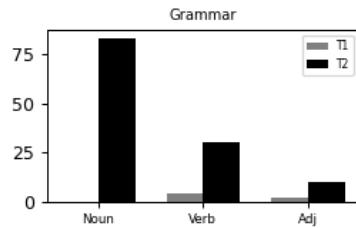
scheme: ‘That the show of religion was

helpful to the politician, but

the reality of it hurtful and pernicious.’”

For this reason

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



A prince

must take great

ought to take

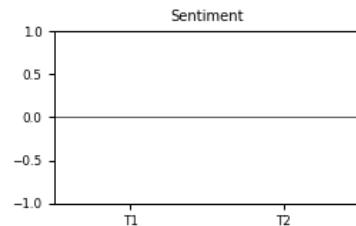
care that

nothing goes out of his mouth which

he never lets anything

slip from his lips that

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



is not

full of

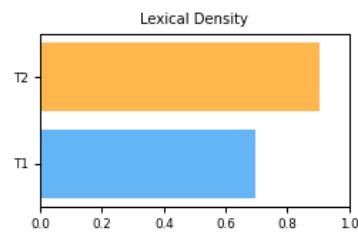
replete with

the above-named five qualities

, and, to see and hear him, he  
 should seem to be all faith, all integrity, all  
 humanity, and all  
 religion. And nothing is

, that he may appear to him who sees and  
 hears him altogether  
 merciful, faithful, humane, upright, and  
 religious. There is nothing

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



more necessary

than to seem

to have

to appear

than

this last

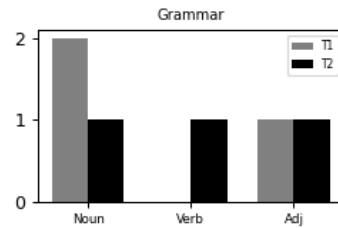
quality

, for men in general judge

, inasmuch as

men judge generally

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



more by the

eyes

eye

than by the

hands,

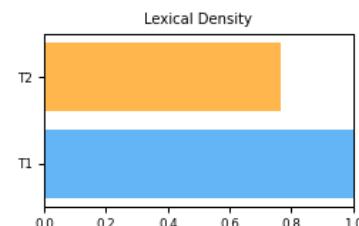
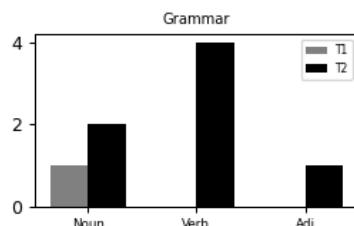
hand, because it

for

belongs to everybody to see you, to few to

come in touch with you.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



every one

can see, but very few have to feel. Everybody

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

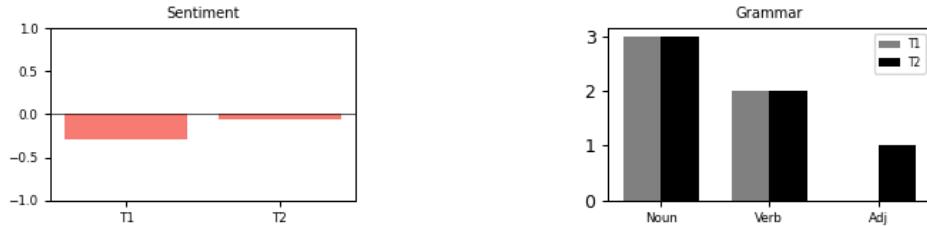


sees what  
 you appear to be, few  
 feel  
 really know  
 what you are, and those few  
 will not dare  
 dare not  
 to  
 oppose themselves to  
 the opinion of  
 the many, who have the majesty of the state to  
 defend them; and in the actions of  
 all  
 men, and especially of princes  
 , from , which it is not prudent to challenge,

which there is no appeal, the end is  
everything.

one judges by the result.  
For that reason,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



Let a prince

therefore aim at living and maintaining state  
the

have the credit of conquering and holding  
his

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



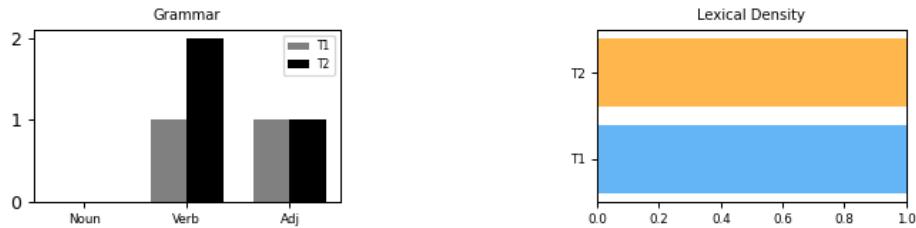
state,

the means will always be

judged honourable and

considered honest, and he will be

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



praised by

every one, everybody; because

for

the vulgar

is are

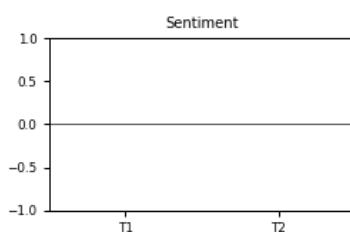
always taken by

appearances and the result of things; what a

and thing seems to be and by what comes of it;

and in

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the world

consists only of there are

only

the vulgar

, and , for

the few find a place

there only

when the many have

nothing no ground

to rest

upon. A certain prince on.

One prince[5]

of the

present time, whom it is

well not not well

to name, never

does anything but preaches anything else but

preach

peace and good faith

, but

, and to both

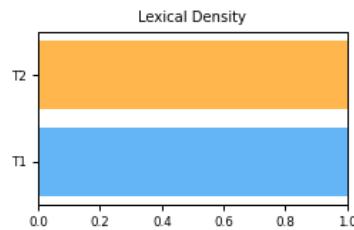
he is

really a great enemy to both,

most

hostile,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

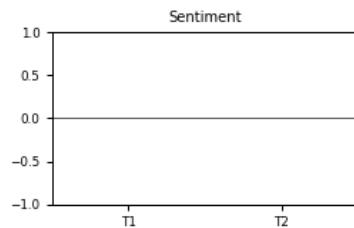


and either

of them, had he observed them,

, if he had kept it,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



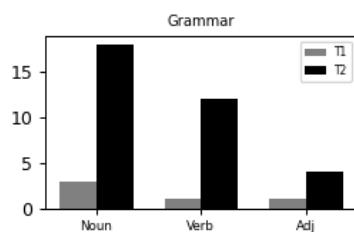
would have

lost him both  
state and reputation on many occasions.

deprived him of  
reputation and kingdom many a time.

[5] Ferdinand of Aragon. “When Machiavelli  
was writing The Prince it  
would have been clearly impossible to  
mention Ferdinand’s name here  
without giving offence.” Burd’s “Il  
Principe,” p. 308.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



## CHAPTER XIX

THAT WE MUST

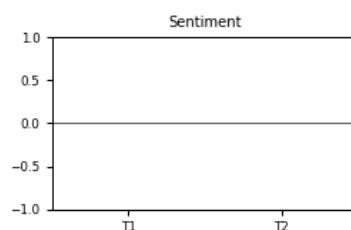
THAT ONE SHOULD

AVOID BEING DESPISED AND HATED

But as

Now, concerning the characteristics of which  
mention is made above,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



I have

now

spoken of the

most important of the qualities

more important ones, the others I wish to

in question, I will now deal briefly with the

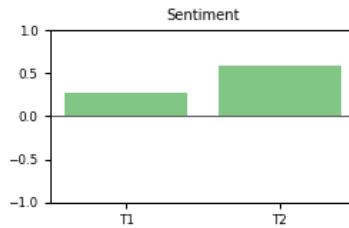
discuss

rest on the general

briefly under this generality,

principle,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



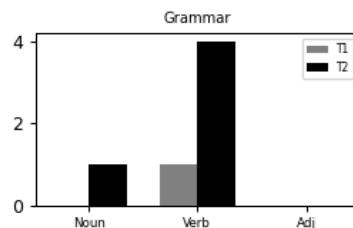
that the prince must

, as already stated,

consider, as has

been in part said before, how to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



avoid those things

which will make him hated or

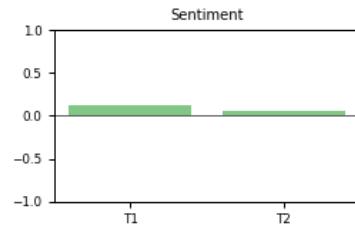
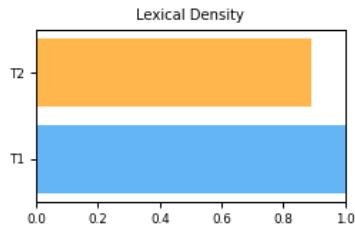
despised; and whenever he succeeds in

contemptible; and as often as he shall have

this,

succeeded

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



he will have

done

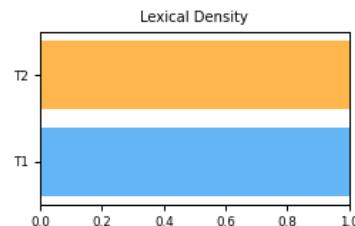
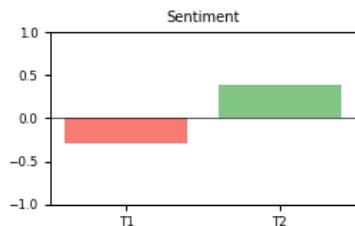
fulfilled

his part, and

will find no

he need not fear any

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



danger in other

vices.

reproaches.

He will chiefly become hated,

It makes him hated above all things,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



as I

said, by being

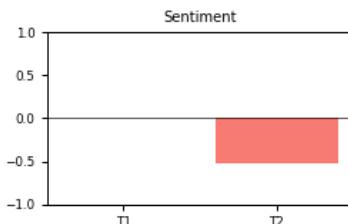
have said, to be

rapacious, and

usurping

to be a violator of

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the property and women of his subjects

,

, from

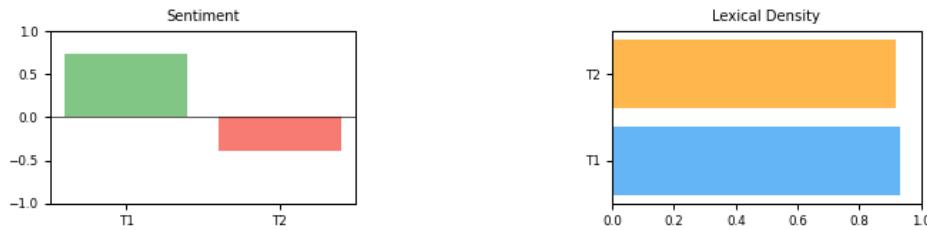
both of

which he must abstain

from doing, and whenever one does not  
attack the property or honour  
of the generality

. And when neither their property nor  
their honor is touched, the majority

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

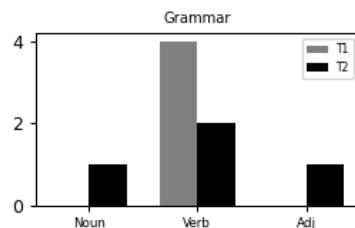


of men

, they will live contented; and one will only  
have to combat

live content, and he has  
only to contend with

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

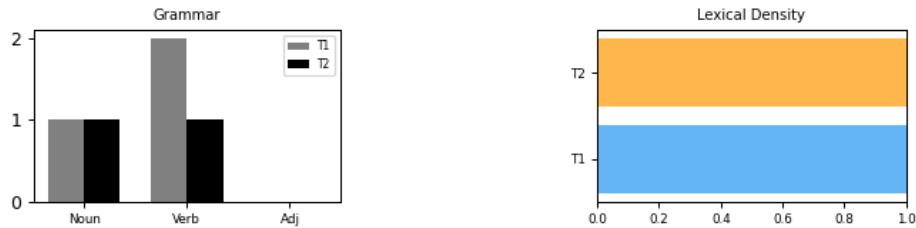


the ambition of a few

, who can be easily held in check

, whom he can curb with ease

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



in many ways

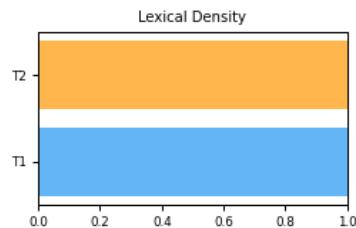
. He is rendered despicable by being thought

changeable,

It makes him contemptible to be considered

fickle,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



frivolous, effeminate

, timid, and irresolute;

, mean-spirited, irresolute, from all of

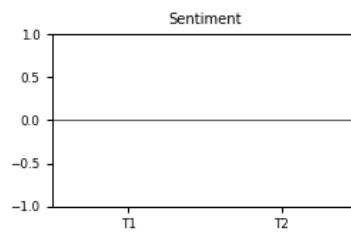
which a prince

must

should guard himself as from

guard against as

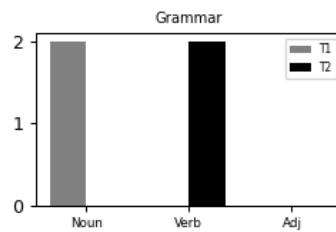
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



a rock

of danger, and manage so that ; and he should endeavour to show in

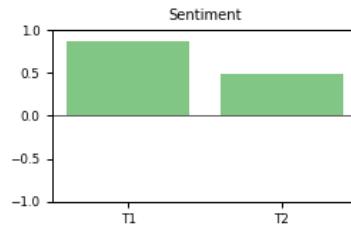
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



his actions

show grandeur, high courage, seriousness, greatness, courage, gravity, and fortitude; and strength; and as to the and in his government of private dealings with

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

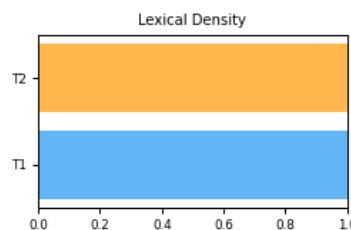


his subjects, let

his sentence be

him show that his judgments are

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



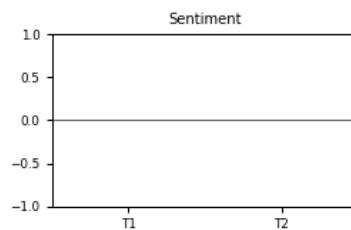
irrevocable, and

let

maintain himself in such reputation

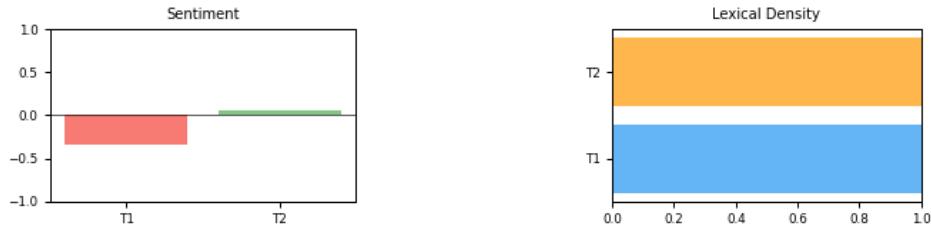
him adhere to his decisions so

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



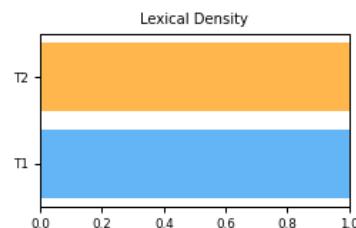
that no one  
 may think of deceiving can  
 hope either to deceive

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



him  
 or  
 making him change. The prince who creates to get round him.  
 such an opinion That prince is highly esteemed who conveys  
 this impression

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of himself

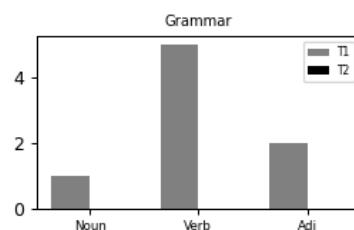
gets a great reputation, and ,  
 and he who is highly esteemed is not easily  
 conspired against; for,  
 provided

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



it is  
 very difficult to conspire against well  
 one who has a great reputation, and he will  
 not easily be attacked, so  
 long as it is

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



known that he is

esteemed and reverenced

an excellent man and revered

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



by his

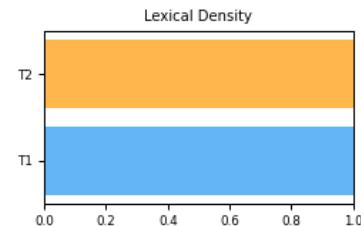
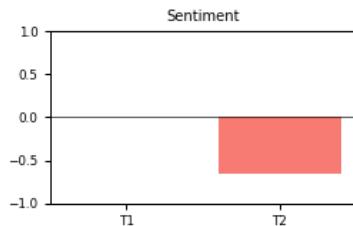
subjects.

people, he can only be attacked with

For

difficulty. For this reason

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



a prince

must

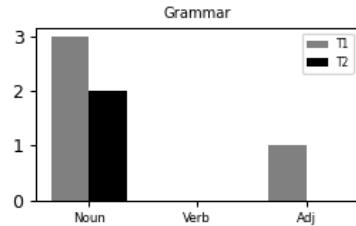
ought to

have two

kinds of fear: one internal as regards

fears, one from within, on account of

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



his

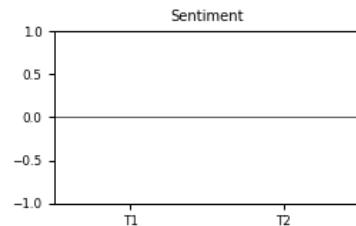
subjects

, one external as regards foreign

, the other from without, on account of

external

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



powers. From the latter he

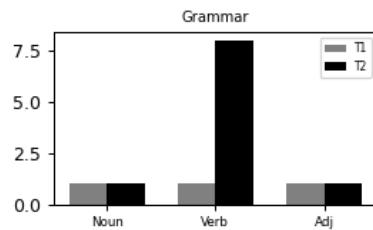
can defend himself with good arms and

is defended by being well armed and having

good allies,

and if he is well armed he will have

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



good friends, and

he will always affairs  
have good friends if he has good arms; and  
internal matters

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



will always

remain quiet

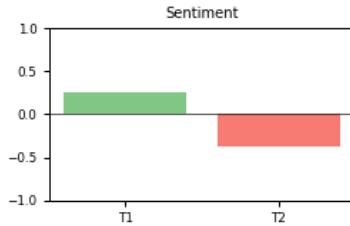
, if within when  
they are

not perturbed

quiet without, unless they

should have been already disturbed

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



by conspiracy; and even

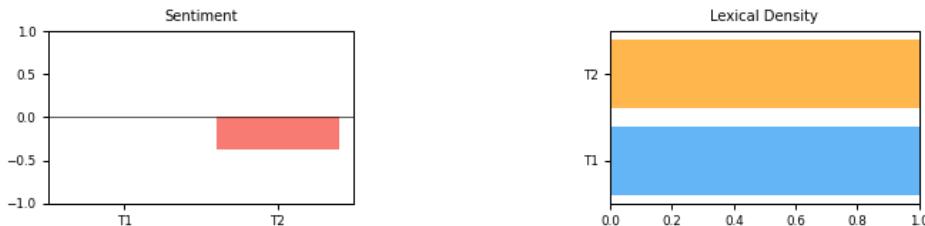
if

should

external powers sought to foment one,

affairs outside be disturbed,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



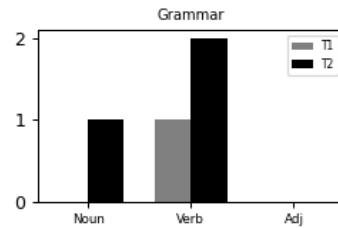
if he has

ruled and

carried out his preparations

and has

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



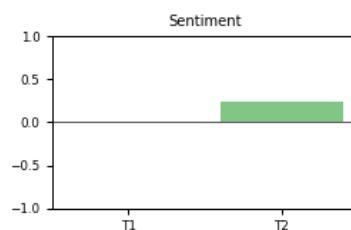
lived as I

have

described,

said, as long as he does not despair,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



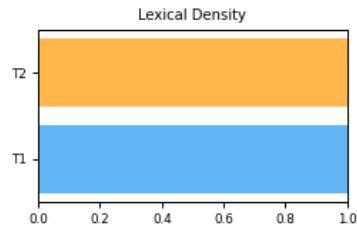
he will

always if he stands firm be able to sustain

resist every attack,

every shock,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



as I

have shown that

said

Nabis the Spartan did. But

with

concerning his subjects, when affairs outside

regard to the subjects, if not acted on from

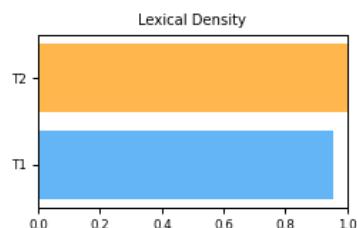
are disturbed he has

outside, it is still to be

only to fear that they will conspire secretly,

feared lest they conspire in secret,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



from which

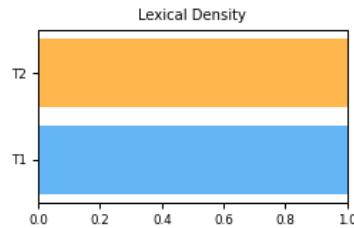
the prince may guard

a prince can

himself well

easily secure himself

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

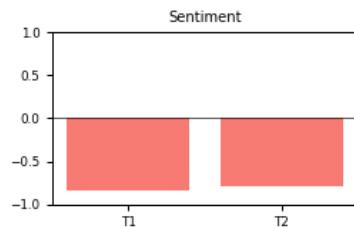


by avoiding

hatred and contempt, and

being hated and despised, and by

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



keeping the people

satisfied with him, which it is

necessary

most necessary for

him

to accomplish, as

has been  
related

I said above

at length. And one of the most

potent  
remedies that a prince

efficacious

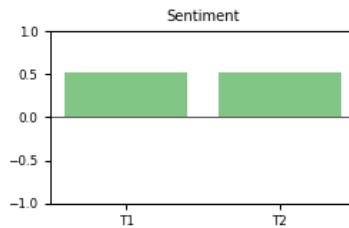
has  
against conspiracies, is

can have

that of not being hated or  
not  
to be hated and

not

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



despised by  
the  
mass of the  
people; for

whoever conspires always believes that

he who conspires against a

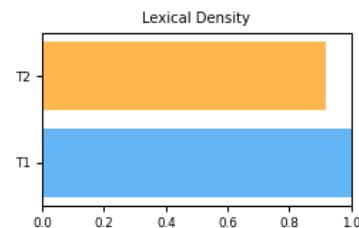
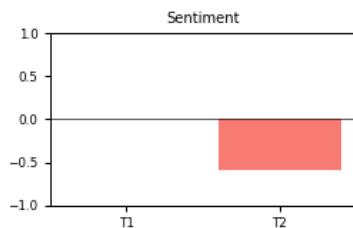
prince always expects to please them by his

removal; but when the

conspirator can only look forward to

offending them,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



he will

satisfy the people by the death of their

not have

prince; but if he

the courage to take such a course,

thought to offend them by doing this, he

would fear to engage in such

an undertaking,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



for the difficulties that

conspirators have to meet

confront a conspirator

are

infinite

. And as .

Experience shows

that there , many

have been

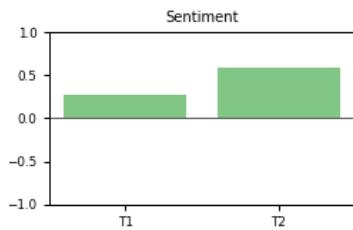
very many the

conspiracies,

but few have

turned out well, for whoever been successful; because he who

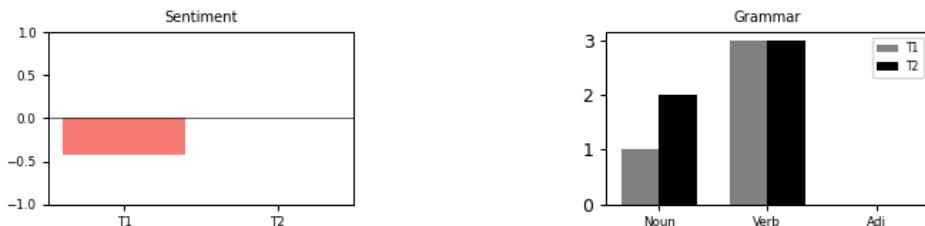
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



conspires cannot act alone

, nor can he take a companion except from  
and cannot find companions except among those whom he  
those who are discontented; believes to be malcontents,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



and as soon as you have

disclosed your intention opened your mind

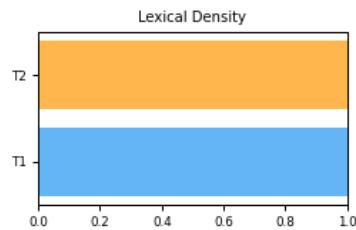
to a malcontent, you

give have given  
him the

means of satisfying

material with which to content

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



himself, for by

revealing it

denouncing you

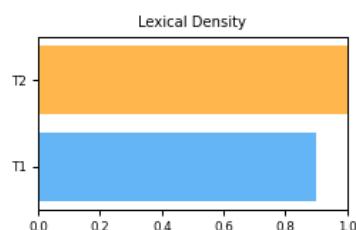
he can

hope to secure everything he wants; to such

look for every advantage; so

an extent

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

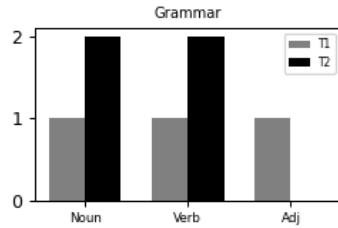


that seeing

a certain gain by doing this,

the gain from this course to be assured,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



and seeing

on

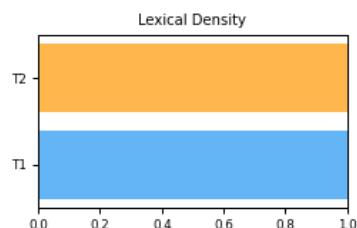
the other

hand only a

to be doubtful

doubtful one

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



and full of

danger,

dangers,

he must

either

be a

very

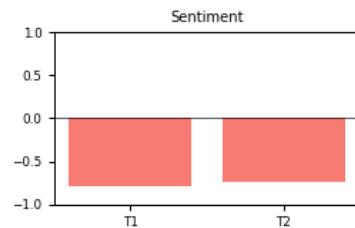
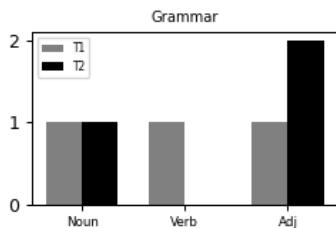
rare friend

to

, or a thoroughly obstinate enemy of

you or else a very bitter enemy to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the prince

if he keeps

, to keep

faith with

you. And to reduce the matter

to narrow limits,

into a small compass,

I say, that on the side

of the conspirator there is nothing but fear, jealousy

, suspicion,  
and dread

of punishment

which frightens him; and  
to terrify him; but

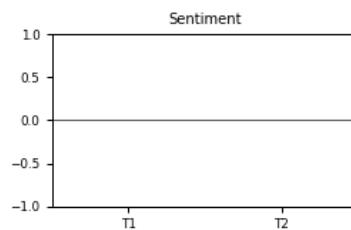
on the side of the  
prince there is the majesty of

government,  
the principality,  
the laws, the protection  
of friends and

of  
the state

which guard him. When to  
to defend him; so that, adding to all

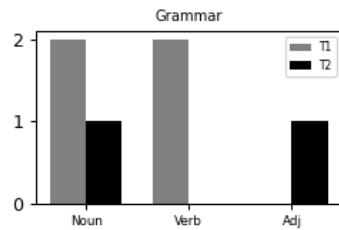
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



these things

are the  
added the goodwill of the people, popular goodwill,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



it is impossible that any one should

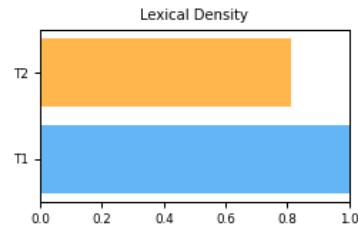
have the temerity be so rash as  
to conspire. For whereas

generally a in general the  
conspirator

has to fear before the execution of his plot, in this case he

must has also to fear the sequel to  
also fear afterwards, having the crime; because on account of it he has

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



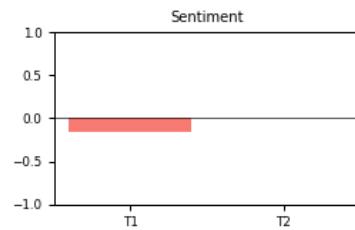
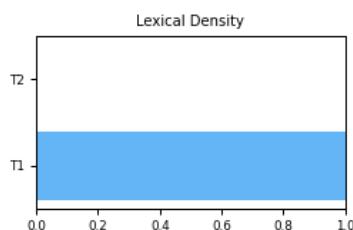
the people for an enemy

, when his crime

,

is accomplished,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



and thus

not being able to

cannot

hope for any

refuge.

escape.

Numberless instances might

Endless examples could

be given

of this,  
 on this subject,  
 but I will  
 content myself  
 be content  
 with one  
 which took place  
 , brought to pass  
 within the memory of our fathers. Messer  
 Annibale Bentivogli

, Prince of Bologna, ancestor , who was prince in Bologna (grandfather

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



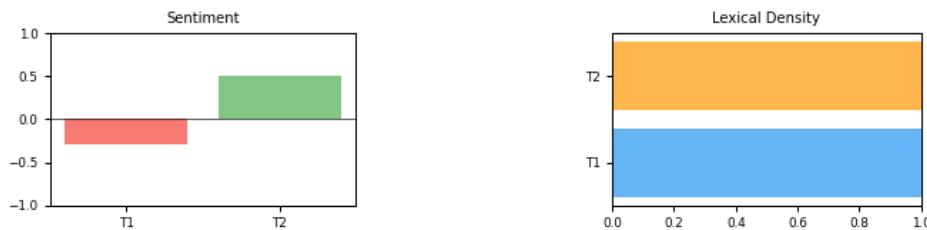
of the present  
 Messer Annibale), having been murdered  
 Annibale, was killed  
 by the Canneschi, who

had

conspired against him

. He , not one of his family survived  
left no relations

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



but Messer Giovanni

, [1]  
who was

then an infant, but in childhood: immediately after his  
after the murder assassination

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the people rose

up and killed

and murdered

all the Canneschi. This

arose

sprung

from the popular goodwill

that

which

the house of Bentivogli enjoyed

at

in those days

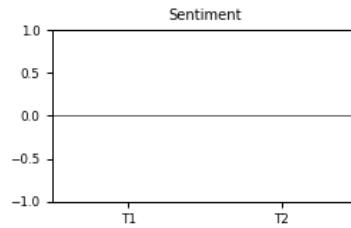
that time

in Bologna, which was so great that

, as there was nobody left

, although none remained there

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



after the death of Annibale who

could govern

was able to rule

the state, the Bolognese

hearing

,

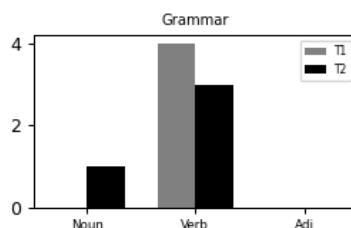
having information

that there was one of the Bentivogli family in Florence, who

had till then been thought

up to that time had been considered

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the son of a blacksmith

, came to fetch , sent to Florence for  
him

and gave him the government of

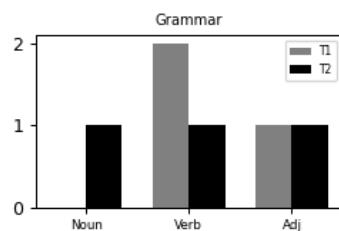
the their  
city, and it was

governed ruled  
by him

until Messer Giovanni

was old enough to assume came in due  
course to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the government

I conclude, therefore,

[1] Giovanni Bentivogli, born in Bologna

1438, died at Milan 1508. He

ruled Bologna from 1462 to 1506.

Machiavelli's strong condemnation of

conspiracies may get its edge from his own

very recent experience

(February 1513), when he had been arrested

and tortured for his

alleged complicity in the Boscoli

conspiracy.

For this reason I consider

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



that a prince

need trouble little about

ought to reckon conspiracies

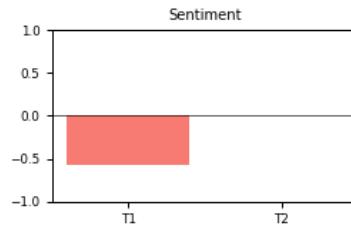
conspiracies when the people are well

of little account when his people

disposed, but when they

are hostile and

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



hold him in

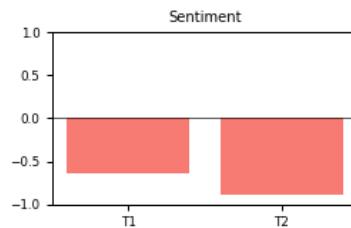
hatred, then he must

esteem; but when it is

hostile to him, and bears hatred towards him,

he ought to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



fear everything

and everybody

.

. And

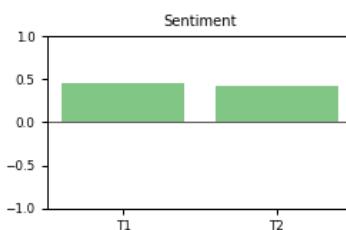
Well-ordered states and wise princes have

studied

taken every care

diligently  
not to drive the nobles to desperation, and to  
satisfy the keep  
populace and keep it the people satisfied and

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



contented, for this is one of the most important  
matters that objects  
a prince  
has to deal with. can have.

Among the  
kingdoms that are best  
well  
ordered and governed

in our time

kingdoms of our times

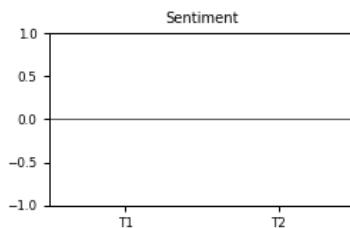
is France, and

there we find

in it are found many

numberless

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



good institutions on which depend the liberty and security

of the king; of these the

chief

first

is the parliament and its authority,

because he who

established that

founded the

kingdom, knowing the ambition

and

insolence

of the

great nobles, and deeming it

nobility and their boldness, considered that a

bit to their mouths

would be

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



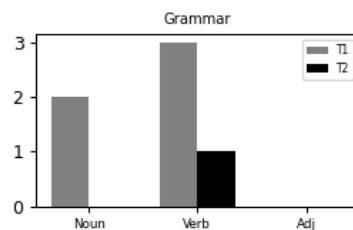
necessary to

have a bit

hold them in; and,

in their mouths to check them; and knowing

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



on the other

hand side, knowing

the hatred

of the

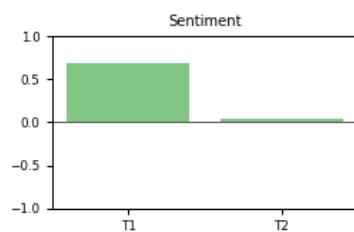
mass of the people to the great, based on fear, people, founded in fear, against the nobles,

and wishing to he wished to

secure them, did not wish to make this the protect them, yet he was not anxious for this

special to be the particular

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



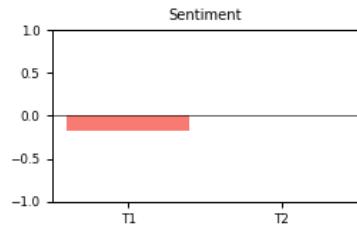
care of the king

, ; therefore, to take away the reproach which

to relieve him of the dissatisfaction that he he would be

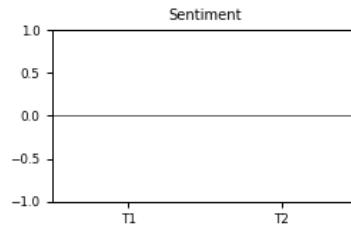
might incur among liable to from

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the  
 nobles  
 by for  
 favouring the people, and  
 among from  
 the people  
 by for  
 favouring the  
 nobles. He  
 therefore established a third judge that, set up an arbiter, who should be one who  
 without direct could beat down  
 charge of the king, kept in check

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the great and

favoured

favour

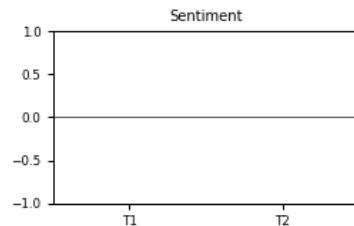
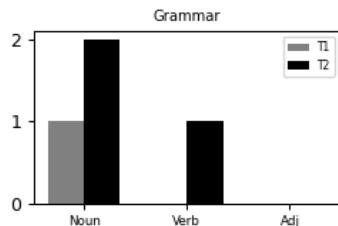
the lesser

people. Nor could any

without reproach to the

king. Neither could you have a

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



better or

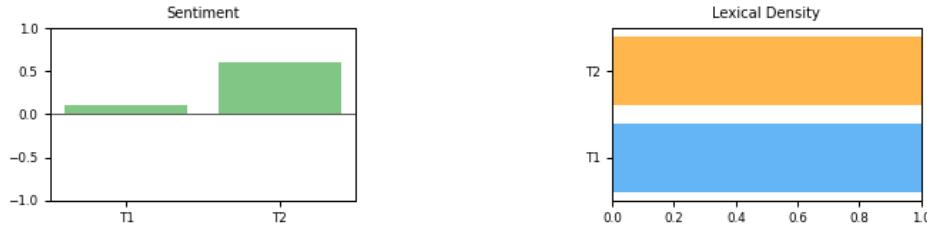
a

more prudent

measure have been adopted,  
nor better precaution for the safety of

arrangement, or  
a greater source of security to

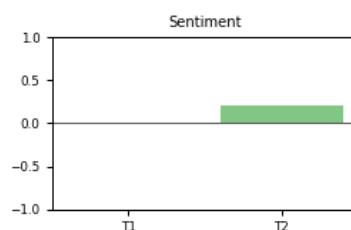
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the king and  
the  
kingdom. From

which another notable rule can be drawn,  
this one can  
draw another important conclusion,

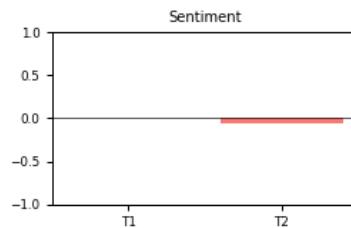
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



that princes

should let the ought to leave affairs  
carrying out of unpopular duties devolve on of reproach to the management of

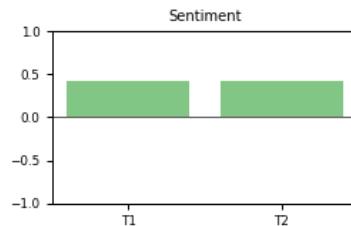
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



others, and

bestow favours keep those of grace in  
themselves. I conclude again by saying their own hands. And further, I consider

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



that a prince

must esteem his  
ought to cherish  
the  
nobles, but not

so as to

make himself hated by the

populace.

people.

It may

perhaps seem

appear, perhaps,

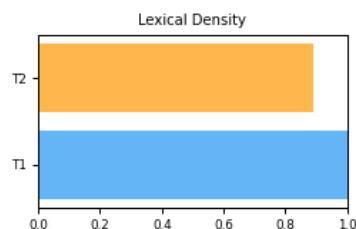
to some

, that considering the life and death of many

who have examined the lives and deaths

of the

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



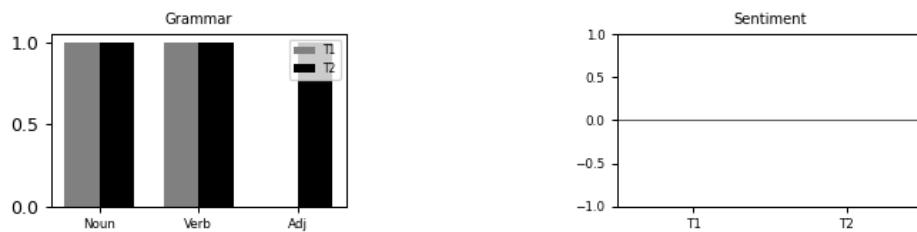
Roman emperors

that

they are instances

many of them would be an example

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



contrary to my opinion

, finding

, seeing

that some

who

of them lived

lived always

nobly and showed great

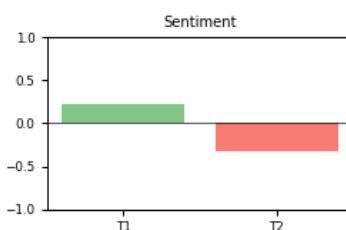
strength of character, nevertheless

qualities of soul, nevertheless they have lost

lost the

their

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



empire, or

were have  
been killed by

their subjects who

have conspired against  
them. Wishing

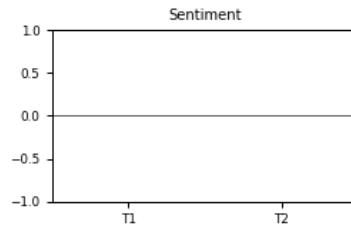
,

therefore,  
to answer these objections, I will

discuss the qualities recall the characters  
of some

emperors, showing the cause of the emperors, and will show that the  
causes

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



of their ruin

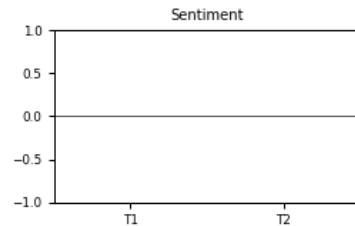
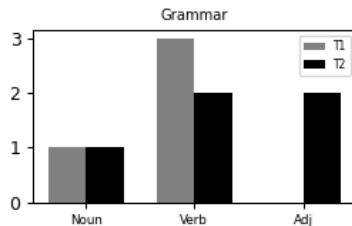
not to be at variance

were

with what I have stated, and

not different to those alleged by me; at the  
same time

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



I will

also partly consider the things to

only

be noted by whoever reads the deeds of these submit for consideration those things that are

times. I will content

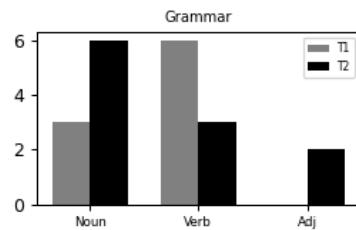
noteworthy to him who

myself with taking

studies the affairs of those times.

It seems to me sufficient to take

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



all those emperors who succeeded to the empire from  
Marcus the philosopher

down  
to Maximinus

; these ; they  
were Marcus

, Commodus and  
his

son

, Pertinax, Commodus, Pertinax, Julian, Severus and his  
son  
Antoninus Caracalla, Macrinus,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



Heliogabalus, Alexander, and Maximinus

. And the first

thing

to note

There is first

is,

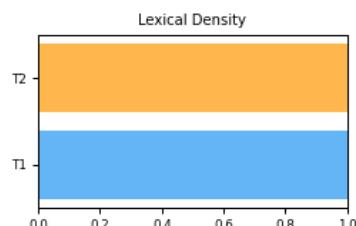
that whereas

other princes have only to contend

in other principalities

against

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the ambition of the

great nobles  
and the insolence of the people  
  
,

only have to be  
contended with,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the  
Roman emperors had a third difficulty  
  
, that of in  
having to

support put up with  
the  
cruelty and avarice of

the soldiers, which was such a difficulty their soldiers, a matter so

beset with difficulties

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



that

it was the

cause of the

ruin of many

, it being difficult to satisfy

; for it was a hard

both

thing to give satisfaction both to soldiers and

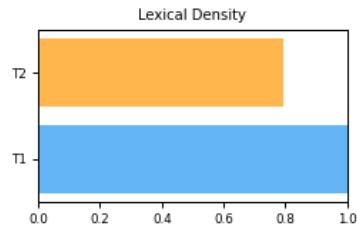
people; because the

people loved peace, and for this reason they

loved the unaspiring

prince, whilst

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the soldiers

and the people. For the people love  
tranquillity,  
and therefore like princes who are pacific,  
but the soldiers prefer  
a prince of military spirit, who is insolent,

loved the warlike prince who was bold,

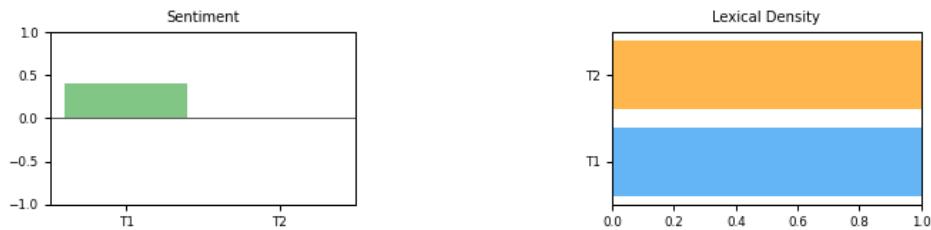
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



cruel, and rapacious

. , which qualities they were quite willing he  
They wish him to exercise these qualities on should  
exercise upon

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the people so that they

may could

get double pay and give vent to their

avarice own greed

and cruelty

. Thus it . Hence it arose

came about

that those emperors

who, by nature or art, had not such a  
reputation as could keep both parties in  
check, invariably were ruined,  
and the greater number

were always overthrown who, either by birth  
or training, had no great  
authority, and most

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of them

who were raised

, especially those who came new

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



to the

empire being

principality, recognizing the difficulty

new men, knowing the difficulties

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of these two

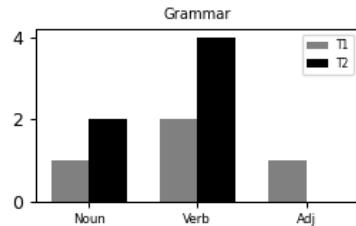
opposite dispositions,

opposing humours,

confined themselves to satisfying

were inclined to give satisfaction to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the soldiers

, and thought little of

, caring little about

injuring the people

. This choice

. Which course

was necessary

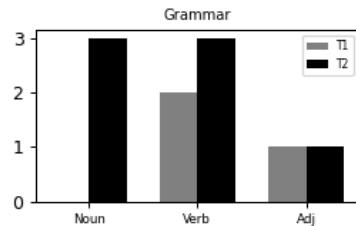
, princes not being able

, because, as princes

cannot help being hated by someone, they

ought, in the first place,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

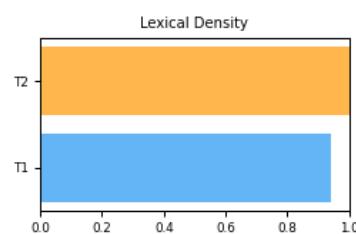


to avoid being hated by

some one. They must first try not to be hated  
by the mass of the people; if

every one, and when

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



they cannot

accomplish

compass

this they

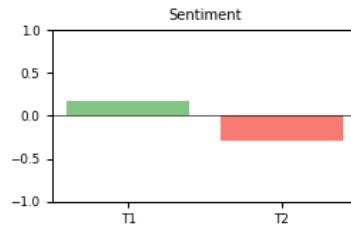
must

ought to endeavour with the utmost diligence

use every means to escape

to avoid

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



the hatred of the most powerful

parties. And

. Therefore, those

therefore these

emperors, who

being new men

through inexperience

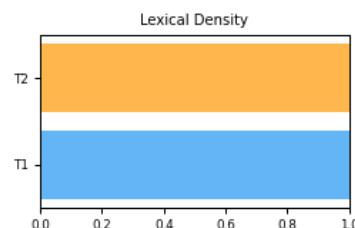
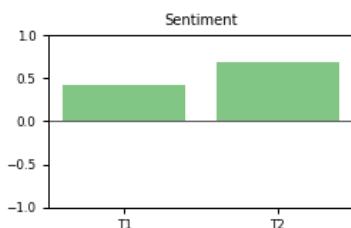
had need of

extraordinary

special favour adhered more readily

favours, adhered

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to the soldiers

more willingly

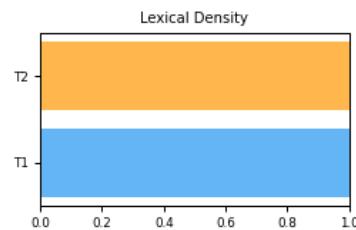
than to the people

;

; a course which turned out advantageous

whether this, however, was of use

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to them or not

, depended on whether

,

accordingly as

the prince knew how to maintain

his reputation with

authority over

them.

From these causes it

resulted

arose

that Marcus, Pertinax, and Alexander,

being all

men

of modest life, lovers of justice, enemies

of

to

cruelty,

humane and

benign, had all

benignant, came to

a sad

ending

end

except Marcus

. Marcus

; he

alone

lived and died

in honour,

honoured,

because he

had

succeeded to the

empire

throne

by

hereditary

right and did not owe it

title,

and owed nothing

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



either to the soldiers or

to

the

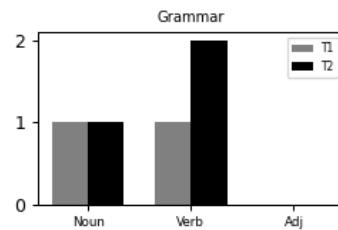
people

; besides which, possessing

; and afterwards,

being possessed of

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



many virtues which made him

revered,

respected, he always

he

kept both

parties

orders

in their

place as long as

places whilst

he lived and was

never

neither hated

either hated or

nor

despised. But Pertinax was created emperor against the

will

wishes

of the soldiers, who being accustomed to live licentiously under  
Commodus, could not

put up with endure  
the honest life to which Pertinax  
wished to

limit them, so that having made himself reduce them; thus,  
hated, and to this having given cause for hatred, to which  
contempt being added because hatred there was added contempt  
for his old age,

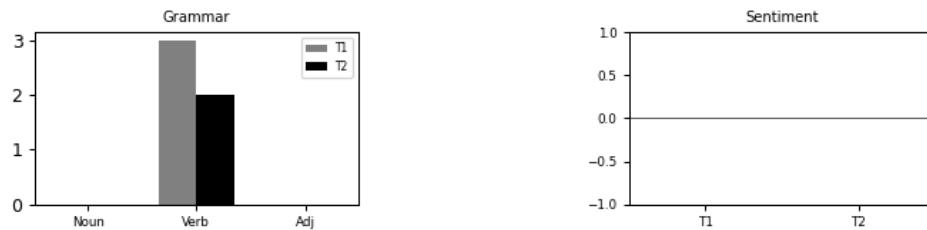
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



. Whence it may be seen

. And here it should be noted

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



that hatred

is

gained

acquired

as much by good works as by

evil, and

bad ones,

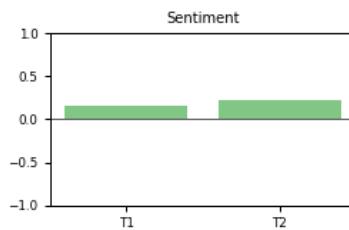
therefore, as I said

before, a prince

who wishes to maintain the

wishing to keep his

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



state is

very

often forced to

do evil, for when that

party, whether populace, soldiery, or nobles,

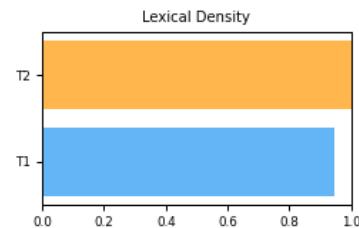
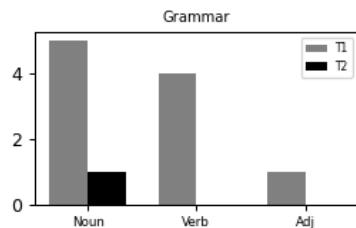
body

whichever it be that you consider necessary

to you for keeping your

position,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



is corrupt

, you must follow its humour and satisfy it,

whom you think you have need of to

and

maintain

in that case

yourself—it may be either the people or the

soldiers or the nobles—you

have to submit to its humours and to gratify

them, and then

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



good works will

be inimical to you.

do you harm.

But let us come to

Alexander, who was

a man

of such

great

goodness, that among

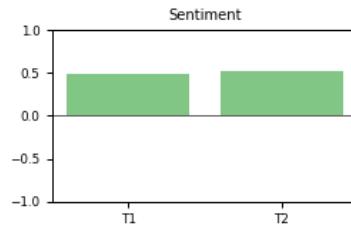
other things for which

the other praises which are accorded him is

he is praised, it is said

this,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



that in the fourteen years

that he reigned

he held the empire

no one was

ever

put to death by him

without a fair trial.

unjudged;

Nevertheless,

being considered effeminate, and a man who allowed himself to be

ruled

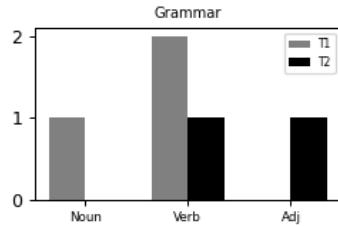
governed

by his mother

, and having thus fallen into contempt,

, he became despised,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the army

conspired against him and

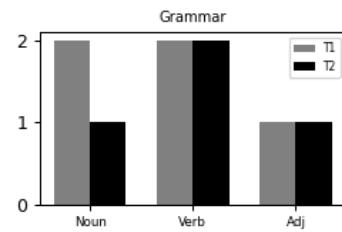
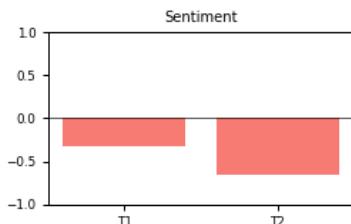
killed him. Looking, on the other hand,

murdered him.

at the qualities

Turning now to the opposite characters

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



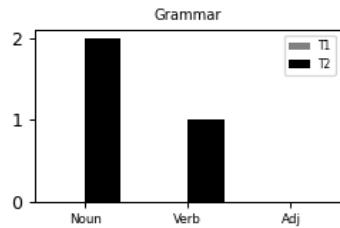
of Commodus, Severus, Antoninus

, extremely

Caracalla, and Maximinus, you will find

them all

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



cruel

and rapacious

;

-men who,

to satisfy

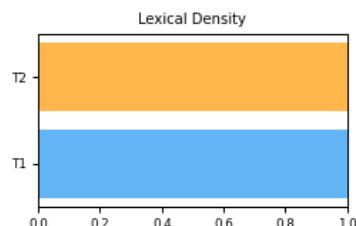
the soldiers there was no injury which

their soldiers, did not hesitate to

they would not inflict on

commit every kind of iniquity against

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the people, and all except Severus

ended

, came to a bad end; but in Severus there was

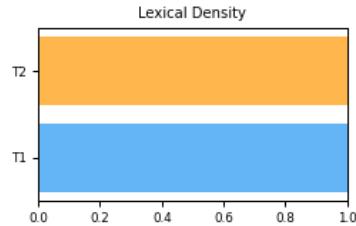
badly. Severus, however, had such abilities

so much valour

that by maintaining

that, keeping

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the

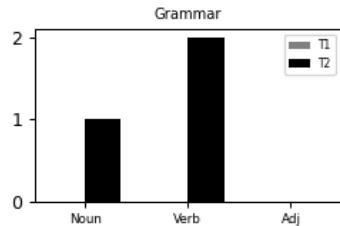
soldiers friendly

to

, although the people were oppressed

by

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



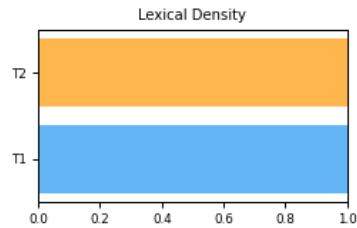
him, he

was able to reign happily, although he

reigned successfully;

oppressed the people,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



for his

virtues

valour

made him so

admirable

much

admired

in the

sight

both

of the soldiers and

the

people that the latter were

, as it

kept in a way

were,

astonished and

stupefied, while awed and

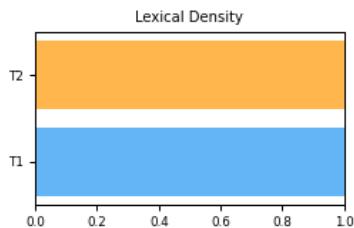
the former

were

respectful and

contented. As the deeds satisfied. And because the actions

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of this

ruler were great for man, as

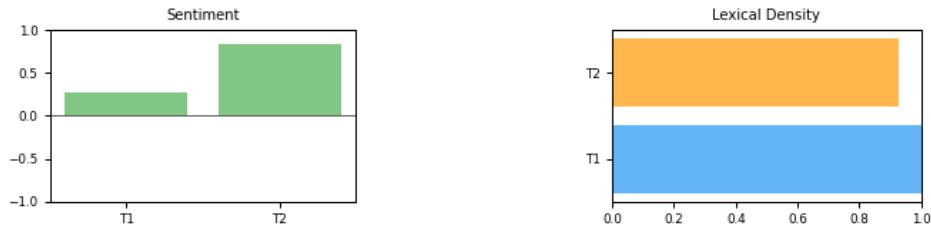
a new prince

, I , were

will briefly show how well he could use the great, I wish to show briefly that he knew

qualities of well how to counterfeit

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the fox and

the lion

, whose

, which

natures, as I said

before,

above,

it is necessary for a prince

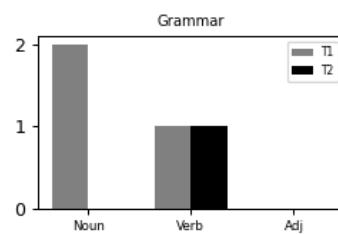
to imitate. Knowing the sloth of the Emperor Julian

, Severus, who was

, he persuaded

leader of

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

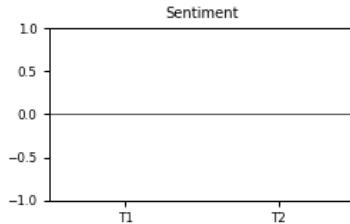


the army in

Slavonia, persuaded the troops

Sclavonia, of which he was captain,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



that it would be

well

right

to go to Rome

to

and

avenge the death of Pertinax, who had been

slain

killed

by the

Imperial guard,

praetorian soldiers;

and under this pretext, without

revealing his

appearing to

### aspirations

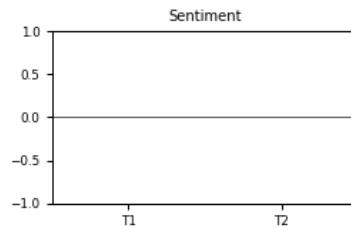
to the throne

aspire

, marched with his army to

, he moved the army on

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



Rome and

was in

reached

Italy before

his design

it

was known

1

that he had started.

## On his arrival

in

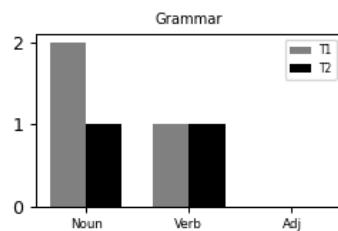
at

## Rome the senate

, through fear,  
elected him emperor

through fear, and Julian died. and killed Julian. After this

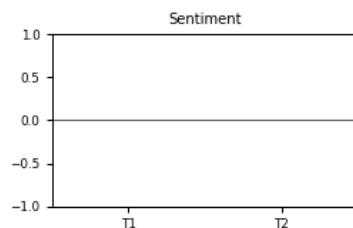
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



There remained

after this beginning for Severus, who wished to make himself  
master of the  
whole empire,

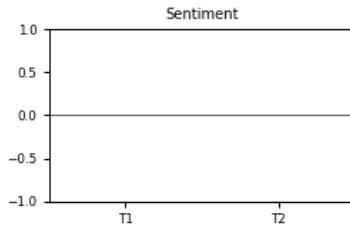
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



two difficulties

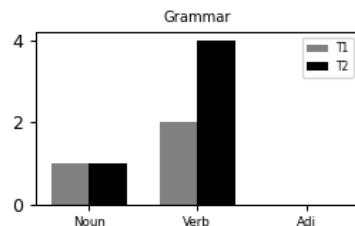
to be faced by Severus before ;  
he could obtain the whole control of the  
empire:

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



one in Asia, where  
Nigrinus, Niger,  
head of the Asiatic  
armies, had declared himself army, had caused himself to be proclaimed

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



emperor; the  
other in the west

from Albinus,  
where Albinus was,  
who also aspired to the  
empire.

And

as he

judged  
considered  
it dangerous to

show  
declare  
himself hostile to both, he decided  
to attack

Nigrinus and  
Niger and to  
deceive Albinus, to

whom  
the latter  
he wrote that

having  
,

been  
being

elected emperor by the senate he

wished

was willing

to share that dignity

with him

; he

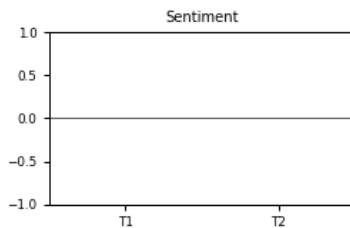
and

sent him the title of

Cæsar and, by deliberation of

Caesar; and, moreover, that

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the

senate

, he was declared

had made Albinus

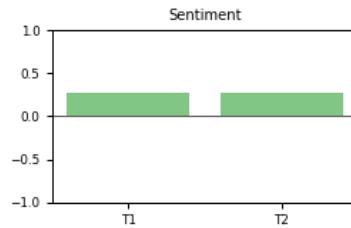
his colleague

; all of which was accepted

; which things were accepted

by Albinus

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



as

true

by Albinus. But when

. But after

Severus had

defeated

conquered

and killed

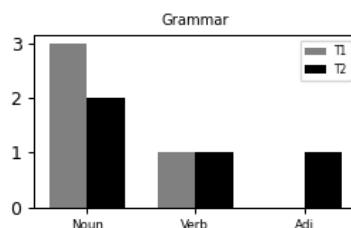
Nigrinus,

Niger,

and pacified things in the East,

and settled oriental affairs,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



he returned to Rome and

charged

complained to

Albinus in

the senate

with having, unmindful of

that Albinus, little recognizing

the benefits

that he had

received

from him

, traitorously

, had by treachery

sought to

assassinate

murder

him, and

stated that

for this

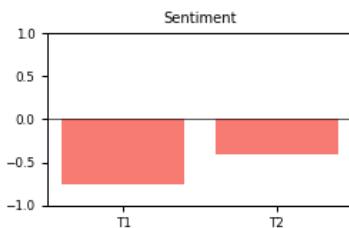
ingratitude

he

was

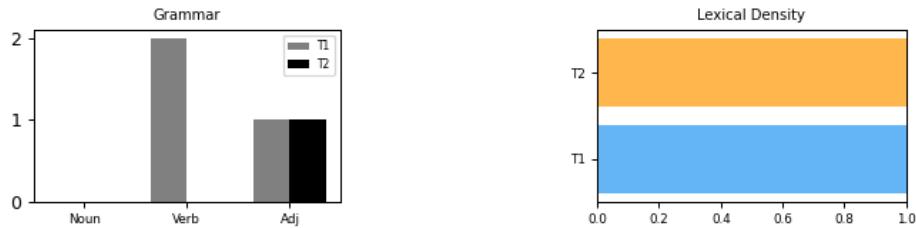
therefore obliged to go and punish his  
ingratitude. He then went  
to France to meet him, and there deprived  
him of both his position  
and his life. Whoever examines in detail  
compelled to punish him. Afterwards he  
sought him  
out in France, and took from him his  
government and life. He who will,  
therefore, carefully examine

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the actions of  
Severus, this man  
will  
find him  
to have been a very ferocious a  
most valiant

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



lion and

an extremely astute

a most cunning fox; he will find him

fox, and will see him to have been

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



feared and respected by

all

every one,

and not

hated by the army; and

will

it need

not be

surprised

wondered at

that he, a new man

, should

, was

have been

able to hold the empire so well

, since his great reputation

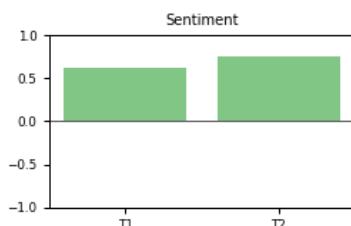
,

defended him always

because his supreme renown always

protected him

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



from that hatred

that his rapacity

which

the people

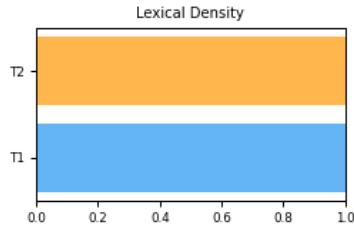
might have

produced in the people. But Antoninus

conceived against him for his violence.

But

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



his son

was also a man of great

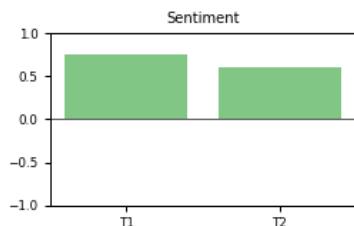
Antoninus was a most eminent man, and had

ability, and possessed qualities that rendered

very excellent

qualities, which made

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



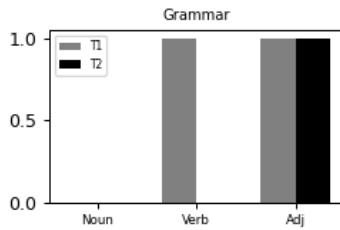
him admirable in the

sight of the people and

also made him popular with

acceptable to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



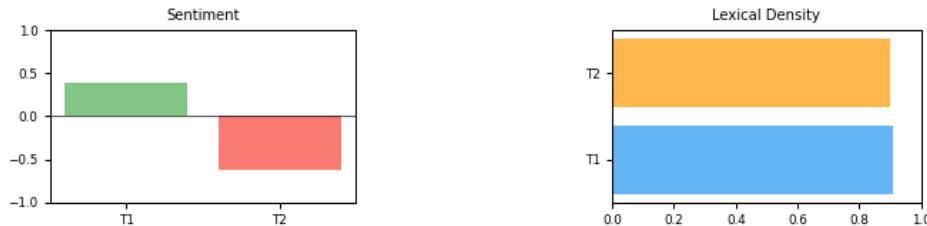
the soldiers, for

he was a

military man, capable of enduring the most  
extreme hardships,  
disdainful of

warlike man, most enduring of  
fatigue, a despiser of all

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



delicate food, and

every other luxury, which made him  
loved by all

other luxuries, which  
caused him to be beloved by

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the armies

. However,

. Nevertheless,

his ferocity and

cruelty

cruelties

were so

great and

so

unheard of

, through his having, after executing many

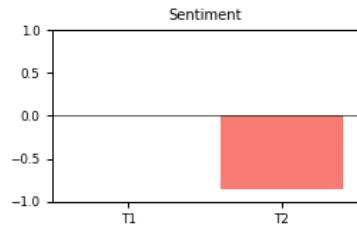
that, after endless single

private

murders, he killed

individuals, caused

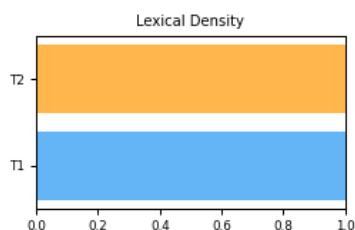
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



a large  
part number  
of the  
population people  
of Rome and all  
that those  
of Alexandria  
to be killed, that .  
he became hated by  
all the the whole  
world and  
began to be also  
feared by those

about he had around  
him to such an extent that he was  
finally killed by a centurion murdered

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



in the midst of his army

. Whence it is to by a centurion. And here it must

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

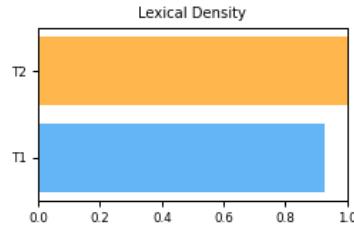


be noted that

such-like deaths, which are deliberately

deliberate  
action of a determined man,  
inflicted with a resolved and  
desperate courage,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



cannot be avoided by princes

, since , because

any one

who does not fear

death himself to die

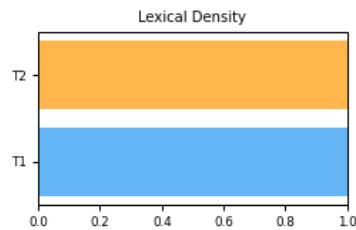
can inflict

it, them;

but a prince

need not may fear them the  
fear much on this account, as such actions are less because they are very  
extremely

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



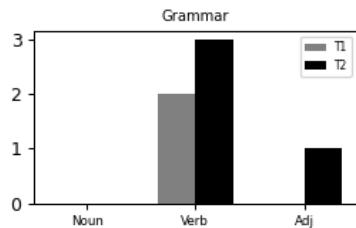
rare. He

must

has only to be careful not to do

only guard against committing

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



any grave injury to

any one he makes use

those whom he employs

of,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

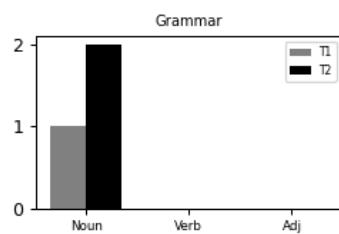


or has

about him for his service, like

around him in the  
service of the state.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



Antoninus had

done, having

not taken this care, but had

caused the death with contumely of the

contumeliously killed a

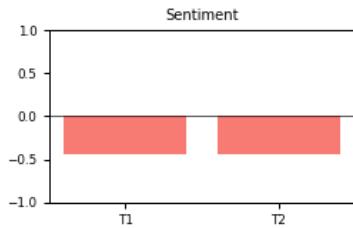
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



brother of that centurion

, and , whom also he daily  
also threatened him every day, although he threatened, yet retained  
still retained him

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



in his

bodyguard, which

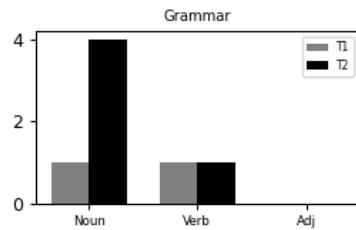
, as it turned out,

was a

foolish and dangerous rash  
thing to do

, as the fact , and proved the emperor's ruin.  
proved.

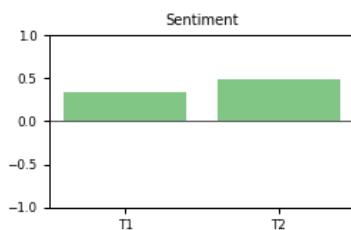
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



But let us come to Commodus

, who might easily have kept , to whom it should have been very easy to  
hold

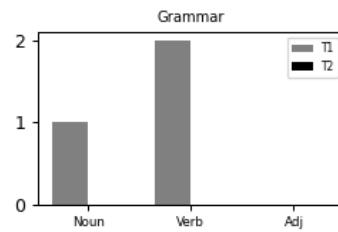
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the  
empire

, having succeeded to it by heredity, , for,

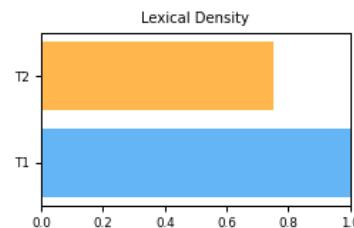
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



being the son of Marcus

, he had inherited it, and  
and it would have sufficed for him he had only

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



to follow in the

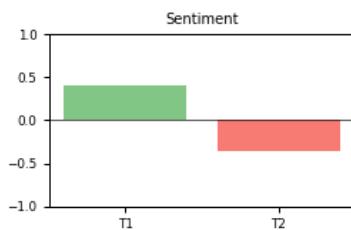
steps footsteps  
of his father

to

have satisfied both the please his  
people and

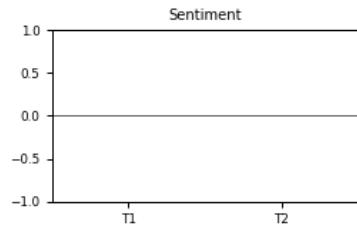
the  
soldiers. But being  
of a by nature  
cruel and  
bestial disposition, in order to be able to brutal, he gave  
exercise his himself up to amusing  
rapacity on the people, he sought to amuse

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the soldiers and  
render corrupting them, so that he  
them licentious; might indulge his rapacity upon the people;

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



on the other hand

, by

not maintaining his dignity

,

,

by

often descending

into

to

the theatre to

fight

compete

with gladiators and

committing other contemptible actions,

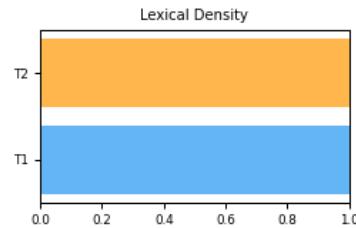
doing other vile things,

little worthy of the imperial

dignity, he became despicable in the eyes of

majesty, he fell into contempt with

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the soldiers, and being

hated

on the one hand

by one party

and despised

on

by

the other, he was conspired

against and

killed. There

was killed.

It

remains to

be described

discuss

the character of

Maximinus. He was

an extremely a very  
warlike man, and

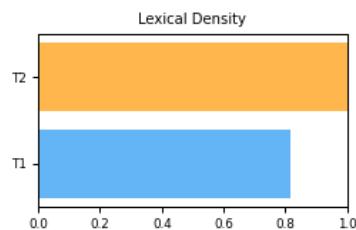
as the armies

were , being disgusted  
annoyed  
with the effeminacy of Alexander

, which we ,  
of whom I  
have already spoken

of, he was after the death of the latter elected , killed him and elected Maximinus to the  
emperor. throne. This

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



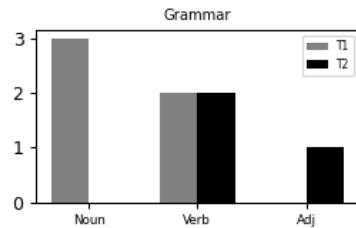
He did not

enjoy it possess  
for long

, as , for  
two things made him hated and despised: the  
one his

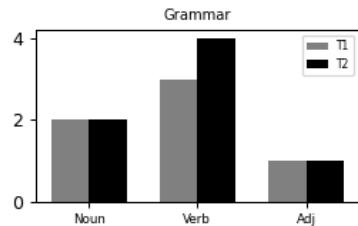
base origin, as he had been a shepherd having kept sheep

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



in Thrace, which  
was brought  
generally known and caused great disdain on him into contempt (it being well known to  
all sides; all, and considered a great  
indignity by every one), and

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



the other

, his having

because he had

at the

commencement of his rule accession to

his dominions

deferred going to Rome

to take and taking

possession of the Imperial seat

, and had obtained ; he had also gained

a reputation

for

great cruelty, the utmost ferocity

by

having through his prefects in Rome and

other parts

elsewhere in

of

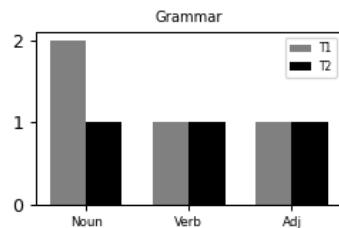
the empire

committed many acts of cruelty.

,

practised many cruelties, so that

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



The whole world

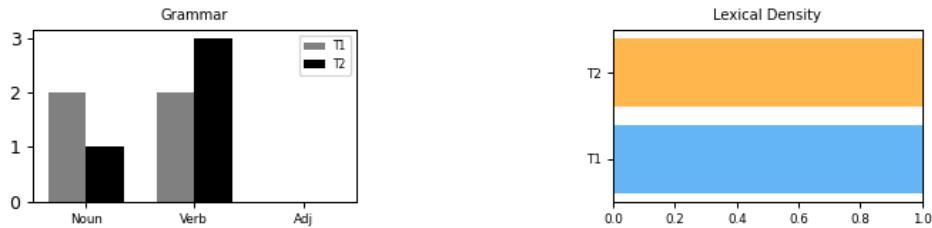
being

was moved to anger at

thus moved by indignation for the baseness

the meanness

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of his

blood, and also by

birth and to fear at his barbarity. First Africa

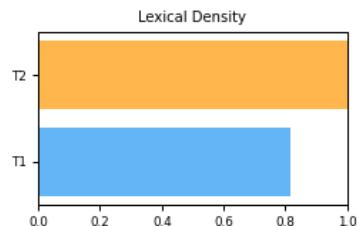
the hatred caused by fear of his ferocity, he

rebelled, then

was conspired against

first by Africa and afterwards by

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the senate

and

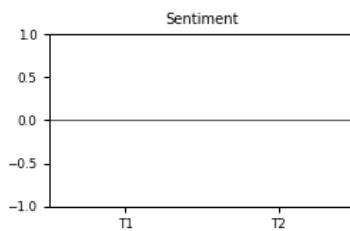
with

all the people of Rome

and

Italy. all Italy  
 conspired against him, to which may be added

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

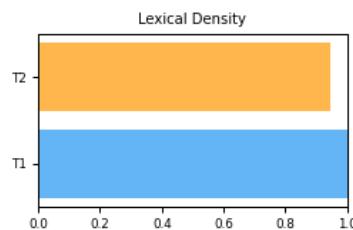


His own army

also joined them, for ; this latter,  
 besieging Aquileia and

finding it difficult to take, they became meeting with difficulties in taking it, were  
 enraged at his cruelty, and disgusted with his cruelties, and fearing him  
 seeing that he had less when they found

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



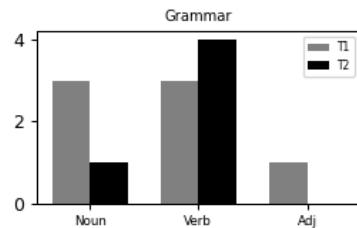
so many

enemies, they feared him less and put him to death. I will not speak of Heliogabalus, of

against him, murdered him.

I do not wish to discuss Heliogabalus,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



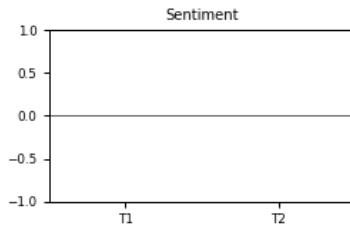
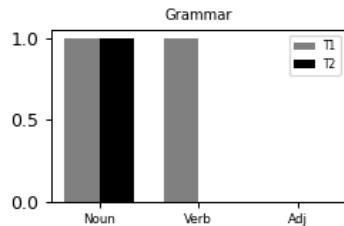
Macrinus, or Julian, who  
being

entirely thoroughly  
contemptible were

immediately suppressed, quickly wiped out;  
but I will

come to the conclusion of bring

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



this discourse

to a conclusion

by saying that

the princes of

princes in our times have this

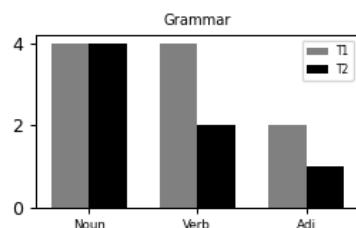
our time have less difficulty than these of

difficulty of giving inordinate satisfaction to

being obliged to satisfy in

an extraordinary degree

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



their soldiers in

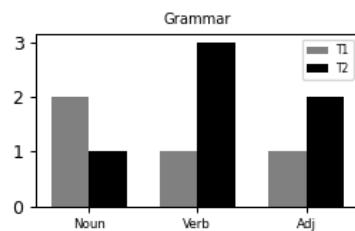
their states; for although

a far

they must have a certain consideration for them, yet it

less degree, because, notwithstanding one has to give them some indulgence, that

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



is soon

settled, for

done;

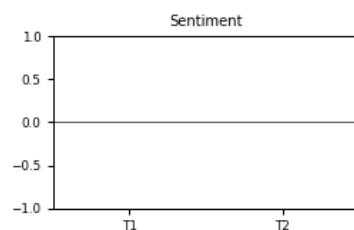
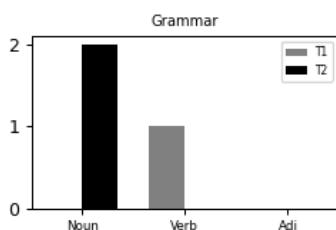
none of these princes have armies that are

inextricably

veterans in the governance and

bound up with the

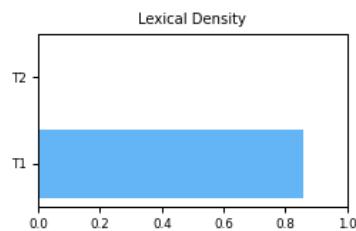
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



administration of

the government and the rule of  
their

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



provinces as were the armies of the Roman empire; and

therefore whereas  
if it was then

more

necessary to

satisfy give satisfaction to  
the soldiers

rather than than to  
the  
people, it

was because the soldiers could do more than is now  
 the people; now,  
 it is

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



more necessary to all princes, except the Turk and the Soldan,  
 to satisfy the people

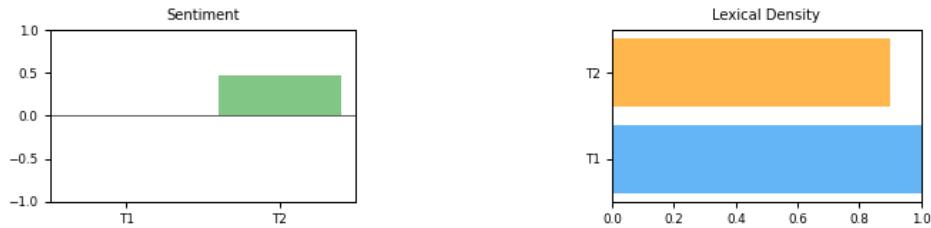
than rather  
 the soldiers

, for , because  
 the people

can do more are the more  
 than the soldiers. I except powerful.

From the above I have excepted

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the Turk

, because he , who

always keeps

about round

him twelve thousand infantry and fifteen thousand cavalry, on which

depend the security and strength of

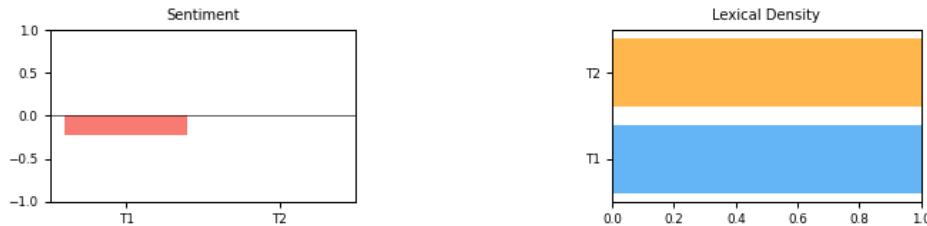
his the

kingdom; and it is necessary

for him to postpone every other consideration that,

of putting aside every consideration for

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the people

to , he should  
keep  
them

friendly. It is the same with his friends.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



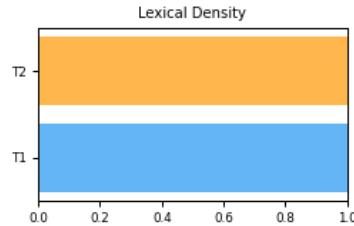
the kingdom of the Soldan

, which is similar;  
being entirely in the hands of

the soldiers, he is bound to keep their  
friendship regardless of

soldiers, it follows again that, without regard  
to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



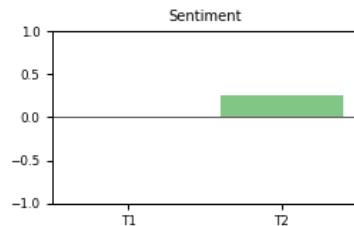
the people

. And it is to be noted that this

, he must keep them his friends. But you

must note that the

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



state of the Soldan is

different from that of

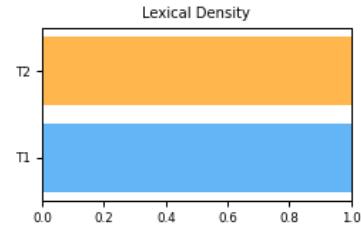
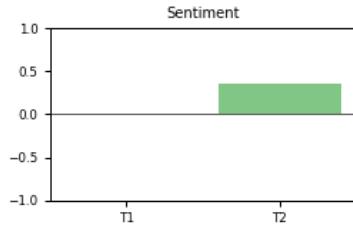
unlike

all other

princes, being  
similar to

principalities, for the reason that  
it is like

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the Christian pontificate, which cannot be called either  
a hereditary kingdom  
an  
hereditary  
or a

new one, for  
newly formed principality; because  
the sons of the

dead  
old  
prince  
are not

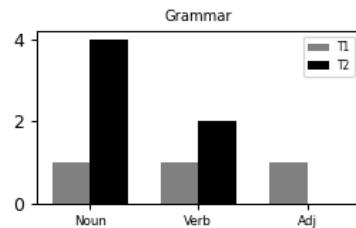
his  
the  
heirs, but he who is elected to that position by those  
who have authority. And

as this order is ancient

the sons remain only noblemen. And this

being an ancient custom,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



it cannot be called

a new

kingdom, there being

principality,

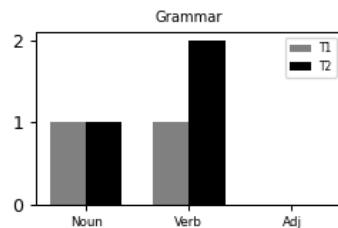
because there are

none of

these difficulties which exist

those difficulties in it that are met with

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



in

new ones

; as

; for

although the prince is new, the

rules of that state are

constitution of the state

is

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

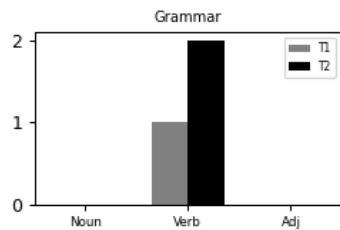


old and

arranged

it is framed so as

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



to receive him as if he were

their  
its

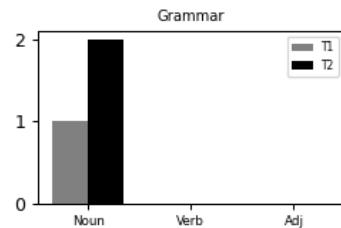
hereditary lord.

But returning to

the subject of our discourse,

the subject of our discourse,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



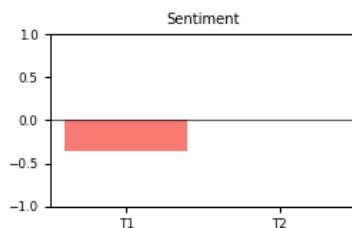
I say that whoever

studies the preceding will

argument will see consider it will acknowledge

consider it will acknowledge

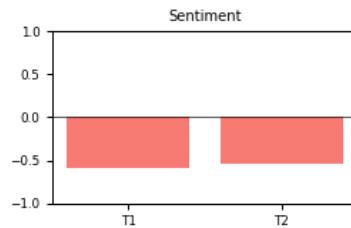
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



that either hatred or contempt

were the causes of has been  
the ruin of the emperors named, and will also fatal to the above-named emperors, and it  
observe will be recognized also

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



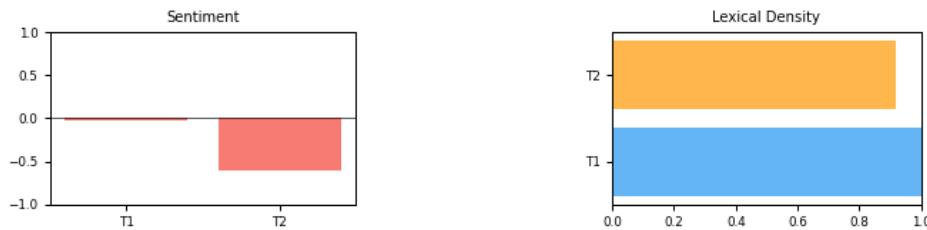
how it  
came about happened that, a number  
that, some  
of them acting in one way and

some a number  
in another

, in both ways , only one in each way came to a happy end  
there were some who had a fortunate and and the rest to  
others an unfortunate ending. unhappy ones. Because it would have been

As useless and dangerous for

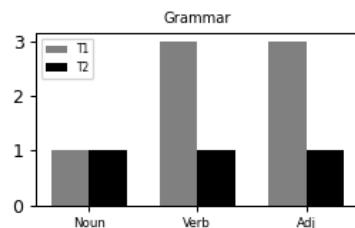
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



### Pertinax and Alexander

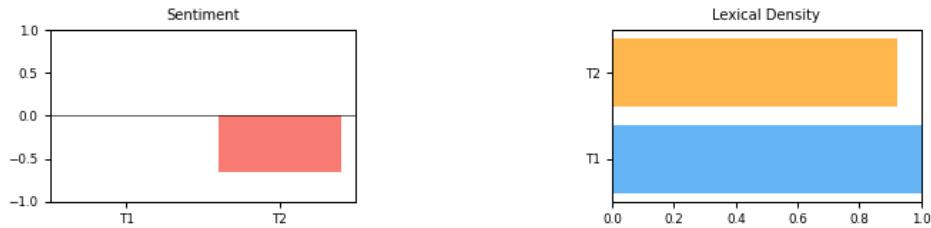
were both new rulers, it was useless and , being new princes, to injurious for them to try and

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



imitate Marcus, who was  
a hereditary heir to the principality; and likewise it would  
prince; and similarly with have been utterly  
destructive to

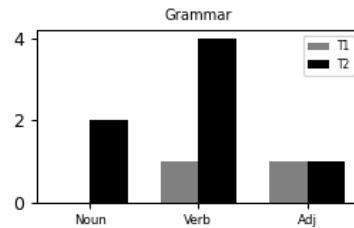
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



### Caracalla, Commodus, and Maximinus

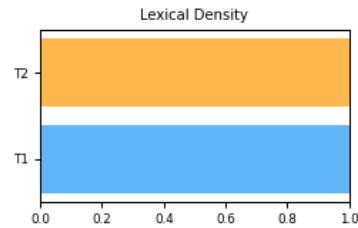
it was to have imitated  
 pernicious for Severus, they not having sufficient valour to  
 enable

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



them to  
 imitate Severus, as they had not sufficient tread  
 ability to follow

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

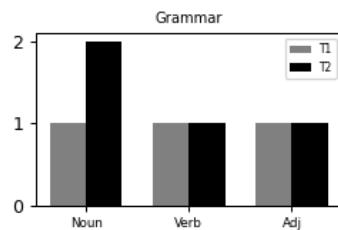


in his footsteps

. Thus a new prince

. Therefore a prince, new to the principality,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



cannot imitate

the actions of Marcus

, in his dominions, nor

, nor, again,

is it necessary

for him to

to follow

imitate

those of Severus; but he

must take from Severus those portions parts which that are necessary to found his state, and from Marcus those useful proper for conserving to keep is already established a state that may already be stable and and secure. firm.

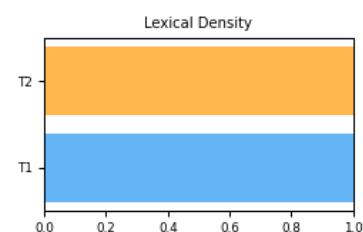
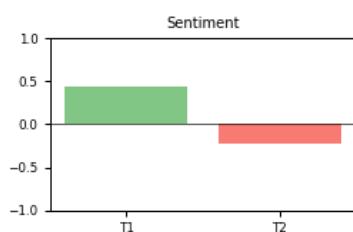
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



## CHAPTER XX

WHETHER ARE  
FORTRESSES AND  
MANY  
OTHER THINGS  
TO  
WHICH PRINCES OFTEN  
MAKE ARE USEFUL RESORT,  
OR INJURIOUS ADVANTAGEOUS OR HURTFUL?

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

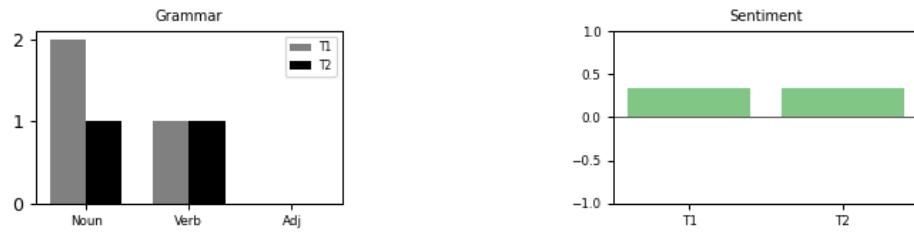


1.

Some princes

, in order to securely hold their possessions, , so as to hold securely the state,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



have

disarmed their subjects

, some ;

others have kept their subject

lands towns distracted by factions;

divided into parts,

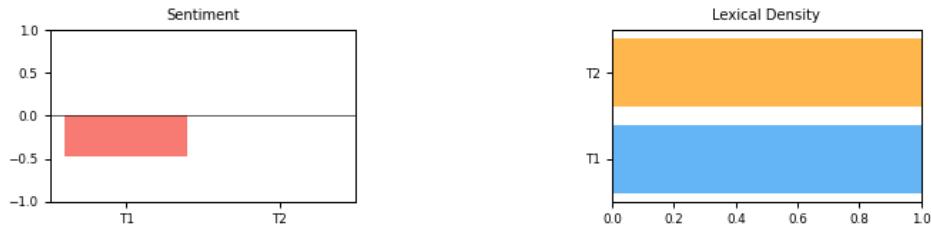
others have

fomented fostered

enmities against themselves,

others have





and destroyed them. And although one cannot

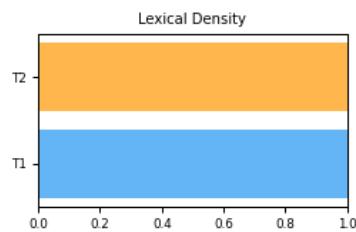
pronounce a

give a final judgment on

definite judgment as to

all of

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



these things

without going into

unless one possesses

the particulars

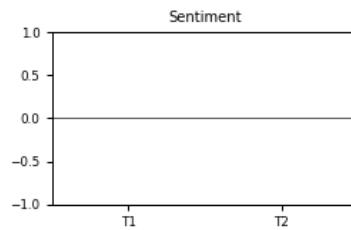
of

the state to which such a deliberation is

those

states in which a decision has

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



to be

applied, still

made, nevertheless

I

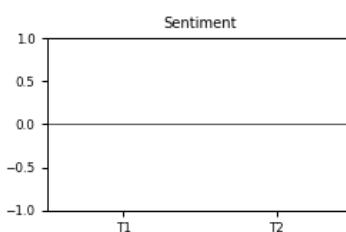
will speak

in such a broad way

as

comprehensively

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



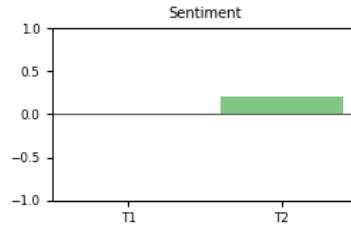
as the matter

will permit of.

of itself will admit.

## 2. There never was

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

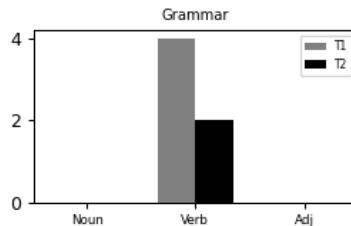


A new prince

has never been known to disarm

who has disarmed

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



his subjects

, on the ; rather

contrary,

when he has found them disarmed he has always armed them

, for , because,

by arming them

these , those

arms become

your own, those that you suspected yours, those men who were distrusted

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



become faithful and those

that who

were faithful

remain are kept

so, and

from being your

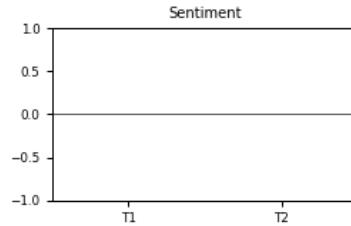
merely

subjects become your

partisans. And since all the

adherents. And whereas all

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



subjects

cannot be armed

, when you benefit those that you arm, you

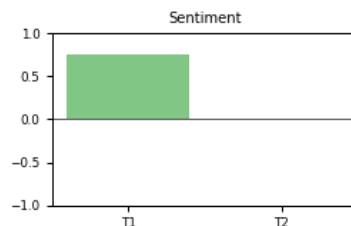
, yet when those whom you do arm are

can deal more

benefited,

safely with

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



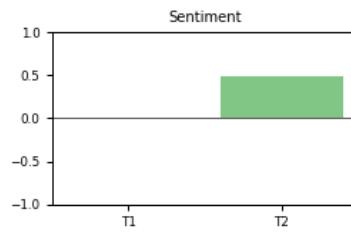
the others

;

can be

handled more freely,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

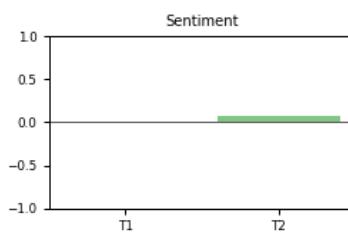


and this

different treatment that they notice  
renders your men more obliged to you, the  
others will

difference in their treatment, which they  
quite understand, makes the former your  
dependents, and the latter,  
considering it to be necessary that those who  
have the most danger and  
service should have the most reward,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

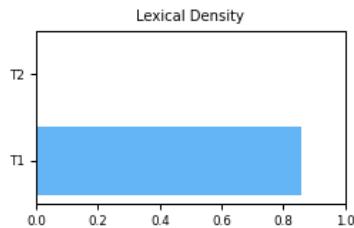


excuse you

,

judging that those have necessarily greater merit who have greater danger and heavier duties.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



But when you disarm them, you

commence to at once

offend them

and show by showing

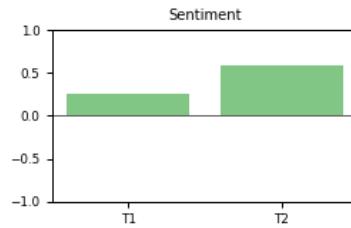
that you distrust them either

through for

cowardice or

lack of confidence, and both for want of loyalty, and either

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



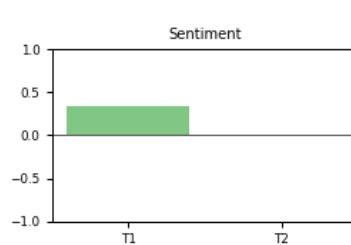
of these opinions

generate breeds  
hatred against  
you. And

as because  
you cannot remain unarmed

, you are obliged to resort to a , it  
mercenary militia, of which we have already follows that you turn to mercenaries, which  
stated the value; and are of the character  
already shown;

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



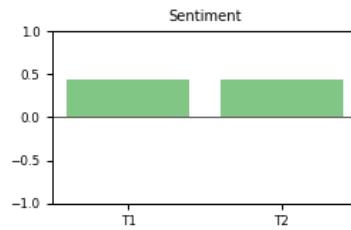
even

if

it were good it cannot

they should be good they would not

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



be sufficient

in number

to defend you against

powerful enemies and

suspected subjects. But,

distrusted subjects.

Therefore,

as I have said, a new

prince in a new

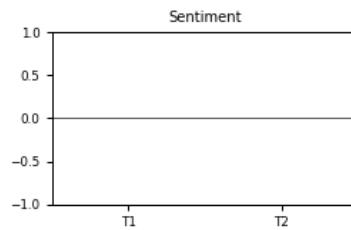
dominion always has his subjects armed.

principality has

History is

always distributed arms. Histories are

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



full

of

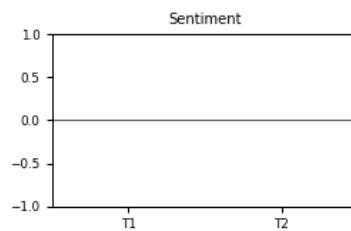
such

examples. But when a prince acquires a new state

as an addition

, which he adds as a province

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



to his old one, then it is necessary to disarm

the men of

that state, except those

who

have been his adherents

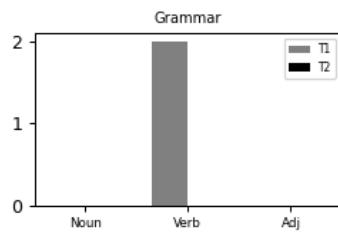
in acquiring it

have sided with you; and even these one

; and these again, with

must, when

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



time and opportunity

serve, render weak

, should be rendered soft

and effeminate, and

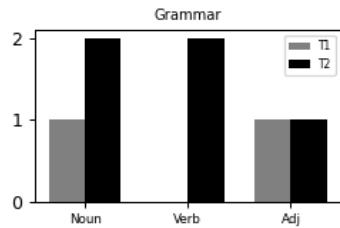
arrange

matters

things so

should be managed in such a way

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

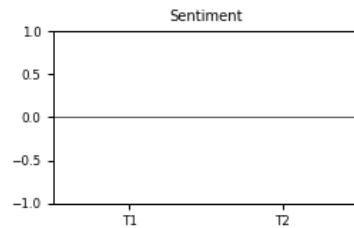
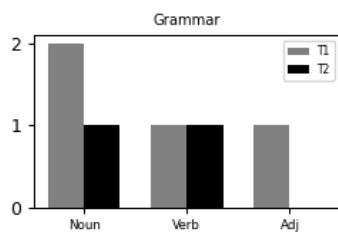


that all the

arms of the new state are

armed men

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



in the

hands of

state

shall be

your

own soldiers who in your old state

live

were living

near you

3.

Our forefathers and those who were

esteemed wise used

reckoned wise, were accustomed

to say that

it was necessary to hold Pistoia by

means of factious

factions

and Pisa

with

by

fortresses, and

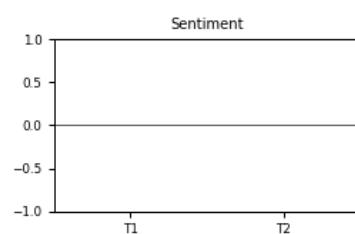
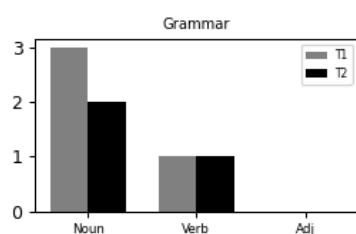
for this purpose they fomented differences

with this idea they fostered quarrels

among their

subjects

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



in some

town in order to possess it

of their

tributary towns so as to keep possession of

them the

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

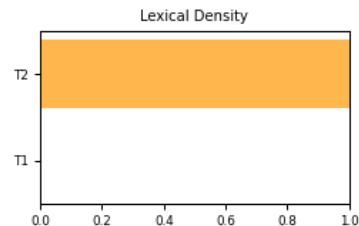


more easily. This

,

may have been well enough

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



in

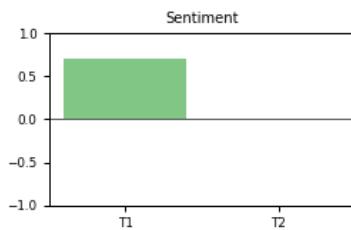
those

days times

when Italy was

fairly divided, was doubtless well done, but in a way  
does not seem to me to be a good precept for balanced, but  
the present time, for

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



I do

not believe that

the divisions thus created ever do any good; it can be accepted as a precept for  
on the to-day, because I do not believe that factions  
contrary can ever be of use;  
rather

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



it is certain that when the enemy

approaches, the cities thus

comes upon you in divided

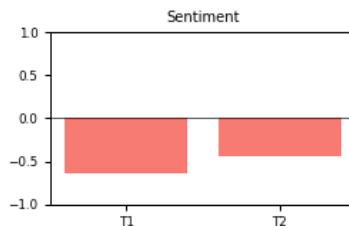
divided will be at once lost, for the weaker

cities you are quickly lost, because the

faction

weakest party

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



will always

side

assist the outside forces

with the enemy

and the other will not be able to

stand.

resist.

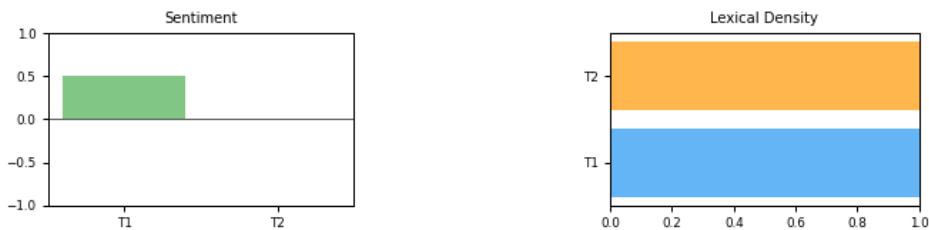
The Venetians

, moved, as  
actuated,

I believe, by the

aforesaid motives, cherished the Guelf above reasons, fostered the  
Guelph

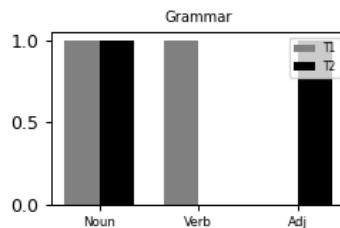
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



and Ghibelline factions in  
the cities subject to them,

their tributary cities;

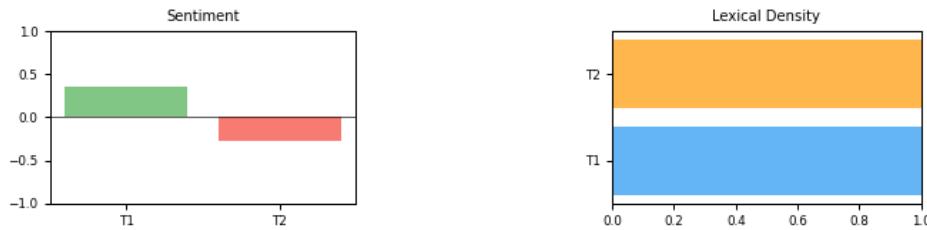
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



and although  
they never allowed them to come to bloodshed

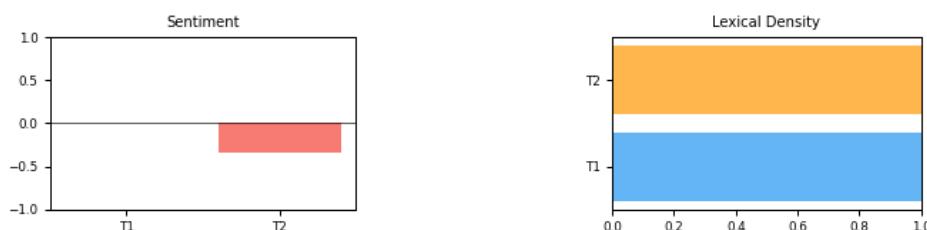
, they yet encouraged , yet they nursed these  
these differences among disputes amongst

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



them, so that the citizens  
, being occupied in , distracted by their  
their own quarrels, might not act differences, should not unite

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

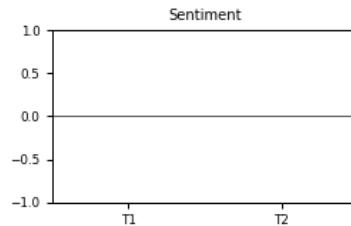


against them . This, however, . Which, as we saw,  
did not

avail them anything, as was seen when,

afterwards turn out as expected, because,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



after the

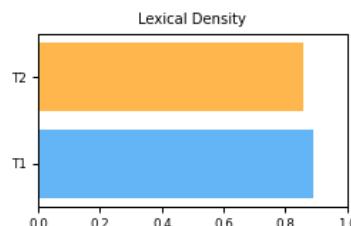
defeat of Vaila,

rout at Vaila, one

a part of those subjects immediately

party at once

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



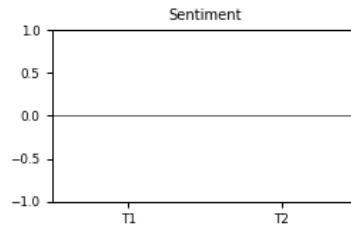
took courage and

took from them

seized the

the whole

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



state. Such methods

, besides, argue

argue,

therefore,

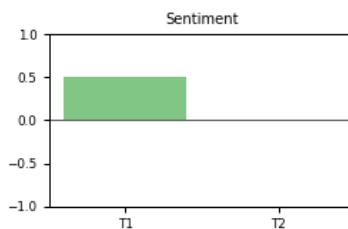
weakness in

a prince,

the prince, because these factions

for in a strong government such dissensions

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



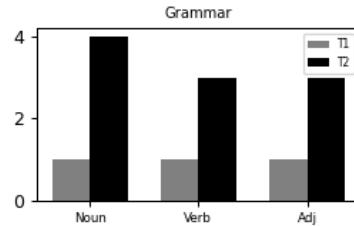
will never be permitted

.

in a vigorous principality; such methods for  
They are profitable only in time enabling one the

more easily to manage subjects are only  
useful in times

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of peace

, as by means of them it is , but  
easy to manage one's subjects, but when it if war comes this policy proves fallacious.  
comes to war, the fallacy 4.  
of such a policy is at once shown.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



Without doubt, princes become great  
when they overcome

the

difficulties and

opposition,

obstacles by which they are confronted,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



and therefore fortune,

especially when

it wants to render

she desires to make

a new prince great, who has

greater

a greater necessity to earn renown than an

need of gaining a great reputation than a

hereditary one, causes

hereditary prince, raises up

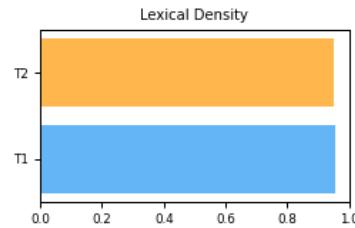
enemies to arise and form designs against

enemies and compels him to undertake wars

him, in order

against them, so

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



that he may

have

cause to overcome

the opportunity of overcoming

them, and

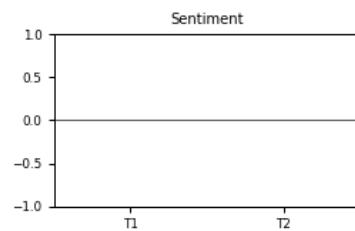
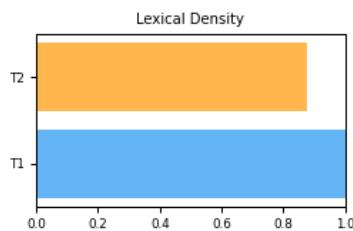
thus raise himself higher by means

by them to mount higher,

of that

as by a

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



ladder which his enemies have

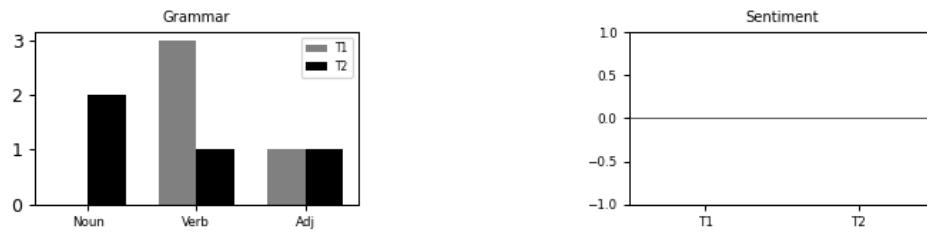
brought him. There are many who

raised. For this reason many

think therefore

consider

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



that a wise prince

ought,

when he has the

chance, to

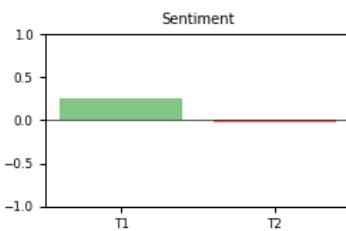
opportunity, ought with

foment astutely some enmity,

craft to foster some animosity against

himself,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



so that

by suppressing it he will augment

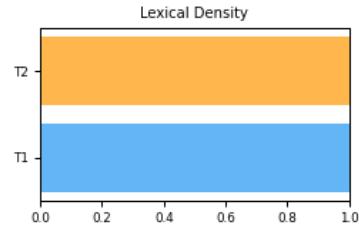
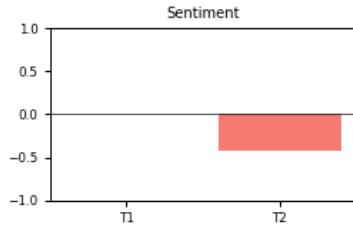
, having crushed

his greatness. Princes, and

it, his renown may rise higher.

## 5. Princes,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



especially new ones, have found more

faith

fidelity and

and more usefulness

assistance

in those men

, whom at

who in

the beginning of their

power

rule were

they regarded with suspicion, than in those

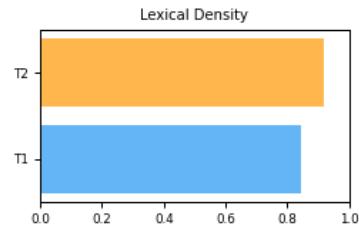
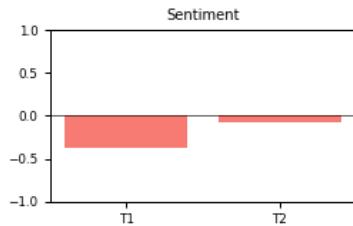
distrusted than among those who in the

they at first confided

beginning were trusted.

in.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



### Pandolfo Petrucci, Prince of Siena

, governed , ruled  
 his state more by  
 those

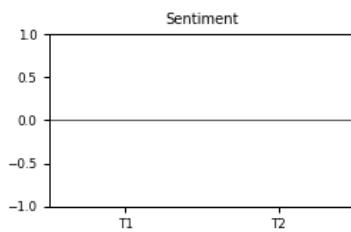
whom he suspected who had been  
 distrusted  
 than by others. But

of this we on this question one  
 cannot speak

at generally, for  
 large, as it varies

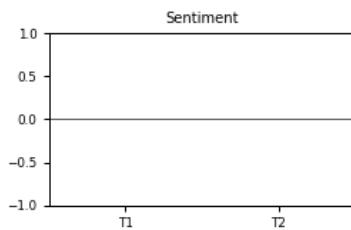
according to the subject; so much with the individual;

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



I will

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



men who at the

beginning commencement  
of a  
new government were enemies, princedom have been  
hostile,

if

they are of a

kind

description

to need

support to maintain their position, can be

assistance to support

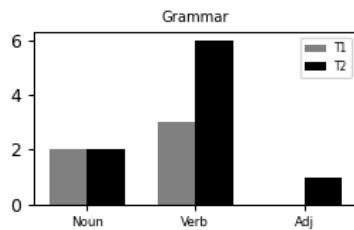
very easily gained by

themselves, can always be gained over with

the greatest ease, and they

will be tightly held to serve

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



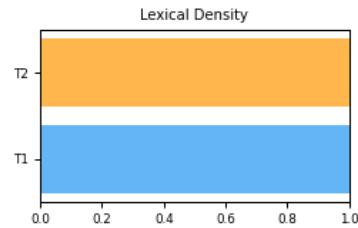
the prince

, and they are the more compelled to

with fidelity, inasmuch

serve him faithfully

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

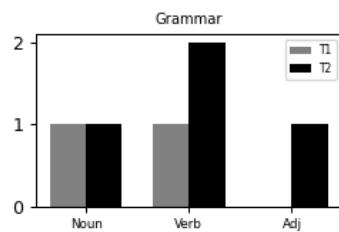


as they know

they must by their deeds cancel

it to be very necessary for them to cancel by  
deeds

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



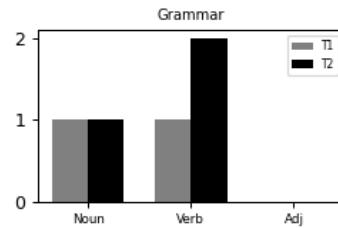
the

bad

opinion previously held

impression which he had formed

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of them, and thus the prince

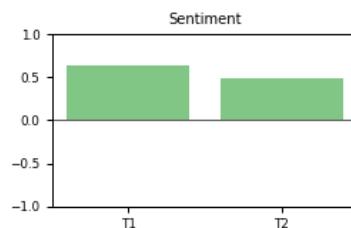
will always

always

derive greater help

extracts more profit

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



from them than from those who, serving him

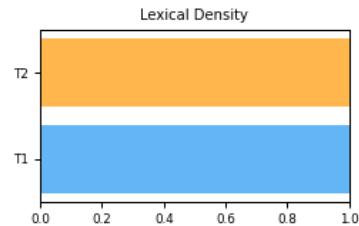
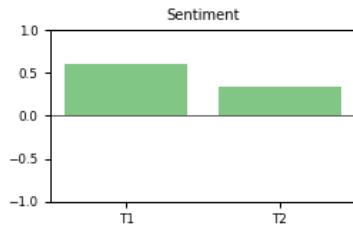
with

in too

greater security,

much security, may

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



neglect his

interest. And as

affairs. And since

the matter

requires

demands

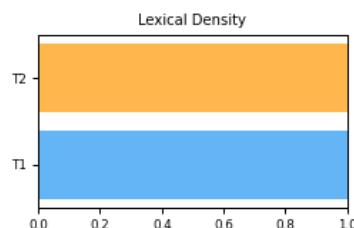
it,

I

will not omit to remind

must not fail to warn

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

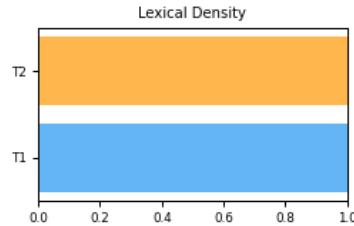


a prince who

has newly taken a state with the  
secret help of its inhabitants,

by means of secret favours  
has acquired a new state,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



that he must

consider well the motives  
that have

well consider the reasons which

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

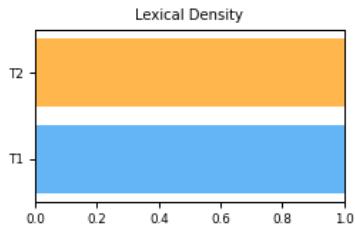
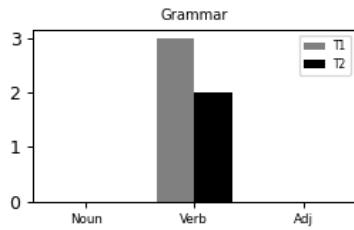


induced those

who have favoured him to do

to favour him who did

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



so, and if it

is

be not a

not

## natural affection

for

towards

him, but only

because they were not contented

discontent with their government, then

with the state as it was,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

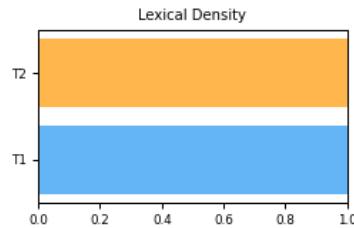
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

A stacked bar chart titled "Lexical Density". The y-axis has two categories: T2 (top) and T1 (bottom). The x-axis ranges from 0.0 to 1.0 with increments of 0.2. T2 is filled with orange, and T1 is filled with blue. The total height of the bars reaches 1.0.

he will

have only keep them friendly with

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



great trouble and difficulty

in , for

maintaining their friendship, because

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



it will be impossible

for him to to satisfy

content

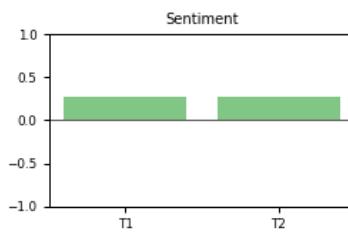
them. And

on well examining the cause of

weighing well the reasons

for

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



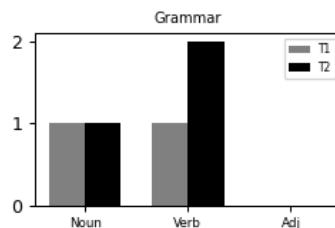
this in

the examples

those examples which can be taken

drawn

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



from ancient and modern

times it will be seen

affairs, we shall find

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



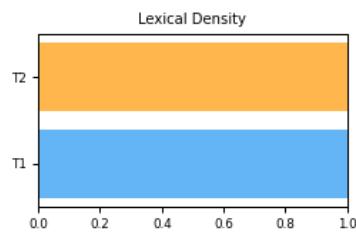
that it is

much

easier for the prince to make friends

easier to gain the friendship,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of those men who were contented

with

under the former government, and are

the previous condition and were therefore at

therefore his

first

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



enemies, than

that

of those who

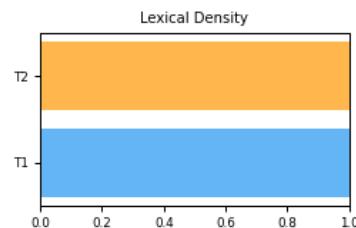
not being contented, became his friends and

, being discontented with it,

helped

were favourable to him and encouraged

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



him to

occupy it.

seize it.

6.

It has been

the custom of

a custom with

princes in order to

be able to

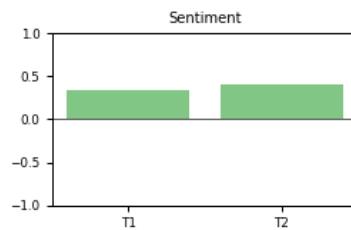
hold their states

hold securely their state, to erect fortresses,

more securely, to build fortresses that may

serve

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



as a bridle and bit

to those who

have designs

might design to work

against them, and

in order to have a secure

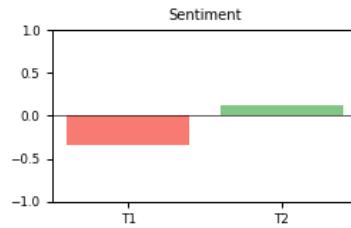
as a place of

refuge against a sudden assault. I approve

refuge from a first attack. I praise this system

this method,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



because it

was

has been

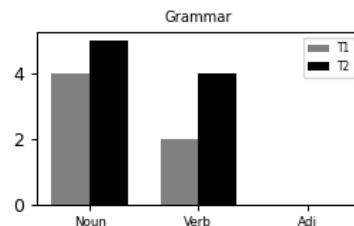
anciently used. Nevertheless, Messer Niccolo made use of formerly. Notwithstanding that,

Vitelli

Messer Nicolo Vitelli in

our times

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



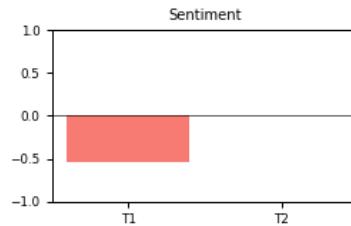
has been seen

in

to demolish

our own time to destroy

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



two fortresses in

Città

di Castello

in order

so that he might

to

keep that state

. Guid'

; Guido

Ubaldo, Duke of Urbino, on returning to his

dominions from which

dominion, whence

he had been driven by Cesare Borgia, razed to

their

the

foundations all the fortresses

of in

that province, and considered

that without them it would be more difficult

for him

to lose

again the it;

state.

The Bentivogli

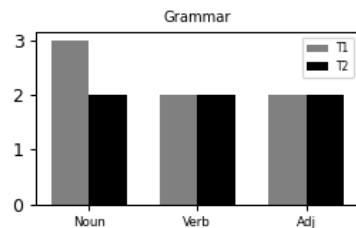
, in

returning to Bologna

, used similar measures. came to a similar decision. Fortresses,

Therefore fortresses may or may not be therefore, are useful or not  
useful

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



according to

the times; circumstances;

if they do

you

good in one way, they

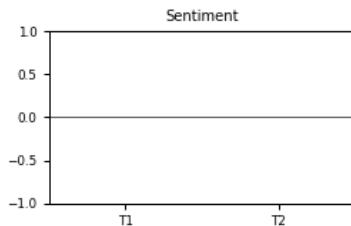
do harm injure you

in another

. And this question can be

The question may be discussed thus: a reasoned thus: the

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

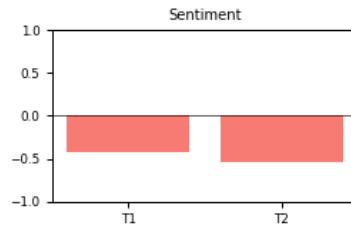


prince who

fears his own people has more to fear from the people than

more than from

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



foreigners ought to build fortresses, but he who has

greater

more to fear

fear of

from

foreigners than

of his own

from the

people ought to

do without them.

leave them alone.

The

castle of Milan built by Francesco Sforza has

given

made,

and will

give

make,

more

trouble

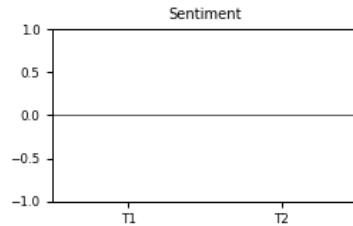
to for

the house of Sforza than any other disorder in

that state. the

Therefore state. For this reason

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the best

possible

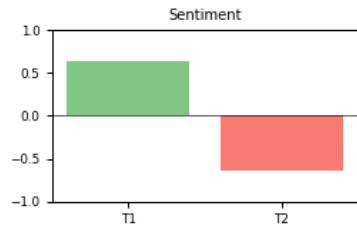
fortress is

—not

to be

found in the love of hated by

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the people

, because,

for

although you may

have fortresses hold the fortresses, yet

they will not save you if

you are

hated by

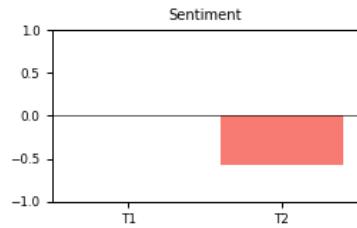
the people

. When once the people

hate you, for there will never be

wanting foreigners to assist a people who

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



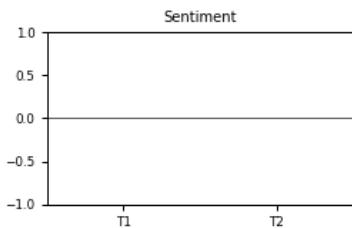
have taken arms against you

,

there will never be lacking foreigners to  
assist them.

It has not been seen

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

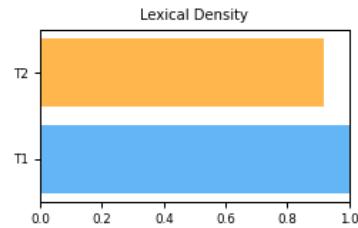


In our times

we do not see that they have profited any  
ruler, except

that such fortresses have been of use  
to any prince, unless to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

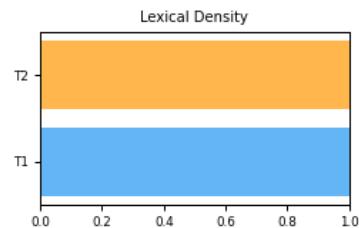
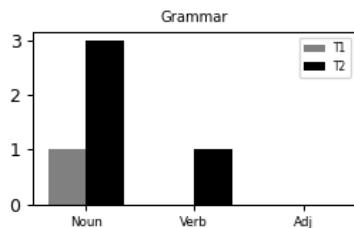


the Countess

of Forli

on the death of , [1] when the Count  
Girolamo,

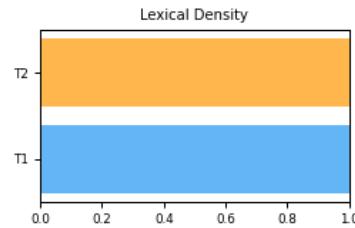
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



her consort

Count Girolamo, for , was killed; for by that means

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

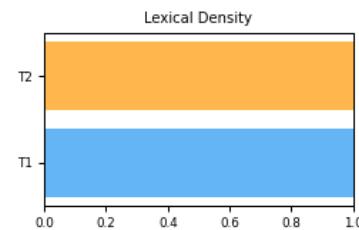
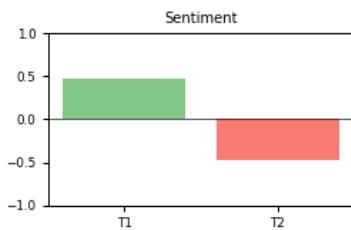


she was

thus able to  
enabled to escape withstand  
the popular

rising and await help attack and wait for assistance

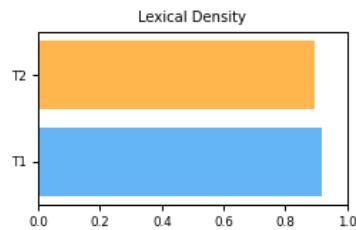
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



from Milan and

recover the state; the circumstances being thus recover her state; and the posture of  
then such that no foreigner affairs was such at that  
could time that the foreigners could not

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



assist the people. But

afterwards they

fortresses

were of little

use

value

to her

afterwards

when Cesare Borgia attacked her and

when

the people

being hostile to her

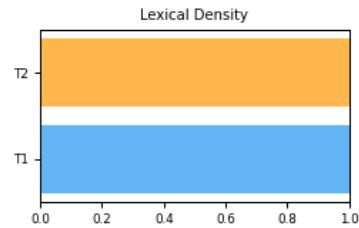
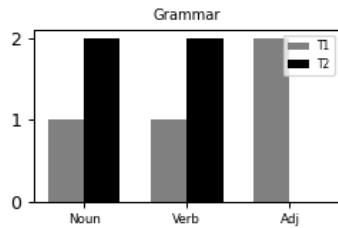
, her enemy, were allied with foreigners.

allied themselves with the foreigner. So that

Therefore,

then and before

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



it would

have been safer for her

, both then and before,

not to

be

have

been

hated by the people than to have

had

the

fortresses

. Having considered

. All

these things

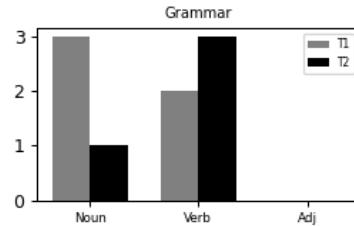
I would therefore praise the

considered then, I shall praise him who

one who erects fortresses and the one

builds fortresses as  
well as him

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



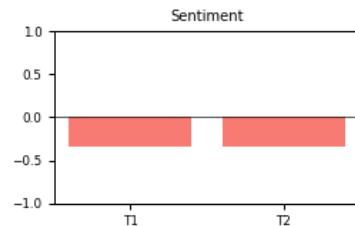
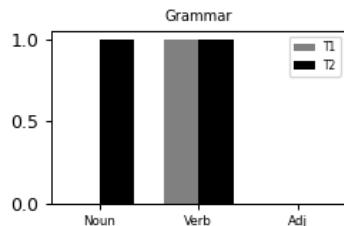
who does not, and

would blame any

I shall blame whoever,

one who,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



trusting in them

, thinks little of

, cares little about

being hated by

his people.

the people.

[1] Catherine Sforza, a daughter of Galeazzo

Sforza and Lucrezia

Landriani, born 1463, died 1509. It was to

the Countess of Forli that

Machiavelli was sent as envoy on 1499. A

letter from Fortunati to the

countess announces the appointment: "I

have been with the signori,"

wrote Fortunati, "to learn whom they would

send and when. They tell me

that Nicolo Machiavelli, a learned young

Florentine noble, secretary

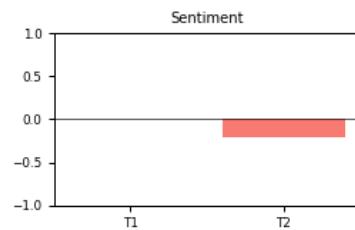
to my Lords of the Ten, is to leave with me

at once." Cf. "Catherine

Sforza," by Count Pasolini, translated by P.

Sylvester, 1898.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.





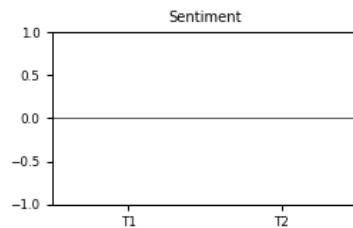
## CHAPTER XXI

HOW A PRINCE

MUST ACT IN ORDER

SHOULD CONDUCT HIMSELF SO AS

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



TO GAIN

REPUTATION

REOWN

Nothing causes

Nothing makes

a prince

to be

so much esteemed as great enterprises

and setting a

rare fine

example. We have in our

own day Ferdinand, King time Ferdinand

of

Aragon

, at , the

present King of Spain. He

may can

almost be

termed called

a new prince,

because

from a weak king

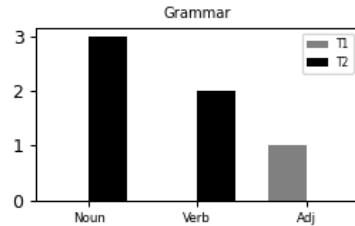
he has

become for risen, by

fame and glory

the first , from being an insignificant king to be  
the foremost

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



king in Christendom, and if you

regard his actions will consider his deeds  
you will find them  
all

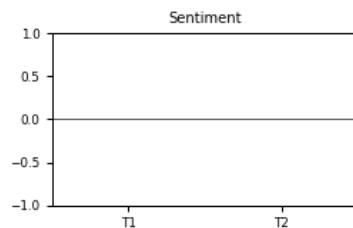
very  
great and some of them extraordinary

. At . In  
the beginning of  
his reign he

assailed attacked  
Granada, and

that this  
enterprise was the foundation  
of his  
state. dominions. He did this quietly

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



At first

he did it leisurely

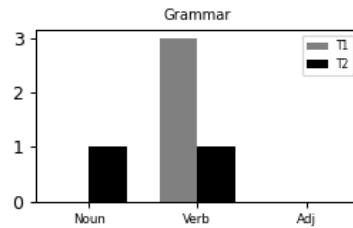
and without

any

fear of

being hindrance, for he held  
interfered with; he kept

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

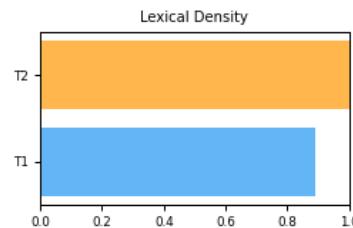


the minds of the barons of Castile occupied in

this enterprise, so that thinking only of that  
war

thinking of the war and not anticipating any  
innovations;  
thus

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



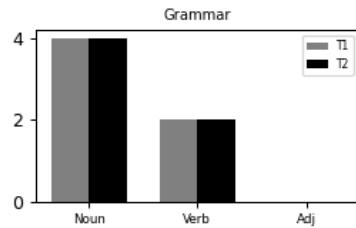
they did not

think

perceive that by these means he was  
of making innovations, and he thus acquired  
reputation and power

acquiring power  
and authority

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



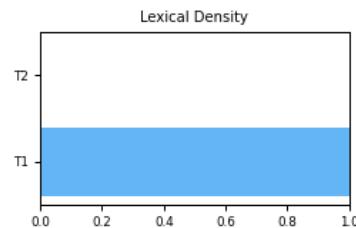
over

them

without their being aware of it.

.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



He was able with the money of

the Church and

of

the people to

maintain

sustain

his armies, and by that long war

to

lay the

foundations of his military power, which

afterwards has made

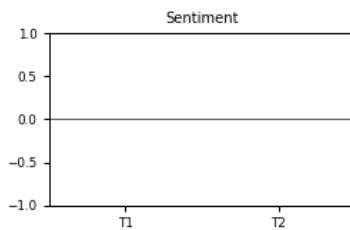
him famous. Besides this, to be able

foundation for the military skill which has

since distinguished him.

Further, always using religion as a plea, so as

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



to undertake greater

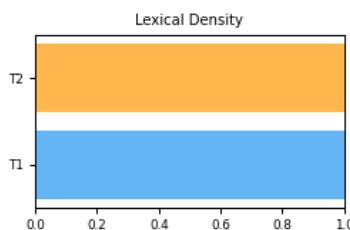
enterprises,

schemes, he devoted himself with

and always under the pretext of religion, he

had recourse to a

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



pious

cruelty

, to

driving out

and

clearing his kingdom of

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



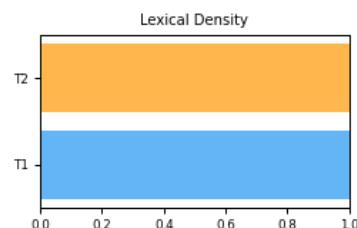
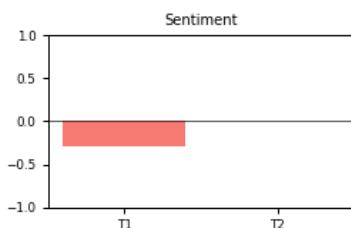
the Moors

from his kingdom and despoiling them.

; nor could there be a

No

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



more admirable

or rare example can be found. He also

attacked

under the same pretext Africa, undertook his

Italian enterprise, and

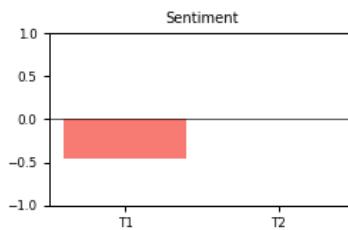
has lately

example, nor one more rare. Under this same

cloak he assailed Africa,

he came down on Italy, he has finally

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



attacked France

; so that he has continually contrived great

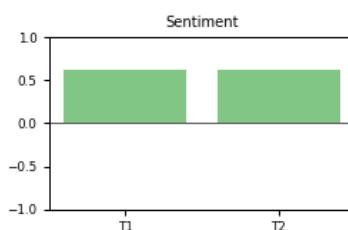
things, which

; and thus his

achievements and designs have always been

great, and

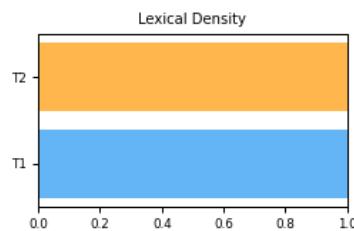
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



have kept

his subjects' minds uncertain and astonished,  
the  
minds of his people in suspense and  
admiration

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



and occupied

in watching their result. with the  
And these issue of them. And his

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



actions have arisen

in such a way,

one out of the other

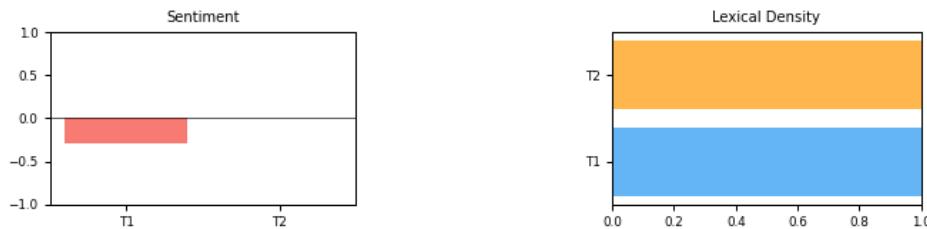
, so that they have

left no time for men to settle down and act

, that men have never been given time to

work steadily

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



against him

. It is also

very profitable for

Again, it much assists

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

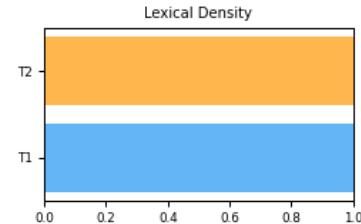
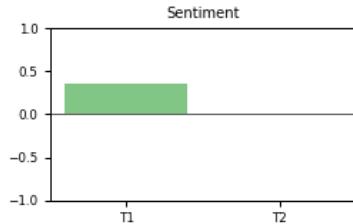


a prince to

give some rare examples of himself in  
the internal administration, like those

set unusual examples in internal  
affairs, similar to those which are

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



related of Messer

Bernabò of

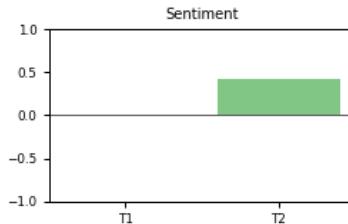
Milan, when it happens that some one does  
something extraordinary,

Bernabo da

Milano, who, when he had the opportunity,  
by any one in civil life

doing some extraordinary thing,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

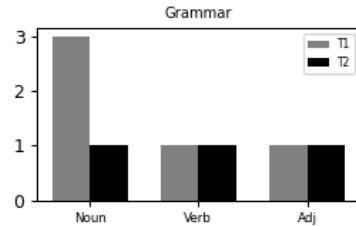


either good or

evil, in civil life, and to take a means

bad, would take some

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of rewarding

or punishing him which

will

would

be much

talked

spoken

about. And

a prince ought,

above all

a

things, always

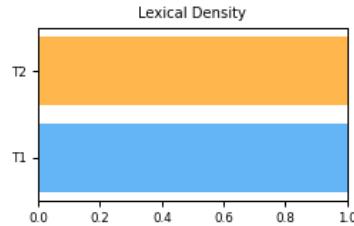
prince must

endeavour in every action to

obtain fame for being

gain for himself the reputation of being a

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



great

and

excellent.

remarkable man.

A prince is

further esteemed

also respected

when he is

either

a true friend

or a

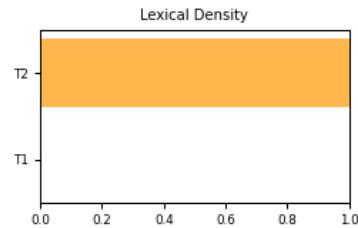
true enemy, when,

downright enemy,

that is

, to say, when, without any reservation,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



he declares himself

without reserve

in

favour of

some one against another.

one party against the other; which course

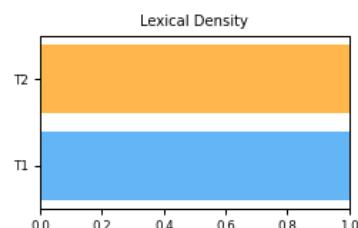
This policy is always more useful than

will always be more advantageous than

remaining neutral. For

standing neutral; because

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



if two

neighbouring powers

of your powerful neighbours

come to blows, they are

either such

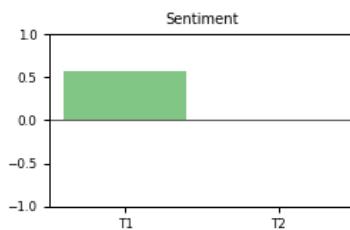
of such a character

that if one

wins, you will have

of them conquers, you have either

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to fear

the victor, or else

him or

not. In either

of these

case

two cases

it will

openly and  
make  
war

, strenuously; because in the first case if you do not declare yourself, you will

invariably fall a prey to the

victor,  
conqueror,  
to the pleasure and satisfaction of

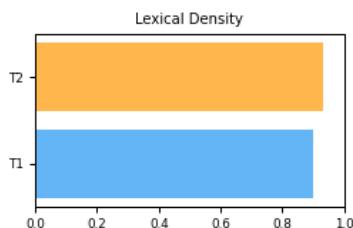
defeated,  
conquered,  
and you will have no

reasons to offer,

nor anything to

defend you and nobody to receive you. For, protect or to shelter you. Because he who  
whoever wins conquers does not want  
doubtful friends who

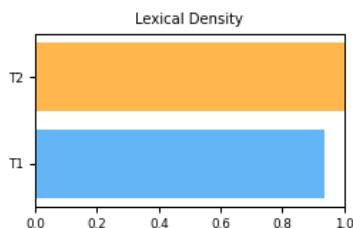
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



will not

desire aid him in the time of trial; and he who  
friends whom he suspects and who do not  
help him when in trouble, and  
whoever

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



loses will not

receive you as

harbour you because

you did not

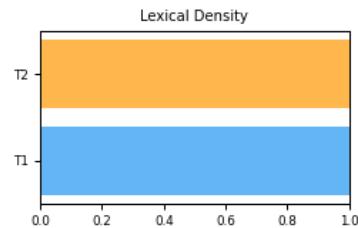
take up arms to

willingly, sword in

assist his cause.

hand, court his fate.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



Antiochus went

to

into

Greece, being sent

for

by the

Ætolis

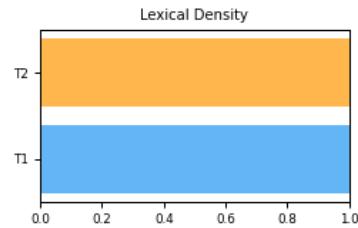
Ætolians to drive out

to expel

the Romans. He sent

orators  
envoys  
to the  
Achæi  
Achaeans,  
who were friends of  
the Romans  
to encourage , exhorting  
them to remain neutral  
, ; and  
on the other hand the  
Romans  
persuaded urged  
them to take up arms  
on their side. The matter was . This question came to be discussed  
brought before in

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the council of the

Achæi for deliberation,

Achaeans,

where the

ambassador

legate

of Antiochus

sought to persuade

urged

them to

remain

stand

neutral, to

which

this

the Roman

ambassador replied: "As to what is

legate answered: "As for that

which has been

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



said that it is

best

better and more advantageous

and most useful

for your state not to

meddle

interfere

in our war, nothing

is

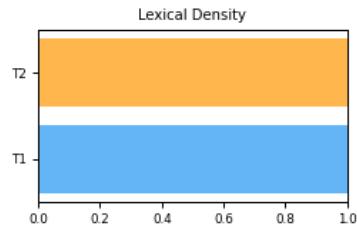
can be more erroneous;

further from the truth; for if you do not

because by not interfering

meddle in it

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



you will

become,

be left, without

without any

favour or

any reputation, the prize

consideration, the guerdon

of the

victor." And

conqueror." Thus

it

will always happen that

the one

he

who is not your friend will

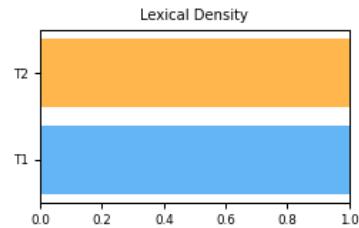
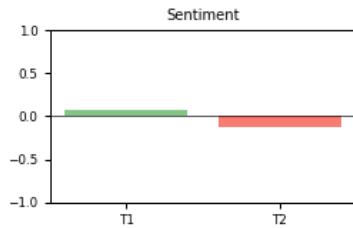
want you

demand your neutrality,

to remain neutral, and the one

whilst he

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



who is your friend will  
require entreat  
you to  
declare yourself  
by taking arms. with  
Irresolute princes, to avoid present  
dangers  
, usually , generally  
follow the  
way of neutrality neutral path,  
and are

mostly ruined  
by it.

generally ruined.

But when

the

a

prince declares himself

frankly

gallantly

in favour of one

side, if the

one to whom you adhere conquers, even if

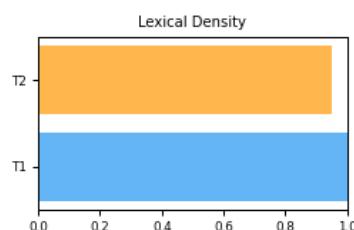
party with

whom he allies himself conquers, although

the victor may be powerful

and may have him at his mercy, yet

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

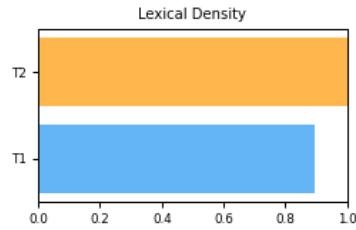


he is

powerful  
and you remain at his discretion, he is under  
an obligation to you and  
friendship has been established,

indebted to him, and there is  
established a bond of amity;

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



and men are never so

dishonest

shameless

as to

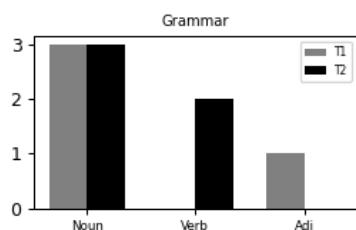
oppress you with such ingratitude.

become a monument of ingratitude by

Moreover, victories

oppressing you. Victories after all

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



are never so

prosperous

## complete

that the victor

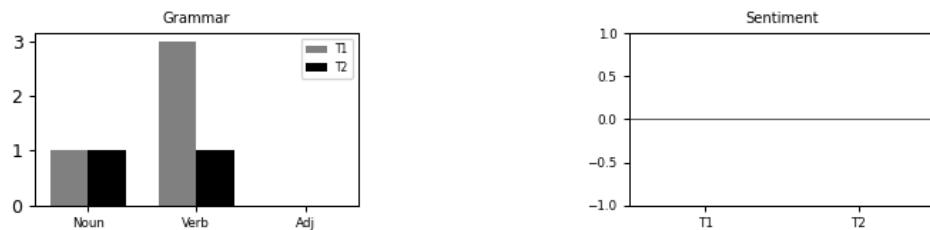
does not

must not show some regard,

need to have some scruples, especially as

especially

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



to justice. But if he

to

with

whom

you

adhere

ally yourself

loses, you

are

may be

sheltered by him, and

so long as he can, he  
will assist you;

whilst he is able he may aid you, and

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



you become

the companion of

## companions on

a fortune

which

that

may rise

again. In the second case, when those who fight are

such

of such a character

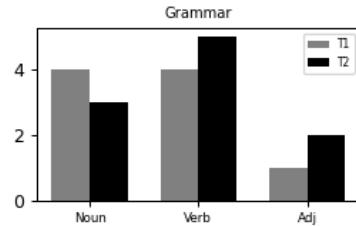
that you have

nothing to fear from the victor, it is still more prudent on your part no anxiety as to who may conquer, so much the more is it

to adhere to one; for you go to the ruin

greater prudence to be allied, because you  
assist at the destruction

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



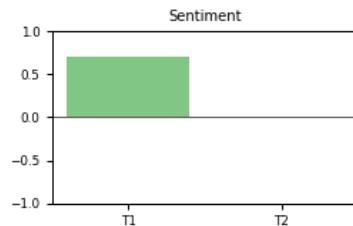
of one

with the help of him

by the aid of another who,

who ought to save him

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



if he

were wise, and if he conquers he rests

had been wise, would have saved

at your discretion, and

him; and conquering, as

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



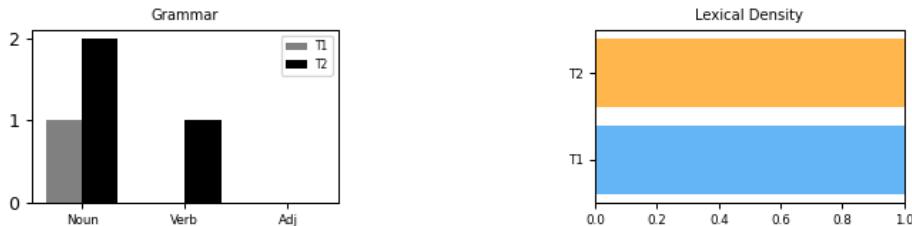
it is impossible that he should not

conquer do

with your

help. assistance, he remains at your discretion.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



And here it

should is to

be noted that a prince ought

to take care

never

to make

common cause

an alliance

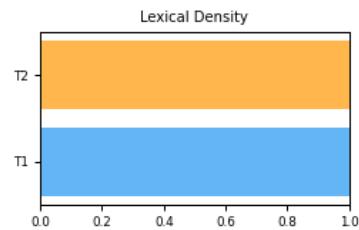
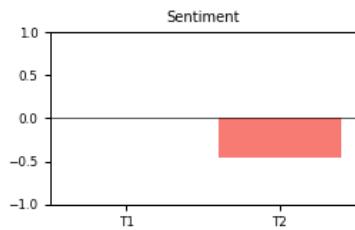
with one more powerful than himself

to injure

for the purposes of attacking others,

another,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

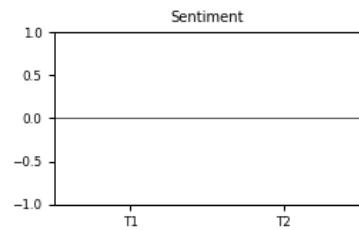
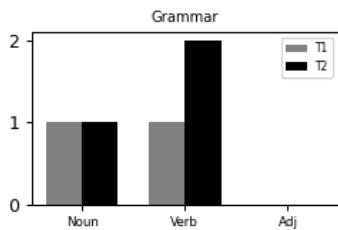


unless necessity

forces him to it, as before said; for

compels him, as is said above; because

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



if he

wins you rest  
conquers  
you are  
at his discretion, and princes

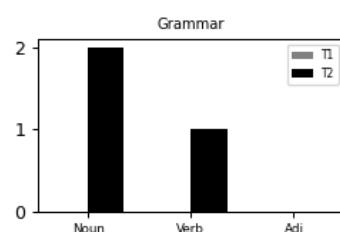
must  
ought to  
avoid as much as  
possible being at the discretion of  
others.  
any one.

The Venetians

united  
joined  
with  
France against the Duke of Milan

, although they , and this alliance, which caused their  
ruin.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



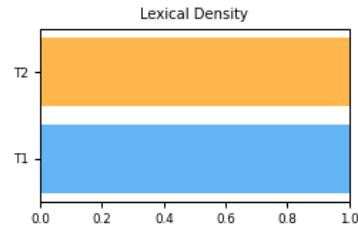
could have

avoided that

been avoided.

union, and from it resulted their own ruin.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



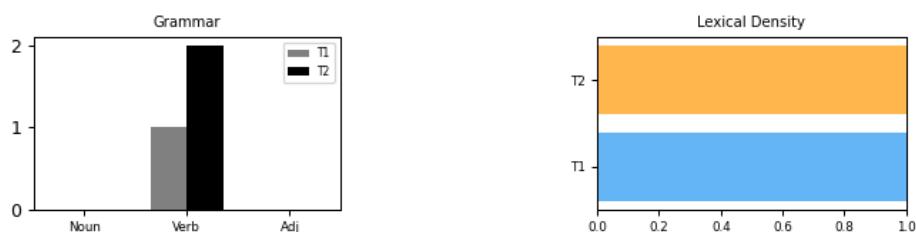
But when

one cannot avoid

it cannot be avoided,

it,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



as happened to the Florentines when the pope and Spain

went with

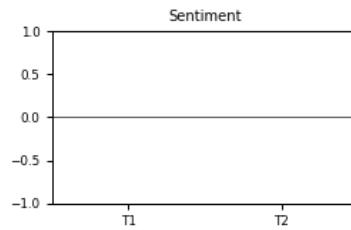
sent

their

armies to attack Lombardy, then

in such a case, for the above reasons,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the prince ought to

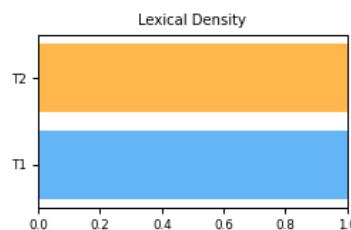
join for the

favour one of the parties.

above reasons. Let no state believe

Never let any Government imagine

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



that it can

follow a secure policy,

choose perfectly safe

courses;

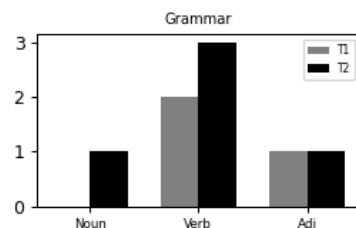
rather let it

think that all are doubtful. This

expect to have to take very doubtful ones,

because it

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



is found in

the nature

ordinary affairs

of things,

that one never

tries

seeks

to avoid one

difficulty

trouble

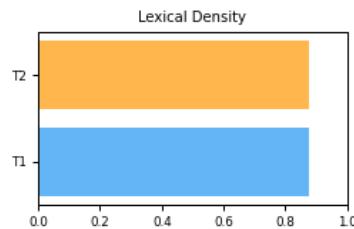
without running

into another, but prudence consists in

being able to know the nature of  
the difficulties, and taking the least harmful  
as good.

knowing how to distinguish the character of  
troubles, and for choice to  
take the lesser evil.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



A prince

must  
also

show himself a

lover of merit, and honour those who excel  
patron of ability, and to honour  
the proficient

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



in every

art

. Moreover he must

. At the same time he should

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



encourage his citizens to

follow

practise

their callings

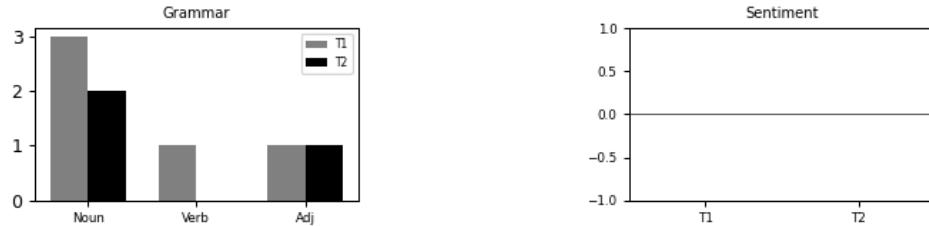
quietly, whether

peaceably, both

in commerce

, or agriculture, or any other trade that and  
men follow, agriculture, and in every other following,

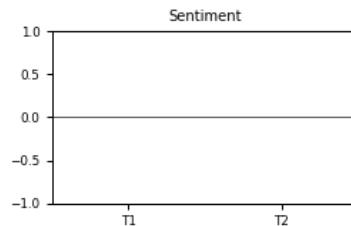
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



so that

this one shall not refrain the one should not  
be deterred

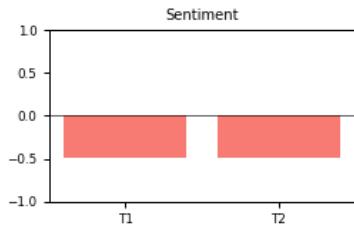
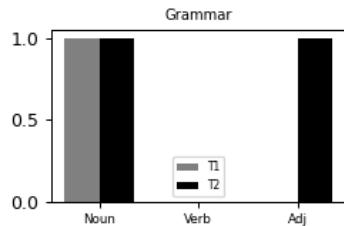
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



from improving his  
possessions

through fear that they may for fear lest they

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



be taken

away

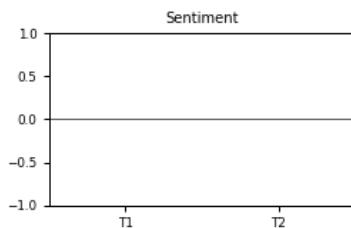
from him

, and that one

or another from opening up

from starting a

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



trade for fear of taxes; but

he should

the prince ought to

offer rewards to

whoever

does wishes to do

these things, and

to whoever seeks designs

in any way to

improve honour

his city or state

. Besides this,

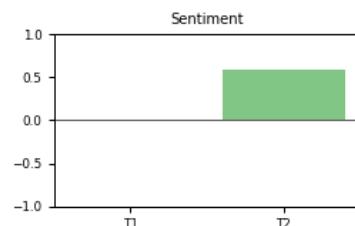
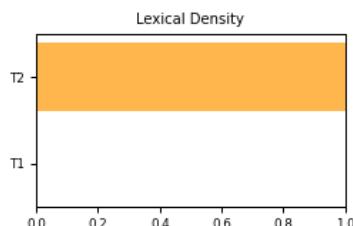
Further,

he ought

, to entertain the people with festivals and

spectacles

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

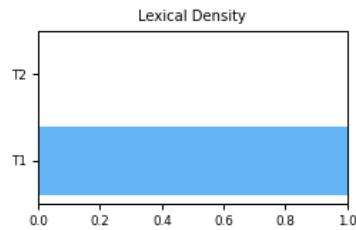


at convenient seasons of the

year

, to keep the people occupied with festivals ;  
and spectacles;

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



and  
as every city is divided  
either into trades into  
or into  
guilds

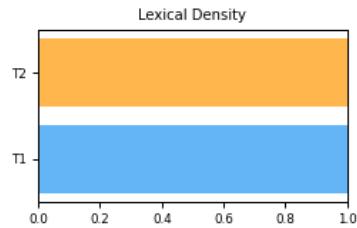
classes, societies,[1]

he ought

to

pay attention to all these things, mingle hold such bodies in esteem,  
and associate

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



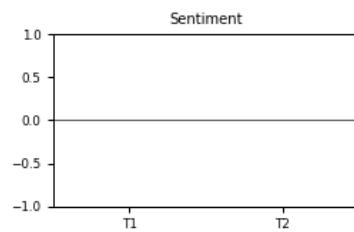
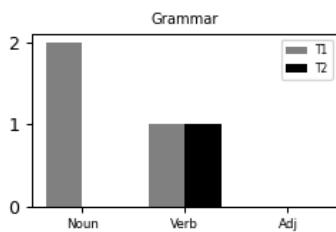
with them

from time to

sometimes, and show himself

time, and give them

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



an example of

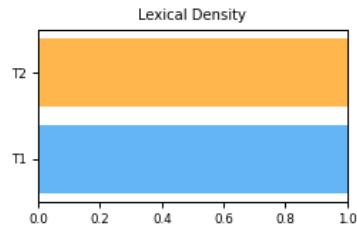
his humanity and magnificence, always

courtesy and liberality; nevertheless, always

holding firm, however,

maintaining

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the majesty of his

dignity, which

rank, for this he

must never

be

consent to abate

allowed to fan

in anything

whatever.

[1] “Guilds or societies,” “in arti o in tribu.”

“Arti” were craft or

trade guilds, cf. Florio: “Arte . . . a whole

company of any trade

in any city or corporation town.” The guilds

of Florence are most

admirably described by Mr Edgcumbe

Staley in his work on the subject

(Methuen, 1906). Institutions of a somewhat

similar character, called

“artel,” exist in Russia to-day, cf. Sir

Mackenzie Wallace’s

“Russia,” ed. 1905: “The sons . . . were

always during the working

season members of an artel. In some of the

larger towns there are

artels of a much more complex kind—

permanent associations, possessing

large capital, and pecuniarily responsible for

the acts of the

individual members.” The word “artel,”

despite its apparent

similarity, has, Mr Aylmer Maude assures

me, no connection with “ars”

or “arte.” Its root is that of the verb

“rotisya,” to bind oneself by

an oath; and it is generally admitted to be

only another form of

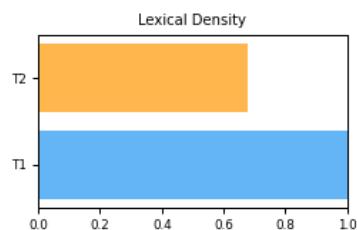
“rota,” which now signifies a “regimental

company.” In both words the

underlying idea is that of a body of men

united by an oath. “Tribu”  
were possibly gentile groups, united by  
common descent, and included  
individuals connected by marriage. Perhaps  
our words “sects” or  
“clans” would be most appropriate.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



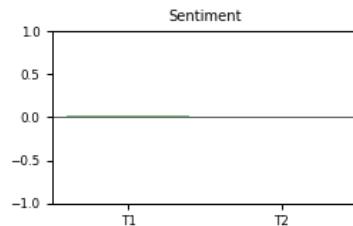
## CHAPTER XXII

### OF CONCERNING THE SECRETARIES OF PRINCES

The choice of

a prince's ministers is a matter servants is

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



of no little importance

; to a prince, and  
they are

either

good or not according to the

prudence  
of the prince

discrimination

. And

The first

impression that one gets  
of a

opinion which one forms

ruler  
and of his

prince,

brains is  
from seeing

understanding, is

by observing

the men

that  
he has

about him.  
around him; and

When they are

competent  
capable

and faithful

one can always consider him wise, as

he may always be considered wise, because

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



he has

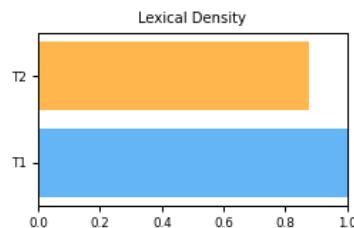
been able to

known how to

recognise their ability and

recognize the capable and to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



keep them faithful. But when they are

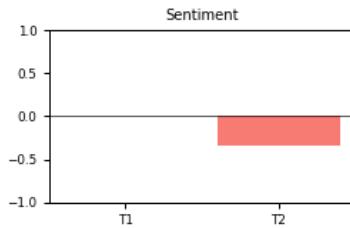
the

otherwise one cannot form a good

reverse, one can always form an

unfavourable

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



opinion of him

, because

, for the prime error

the first mistake that he makes is in making

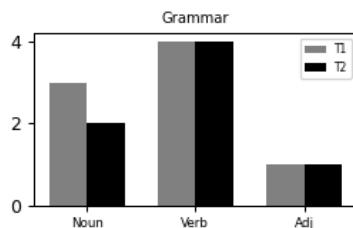
which he made was in choosing them.

this choice. There was

There were none

nobody

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



who knew Messer Antonio da Venafro as the

minister

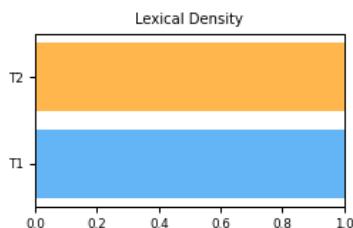
servant

of Pandolfo

Petrucci, Prince of Siena, who

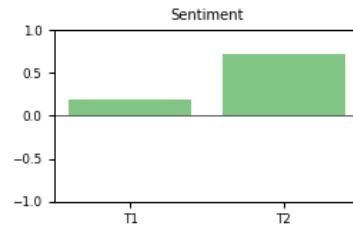
did would  
not consider Pandolfo to be a very  
prudent man, having him clever man in having Venafro

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



for his  
minister. servant. Because  
There are three  
different classes of intellects: one which comprehends  
kinds of brains, the one understands things by itself;  
unassisted, the other another which appreciates what others  
understands things when shown by others, comprehended; and a third which  
the third understands neither neither comprehends by itself nor by the  
alone nor with the explanations showing

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of others. The first

kind is

is the

most

excellent, the second

also excellent, but

is good,

the third

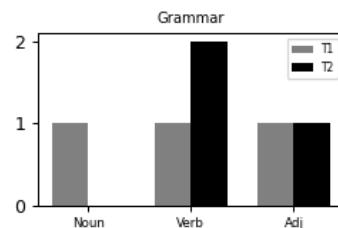
useless. It is

is useless.

therefore evident

Therefore, it follows necessarily

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



that if Pandolfo was not

of in

the first

kind, rank,

he was

at any rate of in

the second. For

every time that whenever

one has

the

judgment to

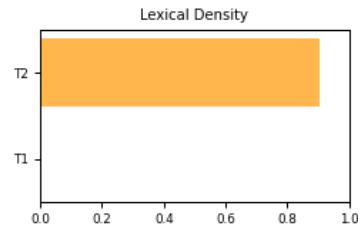
know

good and bad when it is said and done,

although he himself may not have

the initiative, yet he can recognize

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



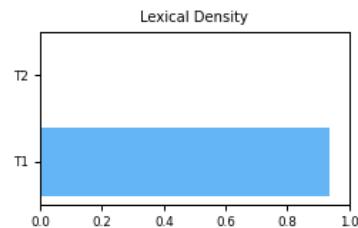
the good and

evil that any one does or says, even if he has

no

invention, yet he recognises

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



the bad

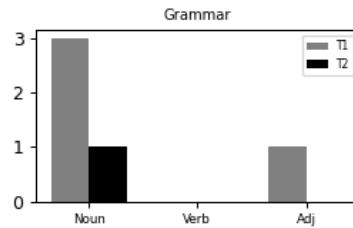
and good works of his minister

in his

and corrects

servant, and

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the one

and supports

he can praise and

the other

; and the minister

correct; thus the

servant

cannot

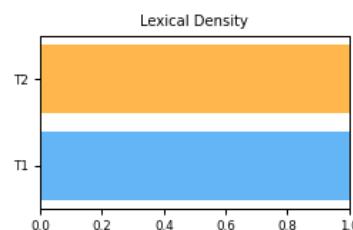
hope to deceive him and

therefore remains good. For

is kept honest.

But to enable

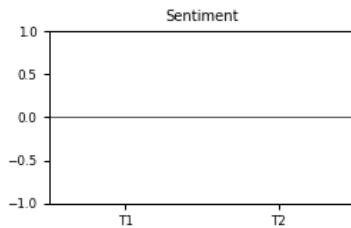
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



a prince to

be form an opinion of his servant  
able to know a minister

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

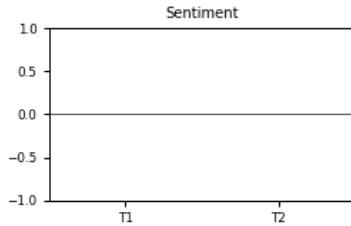


there is  
this method one  
test  
which never fails. When  
you see the  
minister think servant thinking  
more of  
himself his  
own interests  
than of

you, and in all his  
actions seek

yours, and seeking inwardly

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



his own profit

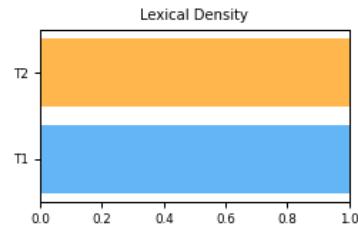
, in  
everything,  
such a man will never

be make

a good

minister, servant, nor will you  
and you can never rely on him; for whoever ever be able to trust him; because he who has  
has in hand

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



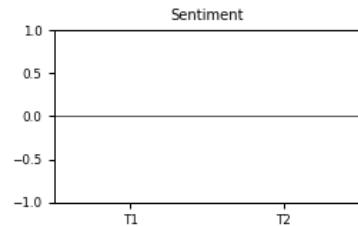
the state of

another

must never in

his hands ought never to

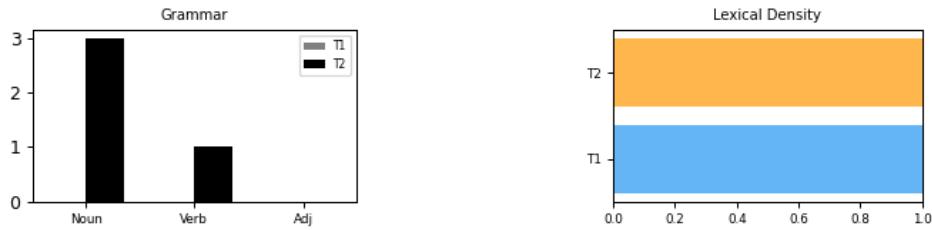
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



think of himself but

of always of his prince,  
and never pay any attention to matters in  
which

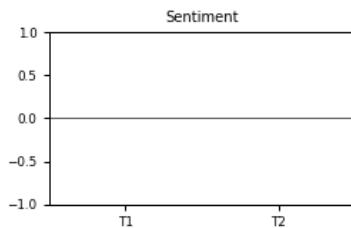
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the prince

, and not call  
to mind anything but what relates to him.  
And,

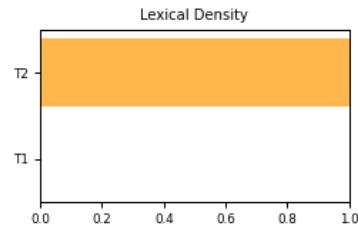
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



on the other hand

, to keep his servant honest

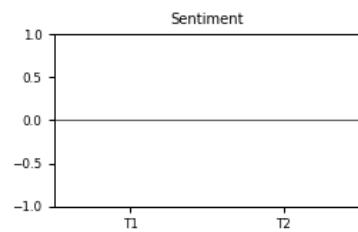
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the  
prince

, in order to retain his fidelity

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



ought to

think of his minister,	study
honouring and	him, honouring him,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



enriching him, doing him kindnesses

, and conferring on  
him

, sharing with  
him the

honours and

giving him responsible tasks,

cares; and at the same time let him see that

he

cannot stand alone,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



so that

the great honours

many honours may not

and riches bestowed on him cause him not to  
desire other honours and  
riches, and the tasks he has to fulfil

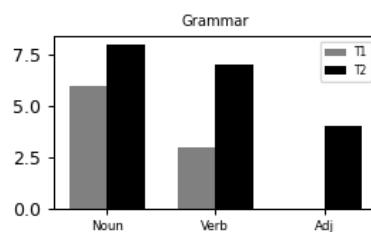
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



make him

fearful of changes, desire more,  
knowing that he could not execute them many riches make him wish for more, and  
without the prince. When princes that many cares may make him  
and their ministers stand in this relation to dread chances. When, therefore, servants,  
and princes towards servants,  
are thus disposed, they can trust

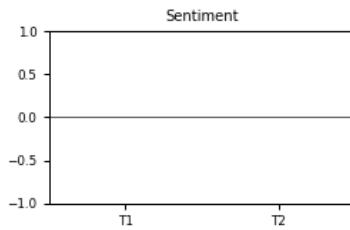
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



each other

, they can , but  
rely the one upon the other;

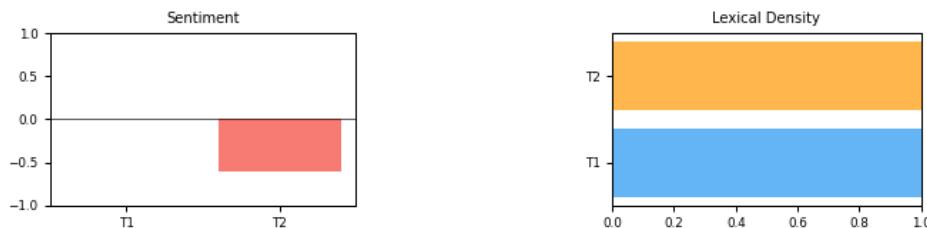
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



when it is otherwise, the end

is always will always be disastrous for either  
injurious either for

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



one or the other

of them.

## CHAPTER XXIII

### HOW FLATTERERS

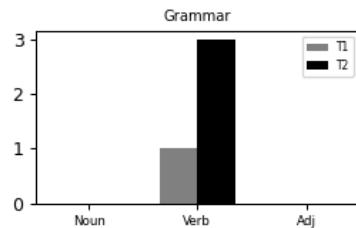
MUST BE SHUNNED

SHOULD BE AVOIDED

I must not omit

I do not wish to leave out

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



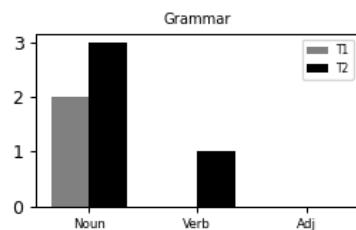
an important

subject, and a mistake

branch of this subject, for it

is a danger from

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



which princes

can

are

with difficulty

avoid, if

preserved, unless

they are

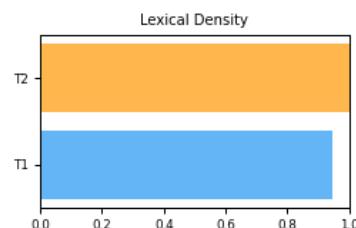
not very prudent, or if they

very careful and discriminating. It is that of

do not make a good choice. And this is with

regard to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



flatterers, of

which

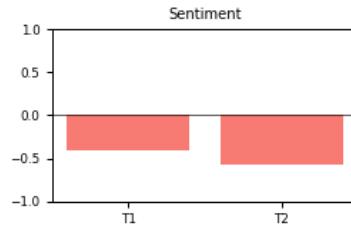
whom

courts are full, because men

take such pleasure  
in their own

things and deceive themselves about affairs, and in a way so deceived in

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

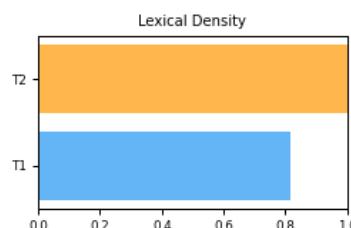


them that they

can  
with difficulty

guard against this plague; and by wishing to  
guard against it from this pest, and if they wish to defend  
themselves

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



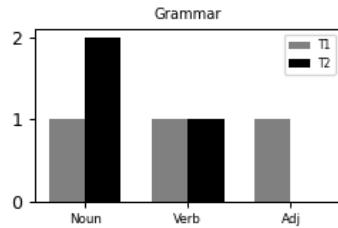
they run

the

risk of becoming contemptible.

danger of falling into contempt.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



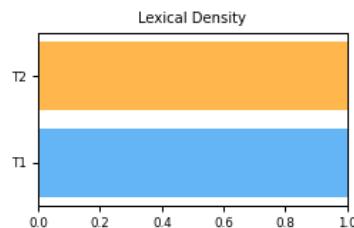
Because there is no other way of

guarding

one's self against flattery than by

oneself from flatterers except

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



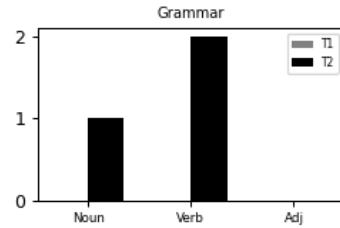
letting men understand

that

they will

to tell you the truth does

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



not offend you

by speaking the truth;

;

but when every one

can

may

tell you the truth

, you lose their respect. A prudent prince

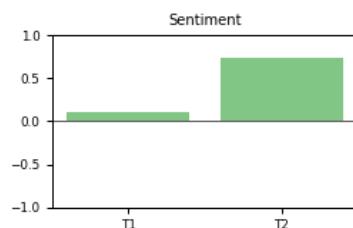
, respect for you abates.

must

Therefore a wise prince ought to hold

therefore take

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



a third course, by choosing

the

wise men

in his state

wise men,

,

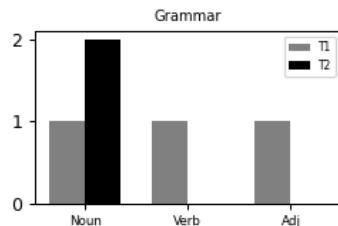
and

giving

these alone full liberty to speak

to them only the liberty of speaking

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the truth to him

, but

, and then

only of

those things

that he asks of which he inquires,

and of

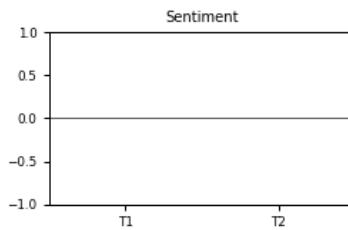
nothing else; none others;

but he

must ask them ought to question them upon

about

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



everything and

hear their opinion, listen to their opinions,

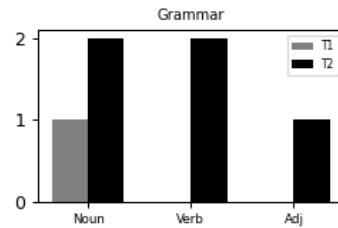
and afterwards

deliberate by form his own conclusions. With

these councillors, separately and collectively,

he ought to carry

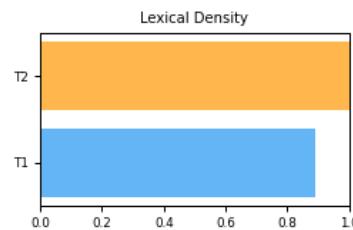
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



himself in

his own way, and in these councils and with such a way that

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



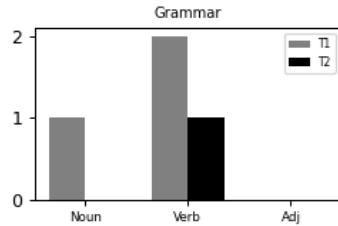
each of

these them should know

men comport himself so that every one may

see

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



that the more freely he

speaks,

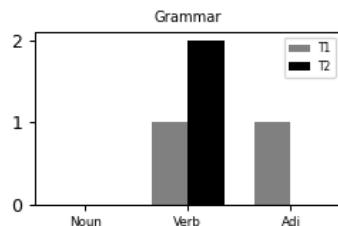
shall speak,

the more he

will be acceptable. Outside

shall be preferred; outside of

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



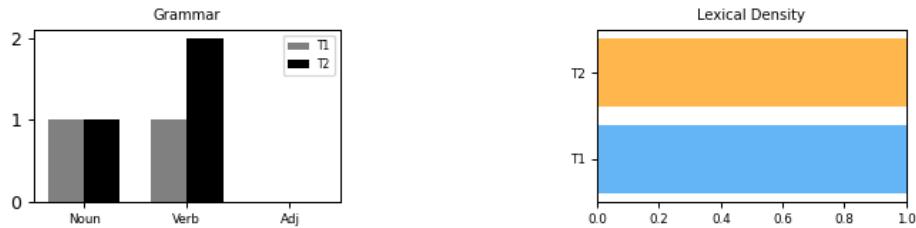
these he should listen

to no one

, go about the matter deliberately,

, pursue the thing resolved on,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



and be

determined

steadfast

in his

decisions. Whoever acts otherwise either acts

resolutions. He who does otherwise is either

precipitately through

overthrown by flatterers, or is so often

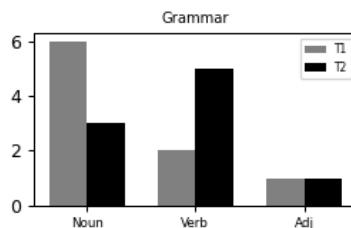
flattery or else changes often through the

changed by varying opinions

variety of opinions, from

which it happens

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



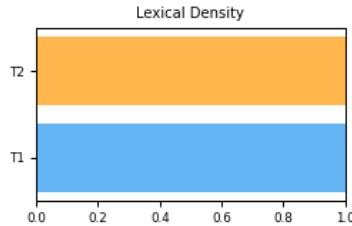
that he

is little esteemed. I will give

falls into contempt.

I wish on this subject to adduce

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



a modern

instance of this. Pre' Luca, a follower of

example. Fra Luca, the man of

Maximilian,

affairs to Maximilian,[1]

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the present

emperor, speaking of his majesty said

that he never took counsel with

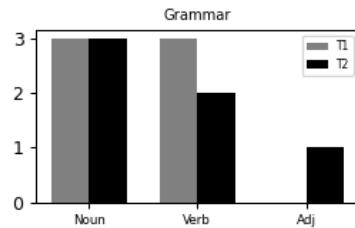
: He consulted with no one, yet never got his

anybody, and yet that he never did anything

own way in anything.

as he wished;

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



this arose

from

because of

his following

the contrary method

a practice the opposite

to the

aforesaid. As

above; for

the emperor

is a

secret

secretive

man he does not communicate his designs to any one

or

, nor does he receive opinions on them.

take any one's advice,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



but as

on putting in

carrying

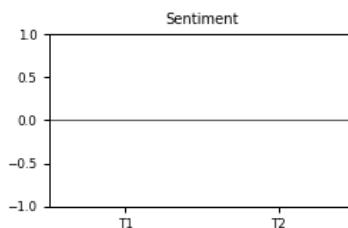
them into effect they

begin become revealed and known, they are at

to be known and discovered, they begin to be once obstructed

opposed

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



by those

men whom

he has

about

around

him, and he

is easily

, being

pliant, is

diverted from

his purpose.

them.

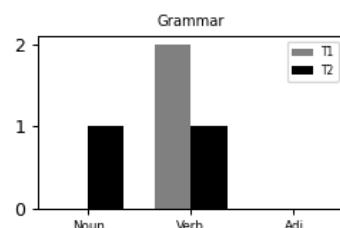
Hence it

comes

follows that those things

to pass that what

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



he does one day he undoes the next

, and

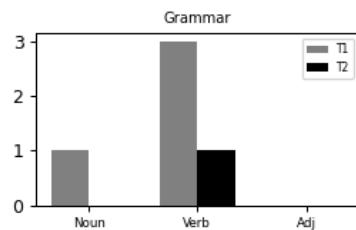
no one ever

understands what he wishes or intends to do, and no

reliance is to be one can rely

placed

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



on his

deliberations. resolutions.

[1] Maximilian I, born in 1459, died 1519,

Emperor of the Holy Roman

Empire. He married, first, Mary, daughter of

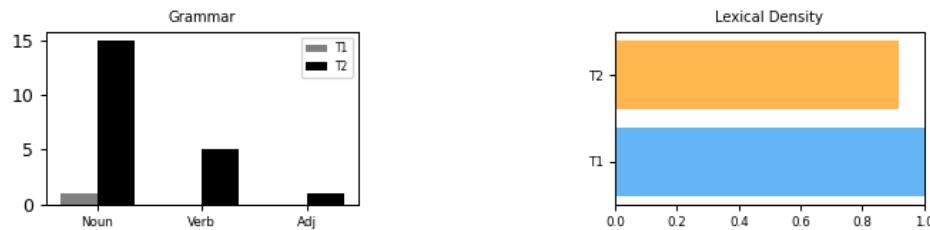
Charles the Bold; after

her death, Bianca Sforza; and thus became

involved in Italian

politics.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



A prince, therefore, ought always to take  
counsel, but only when he wishes

, and

not when others wish

; on the contrary ;

he ought

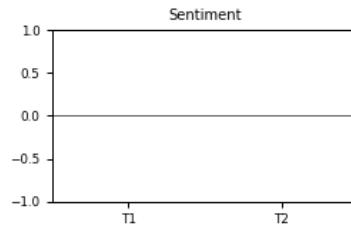
rather

to discourage

absolutely attempts to advise him every

one from offering advice

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



unless he

asks it, but

, however,

he ought to be a

great asker, and

constant inquirer, and afterwards

a patient

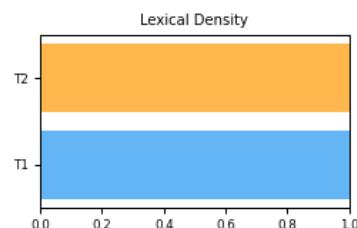
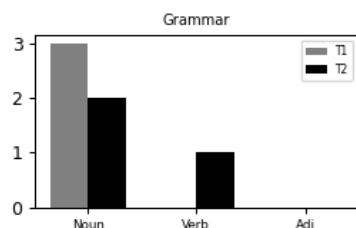
hearer of

listener concerning

the truth about those things

the things of

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

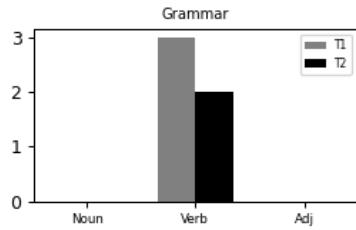


which he

has inquired of; indeed, if he  
finds

inquired; also, on learning

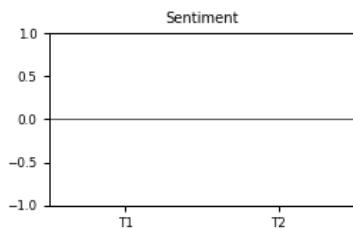
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



that any one

has scruples in telling , on any  
consideration, has not told

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

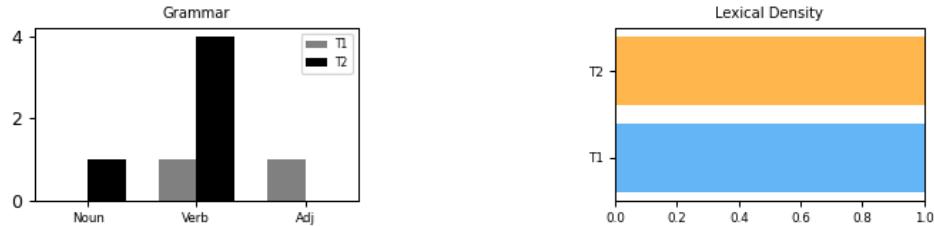


him the truth he should

be let his anger be  
angry. And since some felt.

And if there are some who

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



think that a prince who

gains the reputation

conveys an impression

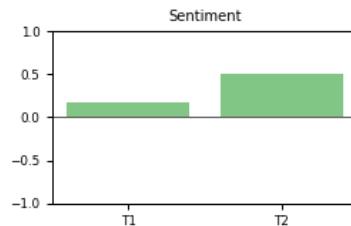
of being prudent is so considered, not by his

of his wisdom is not so through his own

nature but by

ability, but through

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the good

councillors

advisers that

he has

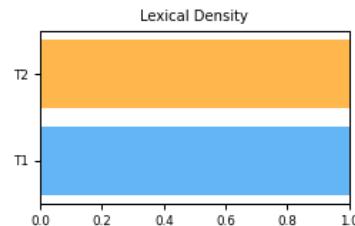
about him,  
they are

undoubtedly deceived. It  
deceived,  
because this  
is an

infallible rule  
axiom which never fails:  
that a prince who is not wise himself

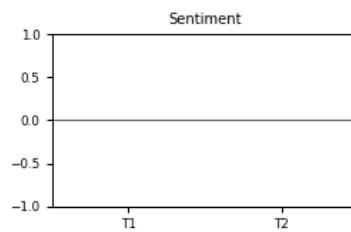
cannot be well  
will never take good advice,  
advised,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



unless by chance he  
  
left himself entirely in the hands of one  
has  
man who ruled him in everything, and  
yielded his affairs entirely to one person who  
happened  
happens

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



to be a very prudent

man. In this case

indeed

he may

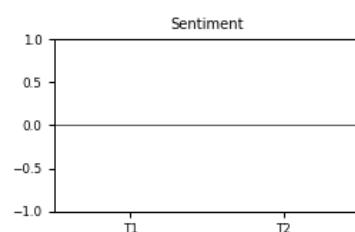
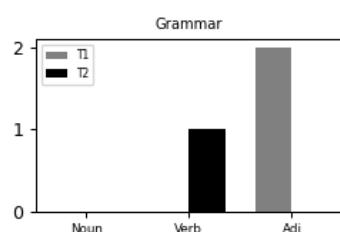
doubtless

be well governed, but it would not

last long, for that

be for long, because such a

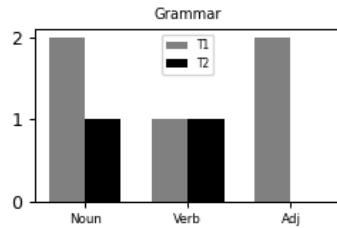
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



governor would in a short time

deprive him of the take  
 state; but by taking counsel with many, away his state from him.  
 But if

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



a prince who is not  
 wise inexperienced should take counsel from more  
 than one he

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

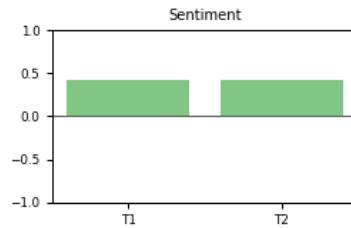


will

never

have united councils and will not be able get united counsels, nor will he know how

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

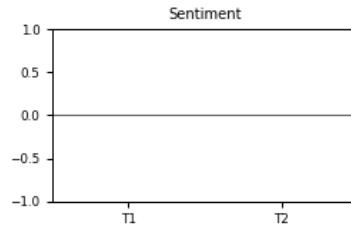


to unite them

for . Each of the counsellors will

himself. The councillors will all

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



think of

their his

own interests, and

he the prince will not know how to control them

will be unable either to correct

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



or to

understand

see through

them. And

it cannot

they are not to be found otherwise, because

be otherwise, for

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



men will always

be false

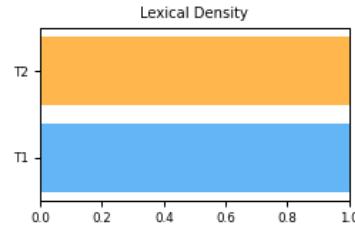
prove untrue

to you unless they are

compelled by necessity to be true.

kept honest by constraint.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

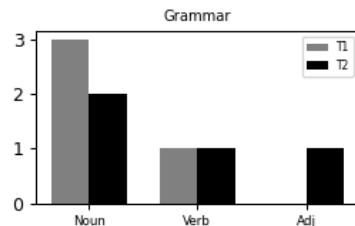


Therefore it must be

concluded that wise counsels, from whoever

inferred that good counsels, whencesoever

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



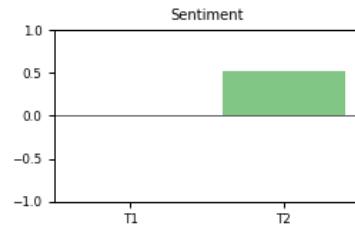
they

come

, must necessarily be due to the prudence

, are born of the wisdom

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of the prince, and not

the

prudence

wisdom

of the prince

to the

from

good counsels

received.

.

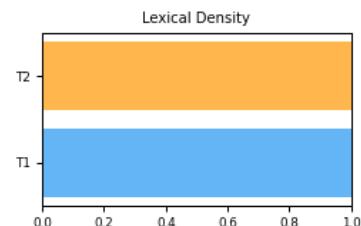
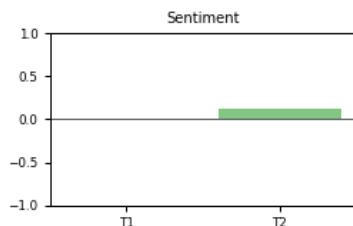
## CHAPTER XXIV

### WHY THE PRINCES OF ITALY HAVE LOST THEIR STATES

The before-mentioned things, if prudently observed, make

The previous suggestions, carefully observed, will enable

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



a new prince

seem ancient,

to appear well established,

and render him at once more secure and

firmer

fixed

in the

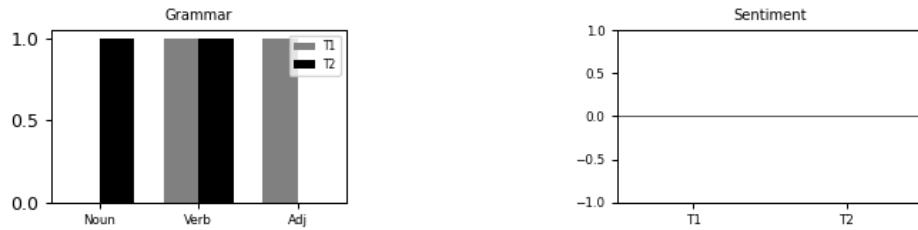
state than if he had been

established there of old. For

long seated there. For the

actions of

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



a new prince

is  
much more observed in his actions than a

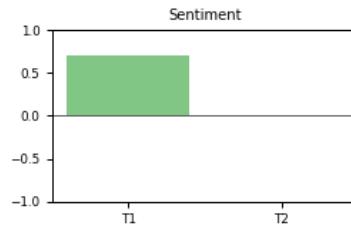
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



hereditary one, and when

these  
are recognised as virtuous, he gains men  
more and

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



they are

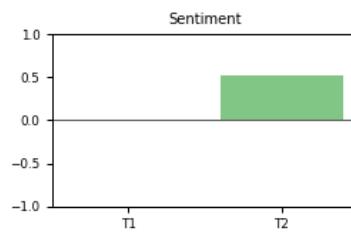
more bound

seen to be able they gain more men

to him than if he were of the

and bind far tighter than

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



ancient blood

. For

; because

men are

much more

attracted more

taken by

by the

present than by

past things, the past,

and when they find

themselves

well off in

the present

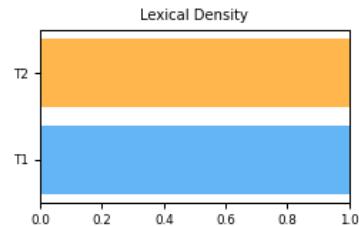
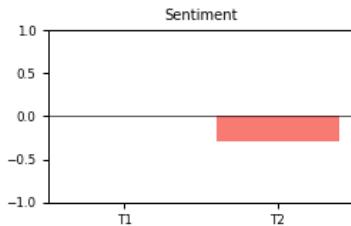
, good

they enjoy it and seek

nothing more; on the no further;

contrary,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



they will

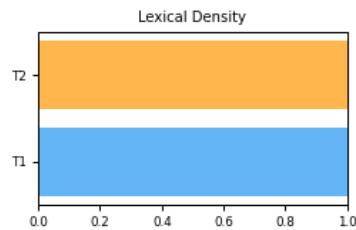
do all they can to defend him, so long as the

also make the utmost

prince is

defence of a prince if he fails them

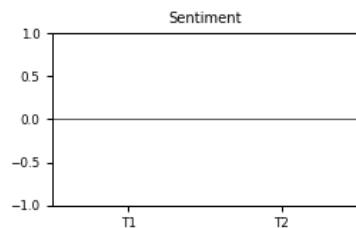
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



not in other things

wanting to himself. And thus he will . Thus it will  
have the be a

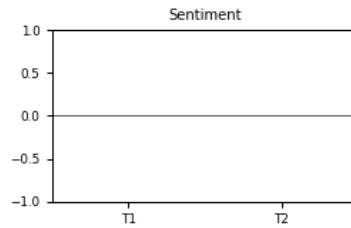
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



double glory

of having founded for him to have established

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



a new

and adorned

it and and strengthened

## fortified

it with good laws, good arms, good

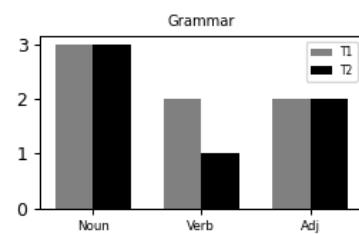
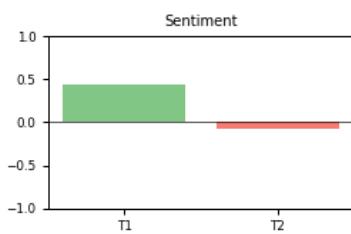
friends and good examples; allies, and

as he will have double shame who is

with a good example; so will it be a double

disgrace to him who,

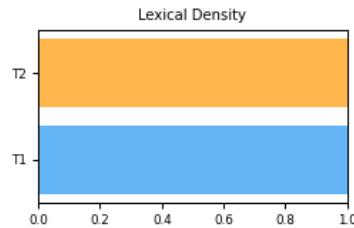
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



born a prince

and through , shall lose his state by

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



want of

prudence has lost it. wisdom.

And if

one considers those rulers those seigniors are considered

who have lost their

position states

in

Italy in our

days, times,

such as the King of Naples, the

Dukè of Milan and others , one will find in them first a common defect as to their arms, for the reasons of Duke , there will be found , firstly, one in regard to arms from the causes which have been

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

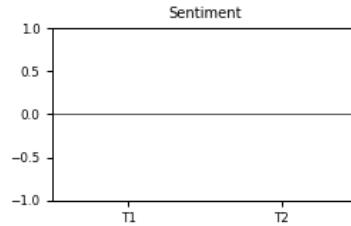


discussed at length

, then we observe that some ; in

the next place, some one

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



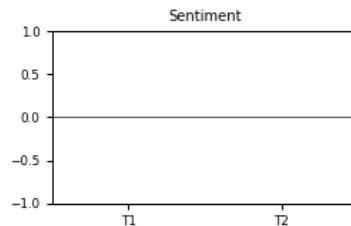
of

them

either

will be seen, either to have

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



had the people hostile

to them, or that if

, or if he has had

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the people

were

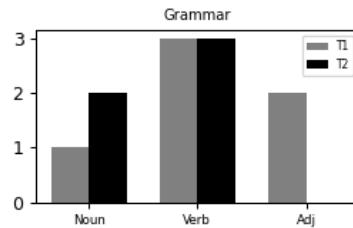
friendly, he has not known

friendly they were not able to make sure of

how to secure the nobles. In the absence of

the nobility, for without

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



these defects, states

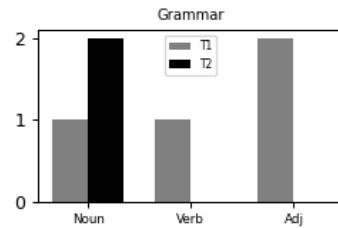
are not lost

that have

enough strength to be able

power enough

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to keep an army in the field

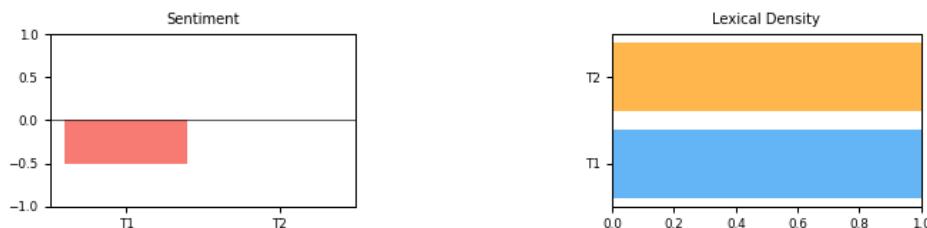
. cannot be lost.

Philip of Macedon, not the father of  
Alexander the Great, but

the one he  
who was conquered by Titus

Quinteus, Quintius, had not much territory  
did not possess a great state

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



compared to the greatness of

Rome and the Romans and of Greece who attacked him,  
Greece which assailed him, but yet

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



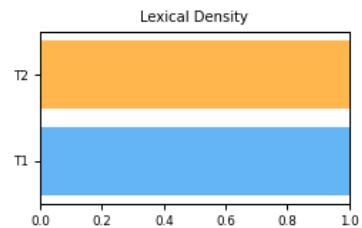
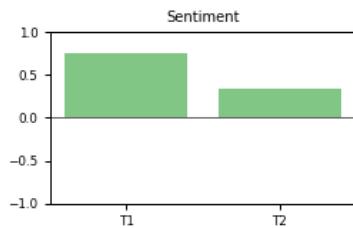
being a  
military man and one warlike man  
who knew

how to

divert attract  
the people and

make sure of the great, he was able to secure the nobles,  
sustain he sustained

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



## the war against

them

his enemies

for many years; and if

at length

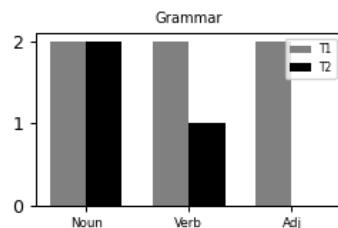
in the

end

he lost

his power over several cities, he was still able to keep his the dominion of some cities, nevertheless he retained the

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



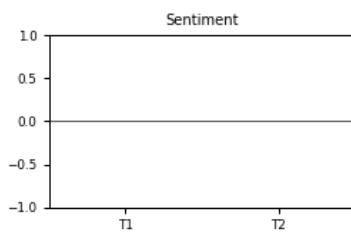
kingdom.

Therefore

, those of , do not let  
our princes

who had held their possessions for many  
years must not

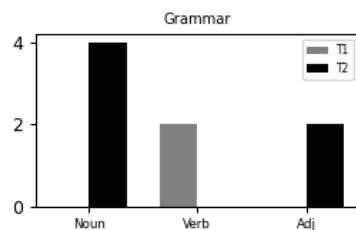
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



accuse fortune for

having lost them, the loss of their  
principalities after so many years'  
possession,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



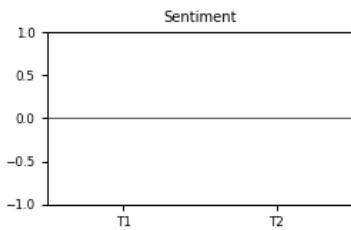
but rather their  
own

negligence; for having never  
in quiet times

considered that things  
might change (as

they never thought there could be a  
change (

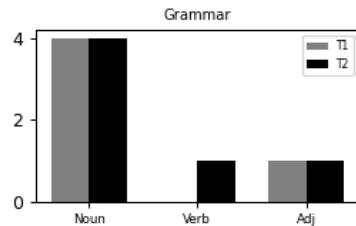
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



it is a common  
fault of men  
not to

reckon on storms,  
in fair weather) when adverse  
make any provision in the  
calm against the tempest), and when  
afterwards the bad

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



times came, they

only

thought of

fleeing

flight and not

from them, instead

of defending themselves; and

they

hoped that the people

,

, disgusted with

enraged by

the insolence of the conquerors, would recall them. This

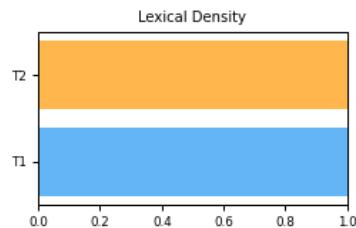
measure,

course,

when others

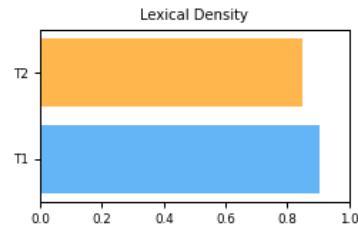
are wanting, is fail, may be  
 good; but it is very bad to have  
 neglected  
 the other remedies all other expedients  
 for that  
 one, for nobody would desire , since you would  
 never wish

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



he believed that he would then find some one you trusted to be able to find someone later  
 to pick him on to restore you. This again either does not  
 up. This may or may not take place, and happen, or,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



if it does, it

is not with	will not be for your security, because that
safety to you, as that defence is known to be	deliverance is of no
cowardly and not to be	avail which does not depend upon yourself;
depended on; and only those defences are	those only are reliable,
good,	

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



certain and durable

,	that depend
which depend only	
	on yourself and your

own ability.

valour.

## CHAPTER XXV

HOW MUCH

WHAT

FORTUNE CAN

DO

EFFECT

IN HUMAN AFFAIRS AND HOW

IT MAY BE OPPOSED

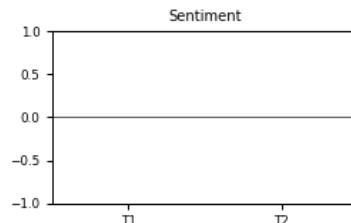
TO WITHSTAND HER

It is not unknown to me how many

have been and are of

men have had, and still have, the

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

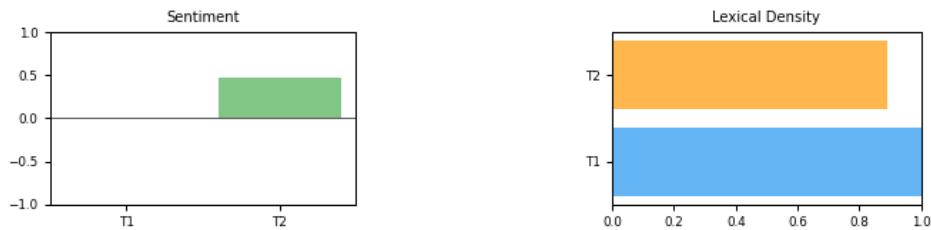


opinion that

worldly events are so

the affairs of the world are in such wise

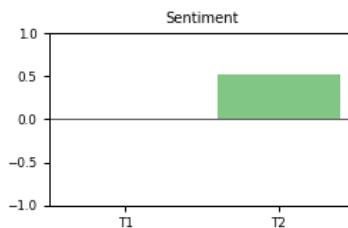
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



governed by fortune and by God, that men

cannot with their wisdom cannot direct  
by their prudence change

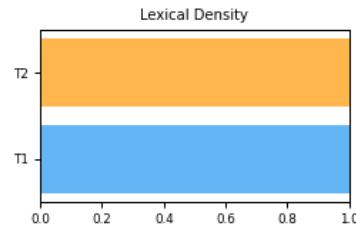
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



them, and that

on the contrary there is no no one can even help them; and because of  
remedy whatever, and for

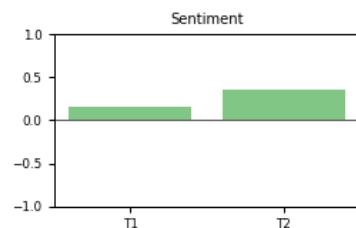
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



this they

may judge it to be useless to toil much about them, but let things be ruled by chance.	would have us believe that it is not necessary to labour much in affairs, but to let chance govern them.
--	---

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



This opinion has  
been more

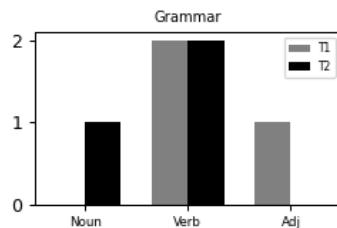
believed in in our	credited
-----------------------	----------

day, from times  
because of  
the great changes

that in affairs which  
have been  
seen, and

are daily seen, beyond every may  
still be seen, every day, beyond all

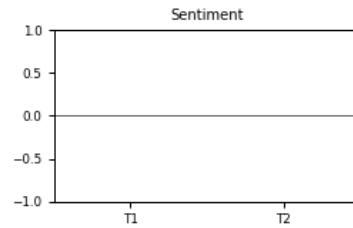
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



human conjecture

. Sometimes  
When I think about them at times, pondering over this,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



I am

partly in some degree

inclined to

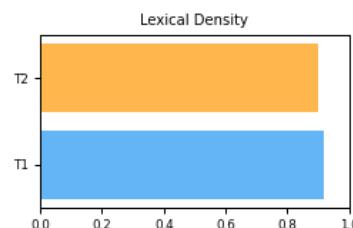
share their

this

opinion. Nevertheless

, that our freewill may not be altogether , not to extinguish our free will, I hold it to  
extinguished, I think it may

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



be true that fortune is the

ruler of half

arbiter of one-half of

our actions

,

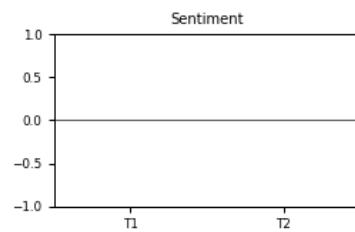
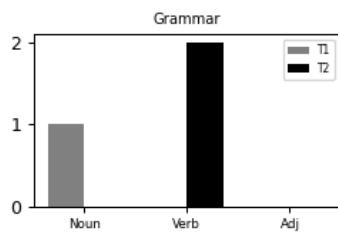
,[1]

but that she

allows

still leaves us to direct

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the other half or

perhaps

a little less

to be

governed by us. I would

[1] Frederick the Great was accustomed to

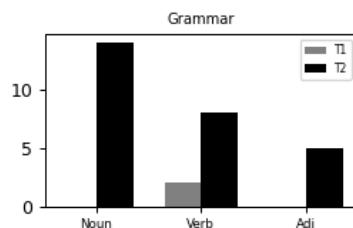
say: "The older one gets the

more convinced one becomes that his

Majesty King Chance does  
 three-quarters of the business of this  
 miserable universe." Sorel's  
 "Eastern Question."

I

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

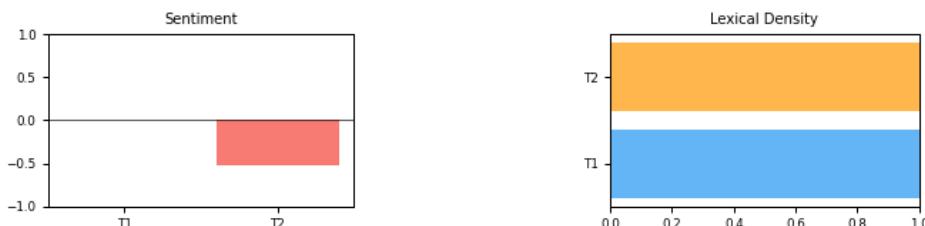


compare her to

an impetuous river that, when  
 turbulent, inundates

one of those raging rivers, which when in  
 flood  
 overflows

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

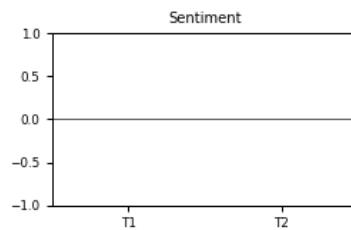


the plains

, ruins , sweeping away  
trees and buildings

, removes , bearing away  
earth from this side and places it on the the soil from place to place; everything  
other; every one

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



flies before  
it

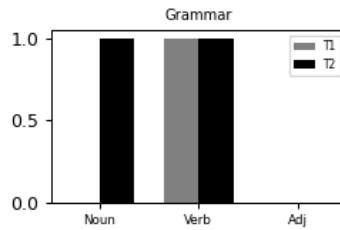
, and everything yields , all yield

to its

fury violence,  
without being able

to oppose in any way to withstand

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



it;

and yet though

it is of

its nature be such, it does not follow

therefore that men, when

the weather becomes fair, shall not make

provision, both with defences

and barriers, in

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



such a

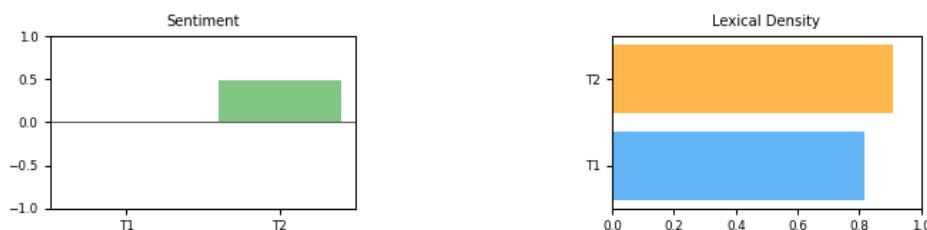
kind, still when it is quiet, men can

manner that, rising again, the waters may

make provision against it by dams and banks,  
 so that when it rises  
 it will either go into a canal or its rush will  
 not be so wild and  
 dangerous.

pass  
 away by canal, and their force be neither so  
 unrestrained nor so  
 dangerous. So

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



It happens

similarly

with fortune

, which

, who

shows her power

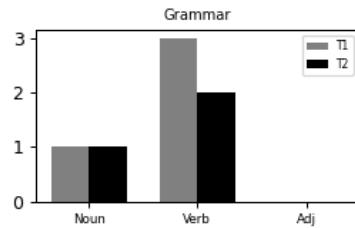
where

no measures have been taken

valour

has not prepared

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to resist her, and

thither she

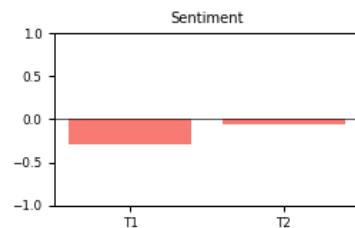
turns her

fury forces

where she knows that

no dams or barriers have been made to hold barriers and defences have not been raised to constrain

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



her.

And if you

regard will consider

Italy, which

has been is

the seat of these changes, and

who which

has given

the impulse their impulse,

to them

, you will see

her it

to be

a an open

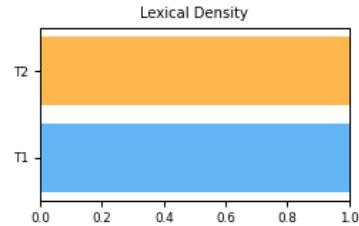
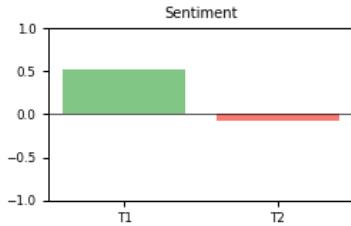
country

without

dams or barriers of any kind. If she

barriers and without any defence. For if it

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



had been

protected

defended

by

proper

measures, like

valour, as are

Germany, Spain, and France

, this inundation

, either

this invasion

would not have

caused

made

the great changes

that

it has

, or

made or it

would not have

happened

come

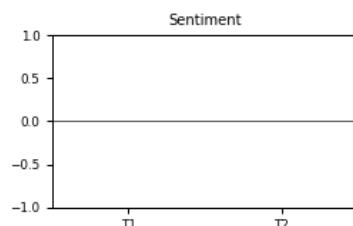
at all

. This must suffice as regards opposition

. And this I consider enough to say

concerning resistance

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



to fortune

in general. But

limiting

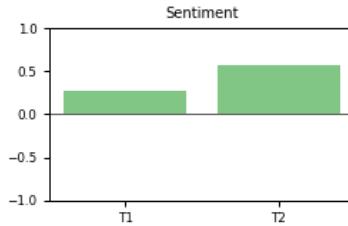
confining

myself more to

particular cases, I would  
point out how one sees a certain prince

the particular, I say that a prince may be  
seen happy

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to-day

fortunate and

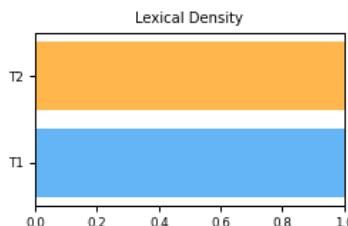
and ruined

to-morrow

ruined, without seeing that he has changed in  
character or otherwise.

without having shown any change  
of disposition or character. This,

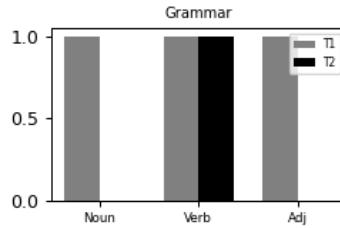
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



I believe

this arises in the first place from the , arises firstly from

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



causes that

we

have

already

been

discussed at length

; that is to say, because , namely, that

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

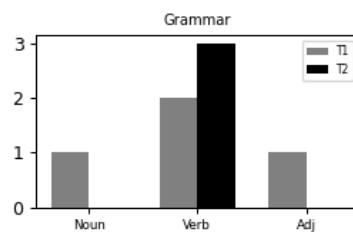


the prince who

bases himself relies  
entirely on fortune is

ruined when fortune varies. I lost when it changes. I  
also believe believe also

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



that he  
is happy whose mode of proceeding accords will be successful who directs his actions  
with according to the spirit  
the needs

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



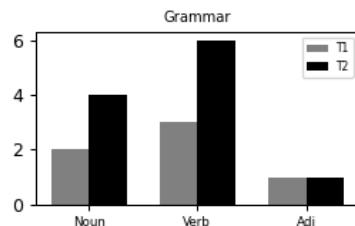
of the times, and

similarly he is unfortunate whose mode of proceeding is opposed

that he whose actions do not accord with the times will not be successful.

Because men are seen, in affairs that lead

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



to the

times. For one sees that men in those things which lead them to the aim that each one has in view,

end which every man has before him,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

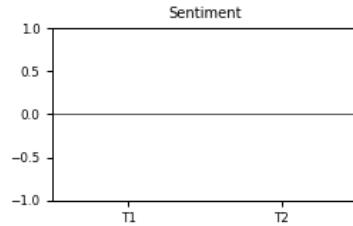


namely,

glory and riches

, proceed in various ways; , to get there by various methods;

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



one with

circumspection, caution,

another with

impetuosity, haste;

one by

violence, force,

another by

cunning, one with skill; one by

patience, another

with the reverse; by its opposite;

and each

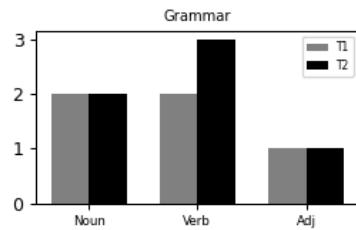
by these diverse ways

one succeeds in reaching the goal by

may arrive at his aim. One sees also

a different method. One can also see of

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



two cautious men

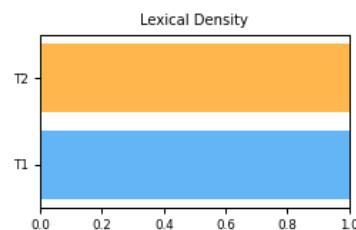
, one of whom

the one attain

succeeds in his designs, and

his end,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

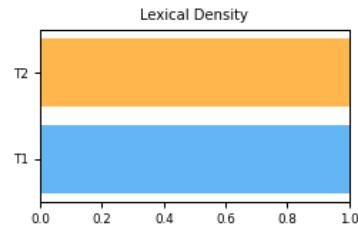


the other

not, and in the same way

fail; and similarly,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



two men

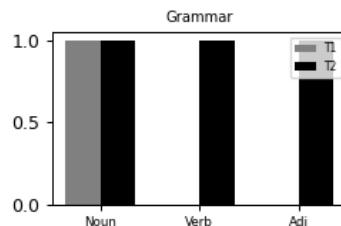
succeed equally

by different

methods,

observances are equally successful, the

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



one being cautious, the other

impetuous

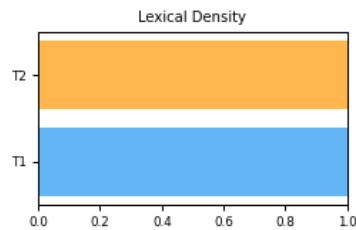
, which arises only from the nature

; all this arises from nothing else than

whether or not they

conform in their methods to the spirit

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



of the times

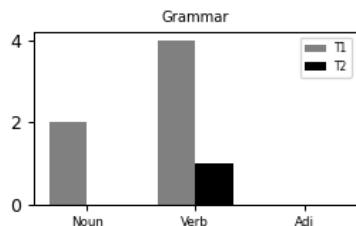
, which does . This follows from

or does not conform to their method of what

proceeding. From this results,

as

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



I have said, that two men

, acting differently, attain

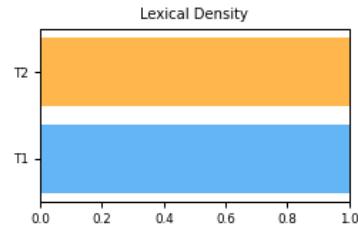
working differently bring about

the same

effect, and of two

others acting in the same way, one arrives at working similarly, one attains his object and his good and not

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the other

does not.

Changes in estate also issue

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



From this

depend also the changes in fortune,

,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

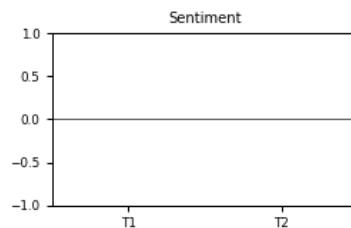


for if

it happens that time and circumstances are ,

favourable

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



to one

who

acts

governs

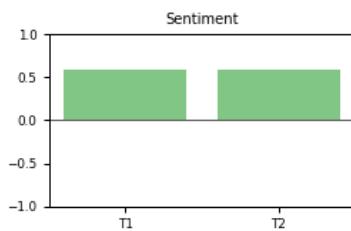
himself

with caution and

prudence he will be successful,

patience, times and affairs converge in such a way that his administration is successful, his fortune is made;

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



but if

time

times and affairs

and circumstances

change he

will be ruined, because

is ruined if

he does not change

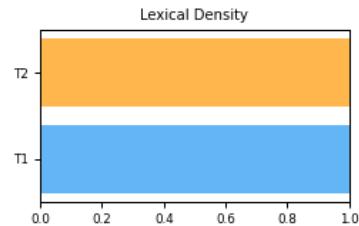
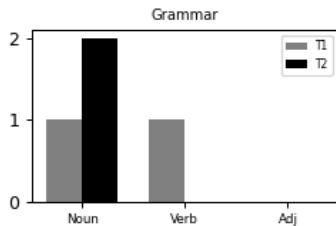
his

mode of proceeding. No

## course

of action. But a

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

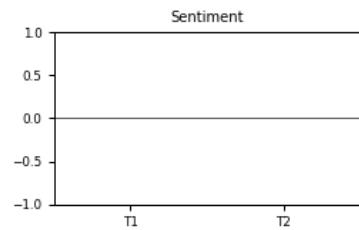
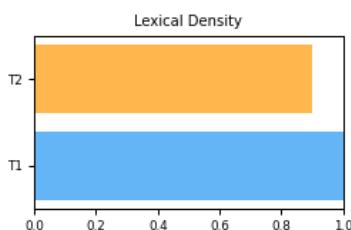


man is

found able to adapt

not often found sufficiently circumspect to  
know how to accommodate

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



himself to

this,

the change, both

either

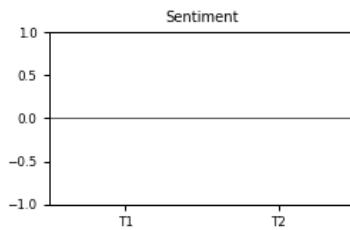
because he cannot deviate from

that to which his nature disposes

what nature inclines him to do, and also

him, or else

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



because having always prospered by

walking

acting

in one

path,

way,

he cannot

persuade himself

be persuaded

that it is well to leave it; and therefore

the cautious man, when it is time to

act suddenly,

turn adventurous,

does not know how

to do

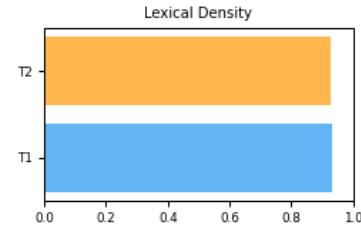
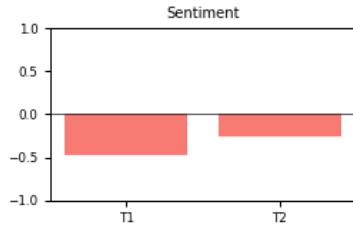
so and is consequently ruined; for if one

it, hence he is ruined;

could change one's  
nature with time and circumstances,

but had he changed his conduct with the  
times

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



fortune would  
never change.

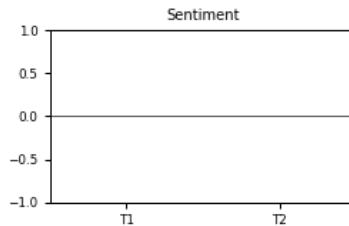
not have  
changed.

Pope  
Julius

II. acted

the Second went to work

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



impetuously in

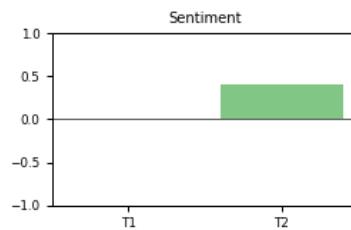
everything he did all his affairs,

and found the times

and

conditions so in conformity with that mode circumstances conform so well to that line of  
of proceeding, action

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



that he

always

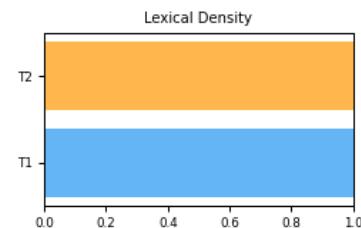
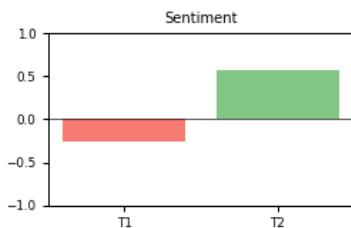
obtained a good result. Consider the first war

met with success. Consider his first

that he made

enterprise

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



against Bologna

while

,

Messer Giovanni Bentivogli

was still living.

being still alive.

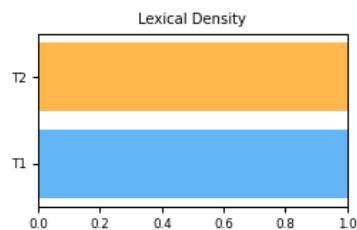
The

Venetians were not

pleased with it,

agreeable to it, nor was

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the King of Spain and

likewise

he

France had objections to this enterprise,

had the enterprise still under discussion with

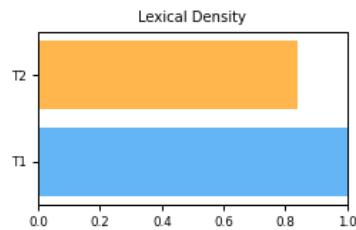
notwithstanding which

the King of France;

nevertheless he personally entered upon the

expedition

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



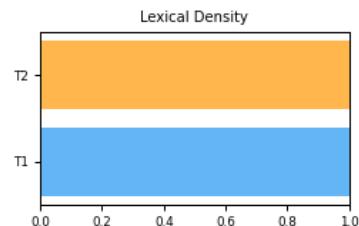
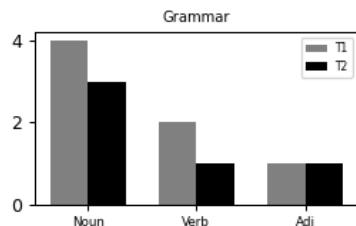
with

his

fierce and impetuous disposition he engaged personally in the expedition. This move caused both

accustomed boldness and energy, a move which made

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



Spain and the Venetians

to halt and hesitate,

stand irresolute and passive,

the latter

through from  
fear, the former

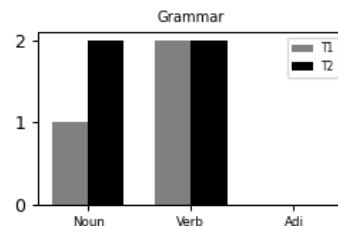
through the from  
desire to

regain the entire recover the  
kingdom of Naples. On the other hand, he

engaged drew after  
with  
him the King of France, because

seeing him make this move that king, having  
observed the movement,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



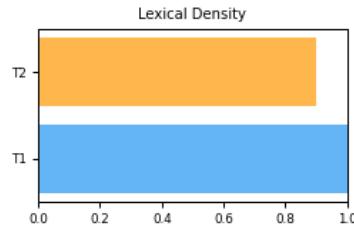
and  
desiring

his friendship in order to put down

to make the Pope his friend so as

to humble

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the Venetians

, that king

, found it impossible to

judged that he could not

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



refuse him

his troops without manifest injury.

. Therefore

Thus Julius by

Julius with

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



his impetuous

move achieved

action accomplished

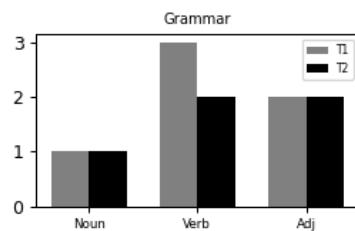
what no other pontiff with

the utmost human prudence would have

simple human wisdom could have done; for

succeeded in doing, because,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



if

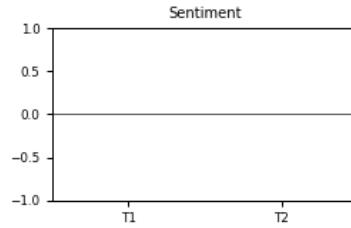
he had waited

till all arrangements had been made

in Rome

until he could get away, with his plans  
arranged

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



and everything

settled before leaving Rome, fixed,  
as any other pontiff would have done

, it , he  
would never have

taken place. For succeeded.  
Because

the king of France would have

found made  
a thousand excuses, and the others would have

inspired him with raised

a

thousand fears. I will

omit leave

his other actions

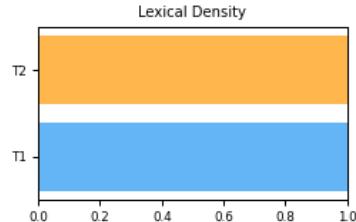
, which alone, as they

were all

of this alike, and they

kind and which

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



all succeeded

well, and , for

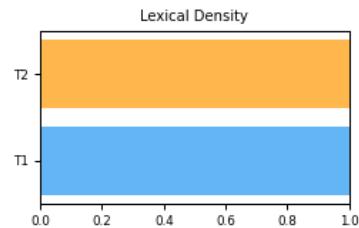
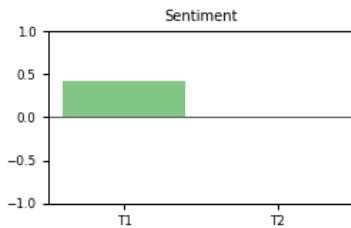
the shortness of his life did

not

suffer him to let him  
experience the contrary

, for had times succeeded ; but if circumstances had arisen which  
in which it was necessary to act with caution, required him to go  
cautiously,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



his ruin would have  
resulted, for followed, because  
he would never have deviated from

these methods those ways  
to which

his nature disposed nature inclined  
him. I conclude

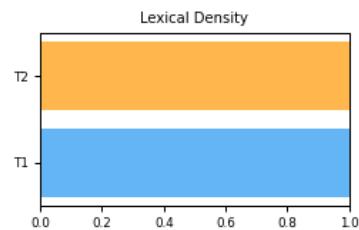
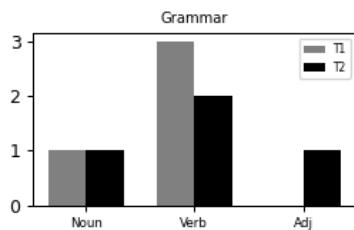
then , therefore

that fortune

varying and men being changeful and mankind

remaining fixed steadfast

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



in their ways

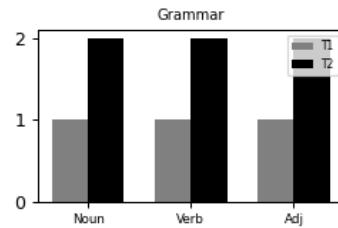
, they are successful ,

so long as

these the two are in agreement men are

ways conform to each other, but successful, but unsuccessful

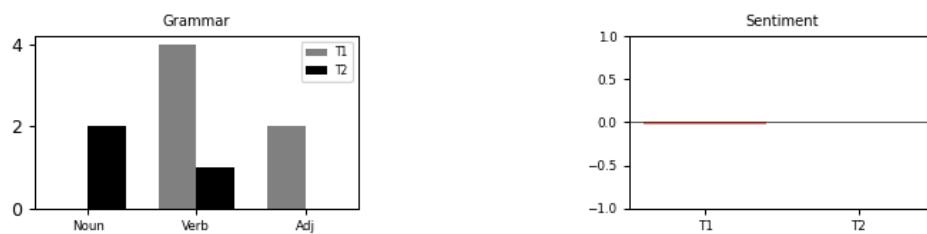
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



when they

are opposed to each other fall out. For my part I consider  
then they are unsuccessful. I certainly think

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



that it is better to be

impetuous adventurous  
than cautious

, for , because  
fortune is a woman, and

it is necessary,

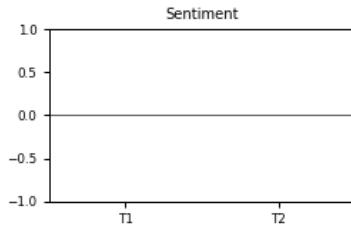
if you wish to

master her, to conquer her by force;

keep her under it is necessary to beat and

ill-use her;

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



and it

can be

is

seen

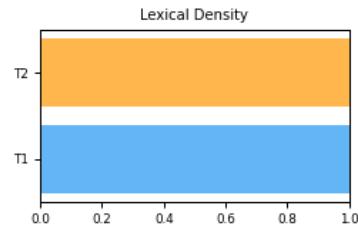
that she

lets herself be overcome by these

allows herself to be mastered by

the adventurous

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



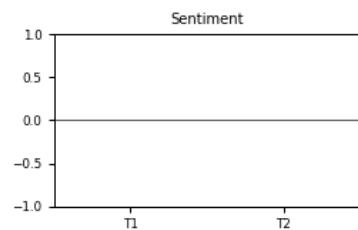
rather than by those who

proceed coldly. And therefore,

go to work more coldly. She

is, therefore, always, woman-

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



like a

woman, she is a friend to the  
young,

lover of young men,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

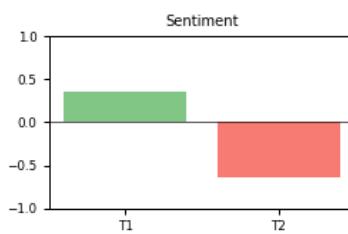


because they are less cautious

, fiercer, and master her with  
greater audacity.

, more violent, and with more audacity  
command her.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



## CHAPTER XXVI

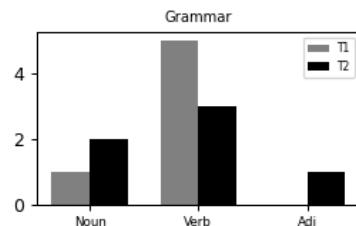
AN

### EXHORTATION TO LIBERATE ITALY FROM THE BARBARIANS

Having now considered all the things we  
have spoken of, and thought

Having carefully considered the subject of  
the above discourses, and  
wondering

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

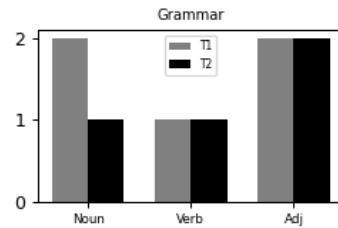


within myself whether

at present the time was not propitious in Italy  
for

the present times were propitious to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

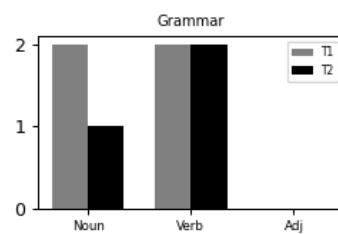


a new prince, and

if there was not a state of things which  
offered

whether there were elements that would give

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



an opportunity to a

prudent and capable man

wise and virtuous one

to introduce a new

system

order of

that

things which

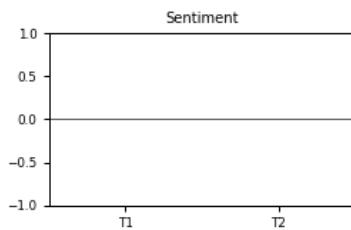
would do honour to

himself him

and good to the

mass of the people, it people of this  
seems country, it appears

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

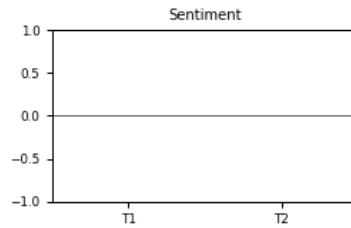


to me that so many things concur to favour a new

ruler prince  
that I

do never knew a  
not know of any

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

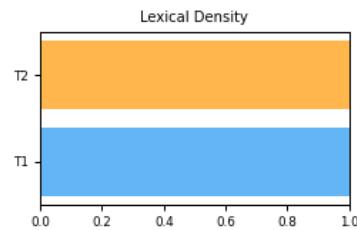
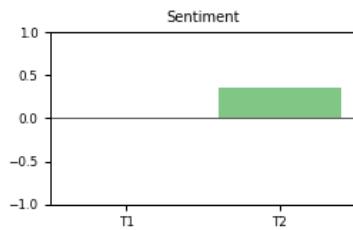


time more

fitting for such an enterprise.

fit than the present.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



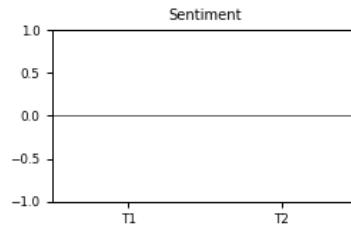
And if, as

I said, it was necessary

in order that the power of Moses should be

displayed

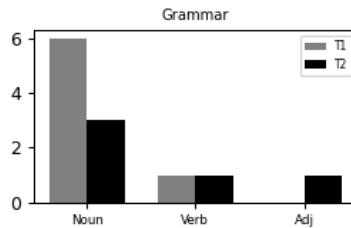
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



that the people of Israel should be

slaves in Egypt, and to captive so as to make manifest the ability of  
give scope for the greatness and courage of Moses;  
Cyrus

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

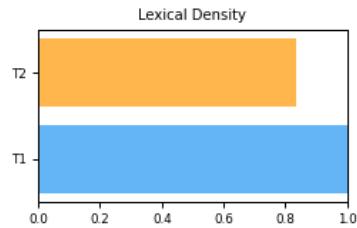


that the Persians

should be oppressed by the Medes

, and to illustrate the pre-eminence of so as to discover the greatness of the  
Theseus soul of Cyrus; and

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



that the Athenians should be dispersed

, so

to illustrate

the capabilities of Theseus: then

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



at the present time,

in order

that the might

to

discover the virtue

of an Italian

genius might be recognised,

spirit,

it

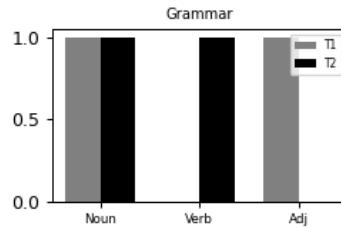
was necessary that Italy should be reduced to

her present condition,

the extremity that she is now in,

and

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



that she should be more enslaved than the Hebrews, more oppressed

than the Persians

, and

,

more scattered than the Athenians; without

a

head, without order, beaten, despoiled

, lacerated, and

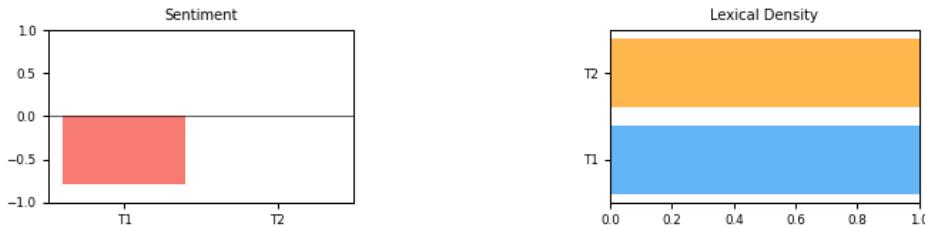
, torn,

overrun, and

that she should have suffered ruin of

to have endured

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



every kind

. And although before

of desolation.

now a spirit has

Although lately some spark may have

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



been shown by

some which gave hope that he might be

one, which made us

appointed

think he was ordained

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



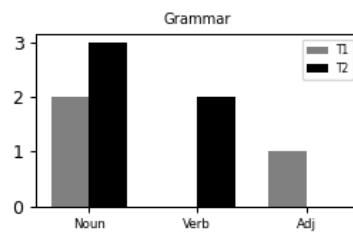
by God for

her redemption, yet at the highest summit

our redemption, nevertheless it was

afterwards seen, in the height

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



of his

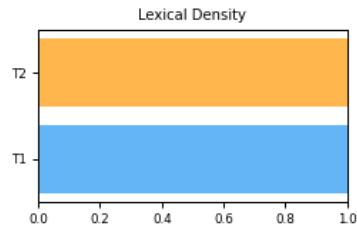
career

he was thrown aside by fortune,

, that fortune rejected

him;

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



so that

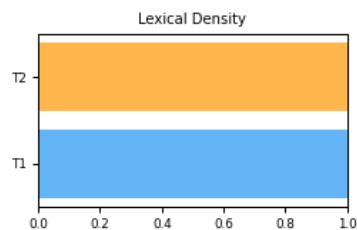
now, almost lifeless,

Italy, left as without life, waits for him who

she awaits one who may

shall yet

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



heal her wounds and put

a stop

an end

to the

rapine and

ravaging and plundering

pillaging

of Lombardy, to the

rapacity and extortion in  
the kingdom

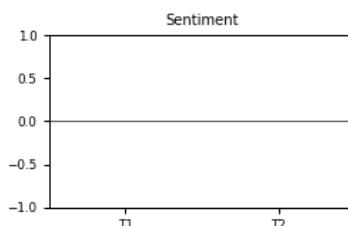
and

in  
Tuscany, and

cure her of  
those sores

which have long been  
festering. Behold

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



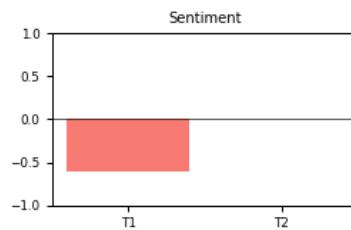
how she  
prays  
God to send  
entreats

some one to redeem  
her from

someone who shall deliver

this barbarous cruelty and insolence. Behold  
her  
these wrongs  
and barbarous insolencies. It is seen also that  
she is

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



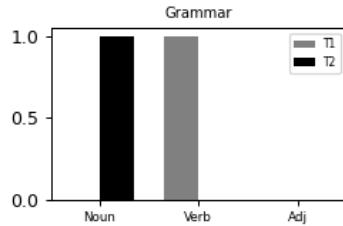
ready and willing to  
follow

any standard  
if only

a banner

there be some one to  
someone will

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



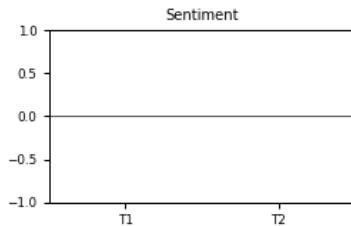
raise it

. There is

nothing now

Nor is there to be seen at present one in  
whom

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



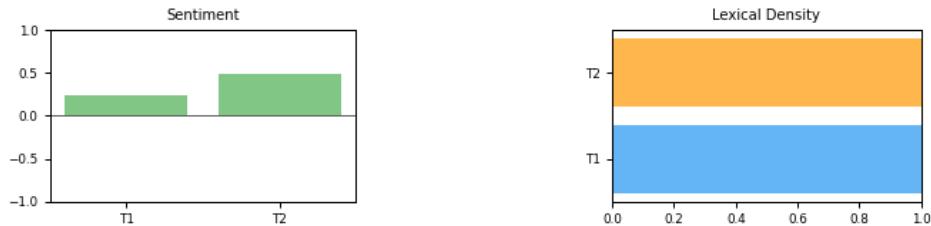
she can

hope for but that

place more hope

than in

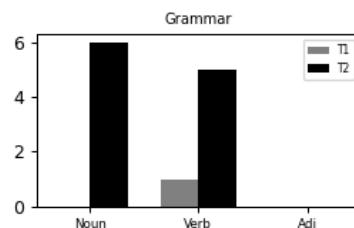
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



your illustrious house

may place , [1] with its valour and fortune,  
itself at favoured by God and by the Church of which  
it is now the chief, and  
which could be made

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the head of this redemption

, being by its power and fortune . This will not be  
so exalted, and being favoured by God and difficult  
the Church, whose leadership  
it now occupies. Nor will this be very

difficult to you,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



if you

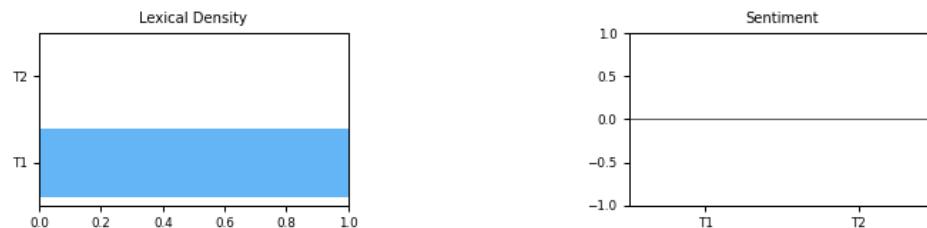
call to will recall to yourself  
mind

the actions and lives of the men I have named. And although

those

men were rare and marvellous,

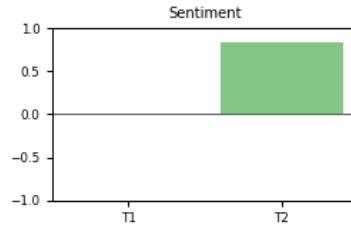
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



they were

none the less great and wonderful men, yet  
they were

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



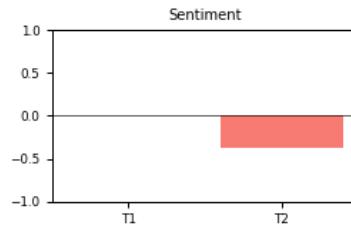
men, and  
had each each one  
of them

less occasion had no more opportunity  
than the present

, offers,  
for their

enterprise was not enterprises were neither more just nor easier  
juster

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



than this

, nor easier,

nor was God more their friend than He is

yours

. Here is a just cause; for

[1] Giuliano de Medici. He had just been

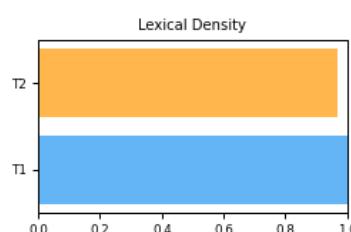
created a cardinal by Leo X.

In 1523 Giuliano was elected Pope, and took

the title of Clement VII.

With us there is great justice, because

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



that war is just which is necessary;

and

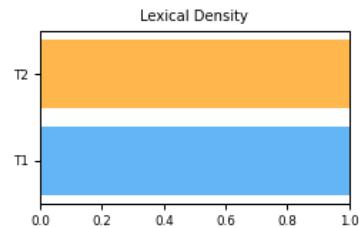
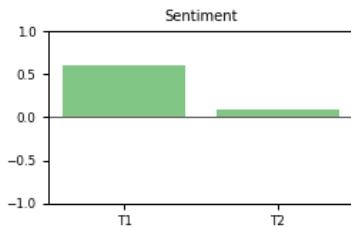
those

arms are

merciful where no hope exists save

hallowed when there is no other hope but

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



in them. Here

there

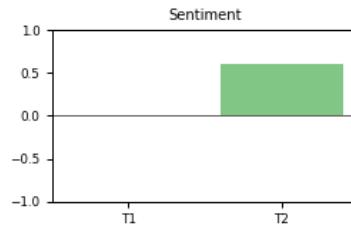
is the greatest willingness

, nor can there

, and where the willingness

is great the difficulties cannot

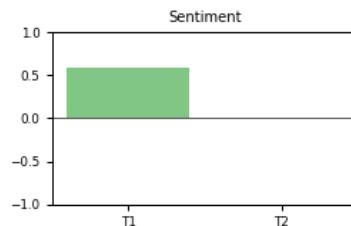
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



be great

difficulty where if you will only follow those  
there is great willingness, provided that the men to  
measures are adopted of  
those

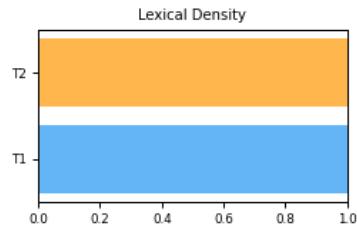
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



whom I have

set before you as examples. Besides this, directed your attention. Further than this,  
unexampled how  
wonders extraordinarily the ways of God

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

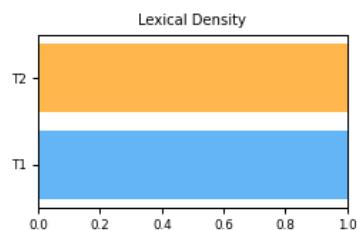


have been

seen here performed by God,

manifested beyond example:

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the sea

has been opened,

is divided,

a cloud has

shown you the road,

led the way,

the rock has

given

poured

forth water

, manna , it

has rained

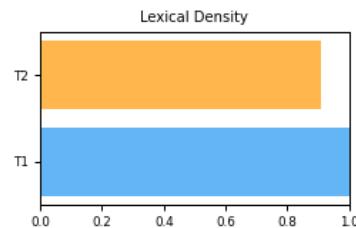
, and manna,

everything has contributed to your greatness

, the ; you ought to do the rest. God is not willing

remainder must be done by you. God will not to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



do everything

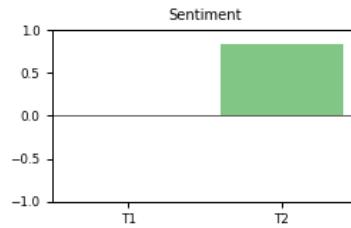
, in order , and thus take away our free will and that

share of glory

which belongs to us.

And it is

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



not to

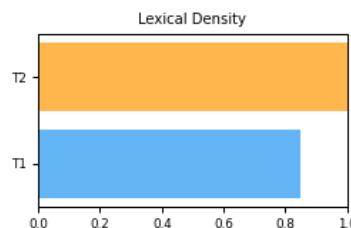
deprive us of freewill and the portion of the

be wondered at if

glory that falls

to our lot. It is no marvel that

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



none of the

before-mentioned

above-named

Italians

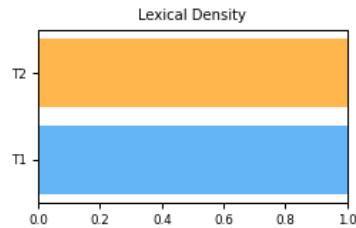
have

done that which it is to be hoped

been able to accomplish all that is expected

from

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



your illustrious house

may do;

;

and if in so many revolutions in Italy and

in

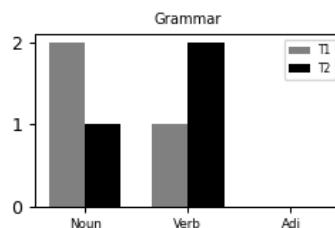
so many

warlike operations,

campaigns, it has always appeared

it always seems

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



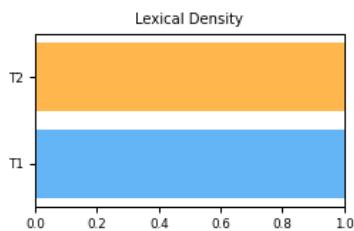
as if

the military capacity were extinct, this is

military virtue were exhausted,

this has happened

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

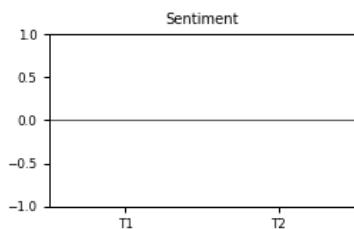


because the

ancient methods were

old order of things was

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



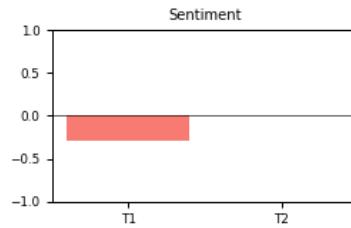
not good, and

no one has arisen

none of us have known

who knew

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

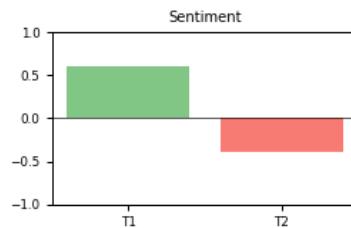


how to

discover new ones. Nothing does so much  
honour to a  
newly-risen man than the

find a new one. And nothing honours a man  
more than to establish

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

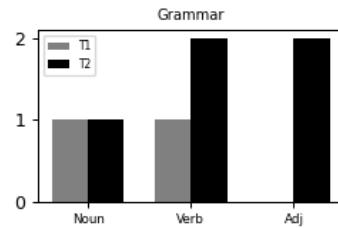


new laws and

measures which he introduces.  
These

new ordinances when he himself was  
newly risen. Such

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

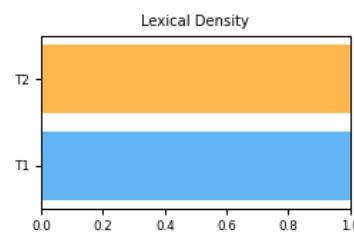


things, when they are well

based and have greatness in them,  
render

founded and dignified will  
make

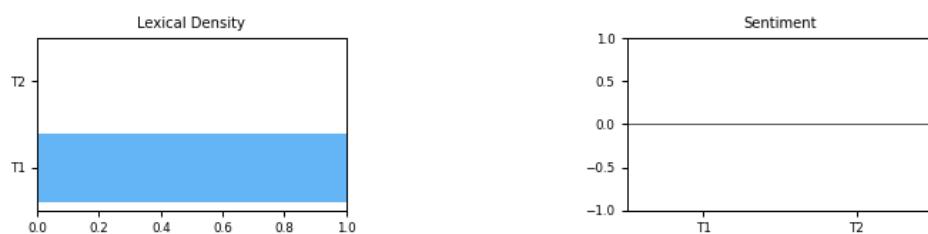
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



him revered and admired, and

there is not lacking scope

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



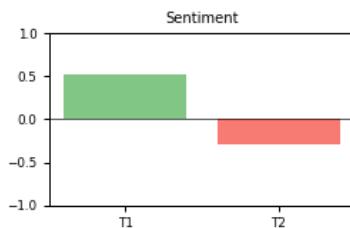
in Italy

for the introduction of every kind.

there are not wanting

opportunities to bring such into use in every  
form.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



Here there is great

virtue

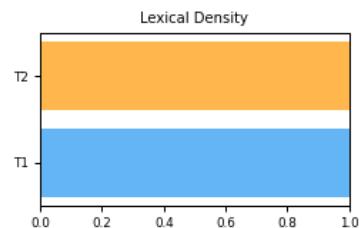
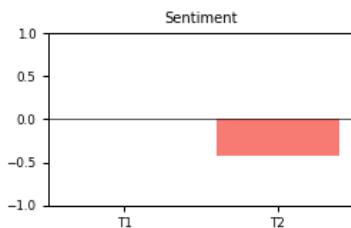
valour

in the

members, if it were not wanting

limbs whilst it fails

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



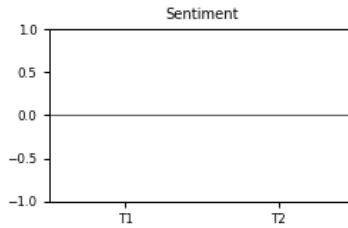
in the

heads. Look how in

head.

Look attentively at the

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



duels and

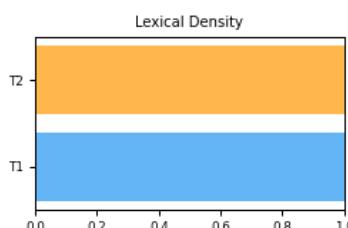
in

the hand-to-hand combats, how

councils of a few

superior

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the Italians are

superior

in strength, dexterity,  
and  
intelligence.

subtlety.

But when it comes to armies they

make a poor show; do not bear comparison, and this springs which proceeds

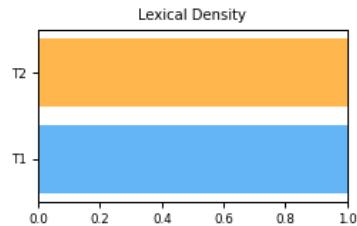
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



entirely from the  
weakness insufficiency  
of the leaders

, for those , since those who are  
that know capable

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



are not obedient, and

every one thinks that he knows, there

being hitherto nobody who has raised himself

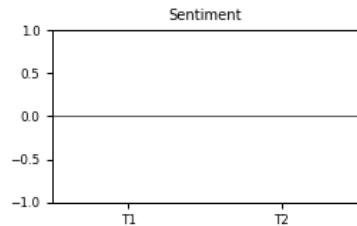
so high both

each one seems to himself to know, there

having never been any one so distinguished

above the rest, either

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



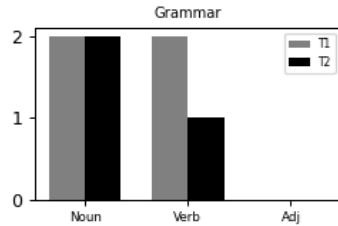
by valour

and

fortune as to make the others yield.

or fortune, that others would yield to him.

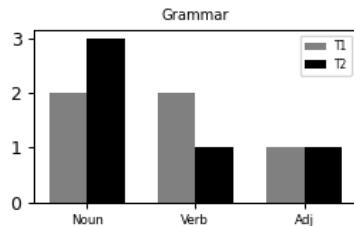
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



Hence it

comes about that in all is that for  
this time, in all the wars waged during the so long a time, and during so much fighting  
last in the past

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



twenty years, whenever  
there has been an army

entirely wholly  
Italian it has always

been a failure, given a

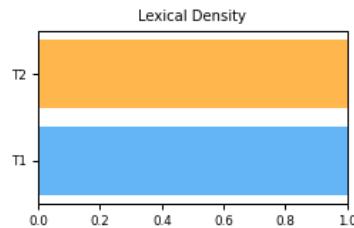
as witness first Taro, then Alexandria,

poor account of itself; the first witness to this

is Il Taro,

afterwards Allesandria,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



Capua, Genoa, Vaila, Bologna

, Mestri.[2]

and Mestri. If

[2] The battles of Il Taro, 1495; Alessandria,

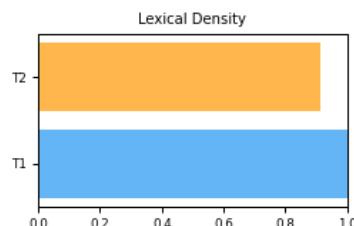
1499; Capua, 1501;

Genoa, 1507; Vaila, 1509; Bologna, 1511;

Mestri, 1513.

If, therefore,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



your illustrious house

, therefore,

wishes to follow

those great

these remarkable

men who

have

redeemed their

countries,

country,

it is

necessary

before all things

necessary, as the

,

as a

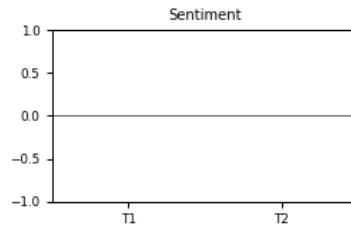
true foundation

of every undertaking, to provide

for every enterprise, to be provided

yourself

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

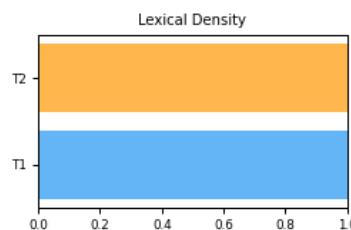


with your own forces

, for you cannot have

, because there can be no

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



more faithful

, or

, truer, or

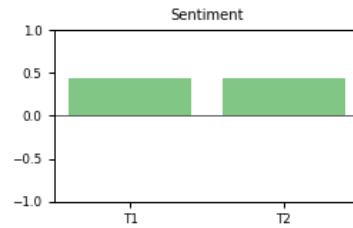
truer and

better soldiers. And although

each one of them may be good,

singly they are good, altogether

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



they will

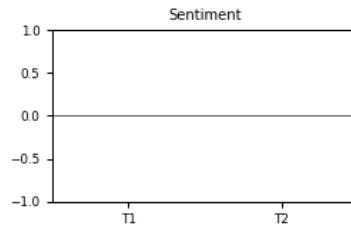
together become  
be  
much

better when they

, and honoured and supported ,  
honoured

, and maintained at his expense. Therefore

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



It is

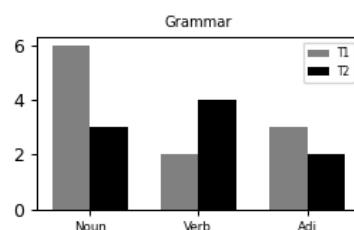
therefore

necessary to

prepare such forces in order to be able with  
Italian  
prowess to defend the country from  
foreigners.

be prepared with such arms, so that you can  
be defended  
against foreigners by Italian valour.

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



And although

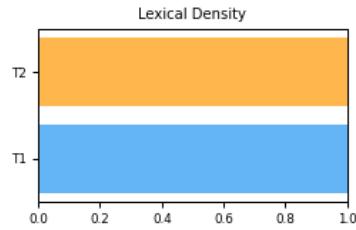
both the

Swiss and Spanish infantry

are deemed terrible, none the less they  
each have their defects, so that

may be considered very  
formidable, nevertheless there is a defect in  
both, by reason of which

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



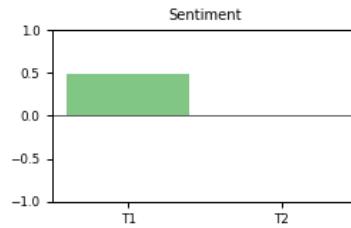
a third order

might  
would  
not only

be able to  
oppose  
them, but

be confident of overcoming  
might be  
relied upon to overthrow

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



them. For the Spaniards cannot

sustain the attack of

resist

cavalry, and the

Swiss have to fear infantry

Switzers are afraid of infantry whenever they

which meets them with resolution equal to

encounter them in

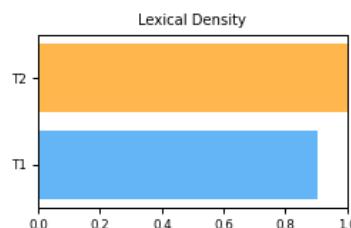
their own. From which it has

close combat. Owing to this, as has been and

resulted, as will

may again

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Grammar.



be seen

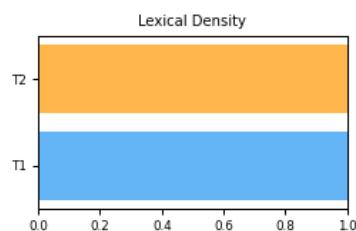
by experience, that

,

the Spaniards

cannot sustain the attack of are unable to resist

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



## French cavalry, and the

Swiss  
are overthrown  
by Spanish infantry. And although a complete

example of the latter proof of this  
has not been seen, yet an instance was latter cannot be shown, nevertheless there  
furnished in was some evidence of it at

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.



the battle of  
Ravenna

, where , when  
the Spanish infantry

attacked the were confronted by  
German battalions

, , who follow  
which observe

the same

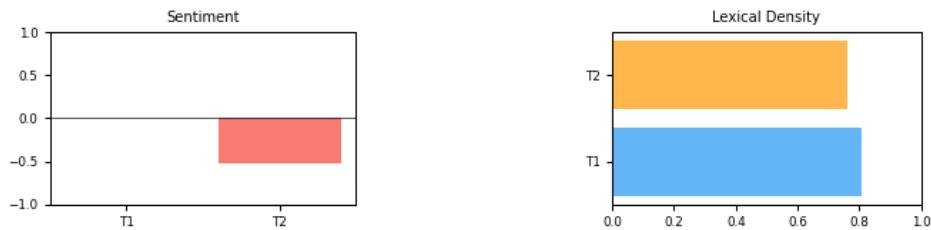
order tactics  
as the Swiss

. ; when

The Spaniards

, through their , by agility of body and with the aid of their  
bodily agility and aided by their bucklers, shields, got in  
had entered between and under the pikes of the Germans and stood out  
under their pikes and were in a position of danger, able

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



to attack

them safely without

,

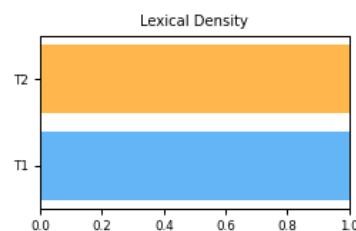
while

the Germans

being able to defend themselves;

stood helpless,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



and if the cavalry had not

charged them they

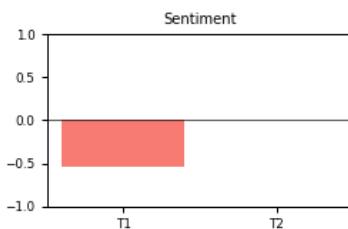
dashed

up, all

would have

utterly destroyed them. Knowing therefore been over with them. It is possible, therefore, knowing

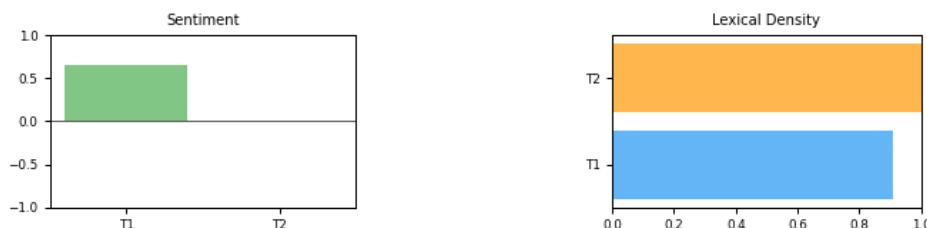
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



the defects of both these

kinds of infantry, a third kind can be infantries, to invent a new one, created which can which will

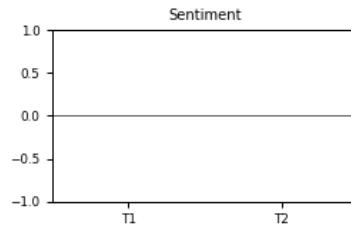
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



resist cavalry and

not be afraid of infantry; this

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Lexical Density. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

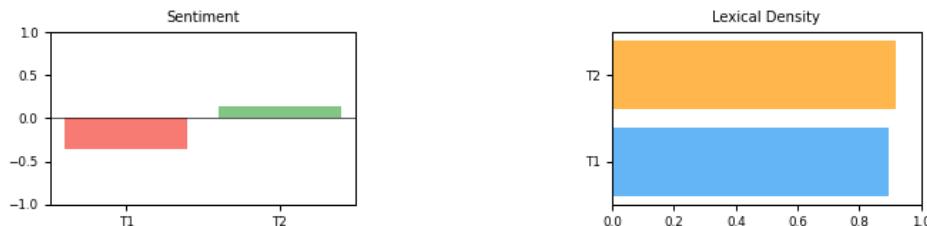


need not

fear infantry, and this  
will be done not by the creation of armies but  
by a change of system.

create a new order of arms, but a variation  
upon the old.

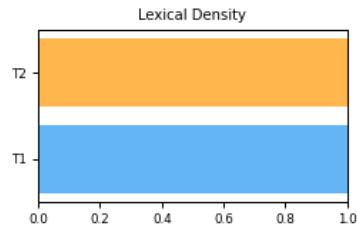
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



And these are the

things which, when newly introduced, give kind of improvements which confer

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



reputation

and

grandeur to

power upon

a new prince. This opportunity

must not, therefore,

, therefore, ought not to

be allowed to pass, for letting Italy at

length

last

see her liberator

. I

appear. Nor can one

cannot

express the love with which he would be received in all those

provinces which have suffered

under

so much from

these foreign

invasions, scourings,  
with what  
thirst for

vengeance, revenge,  
with what

steadfast stubborn  
faith, with what

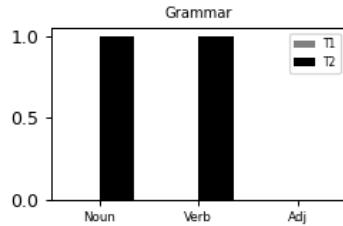
love, devotion,  
with  
what

grateful tears. What

doors door  
would be closed

against to him? Who would refuse obedience to

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

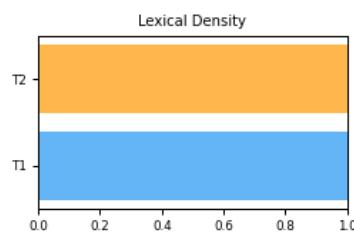


him? What

people would refuse him obedience? What  
envy could oppose

envy would hinder

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



him? What

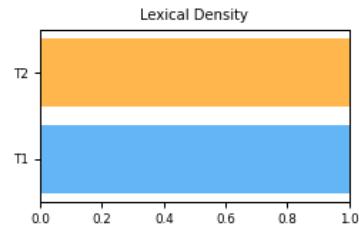
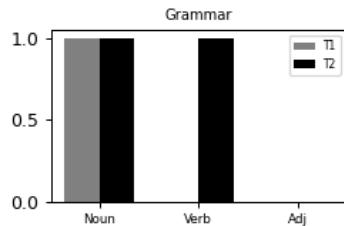
Italian would

rebel against him?

refuse him homage? To

all of us

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.

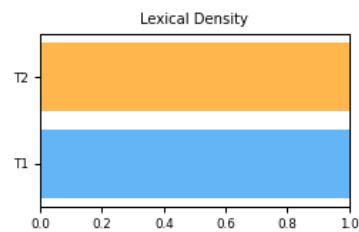
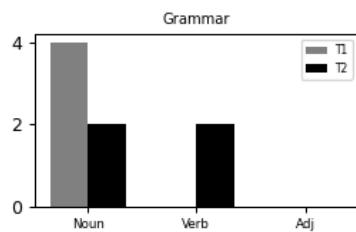


This barbarous

domination stinks in  
the nostrils of every one. May

dominion stinks. Let, therefore,

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



your illustrious house

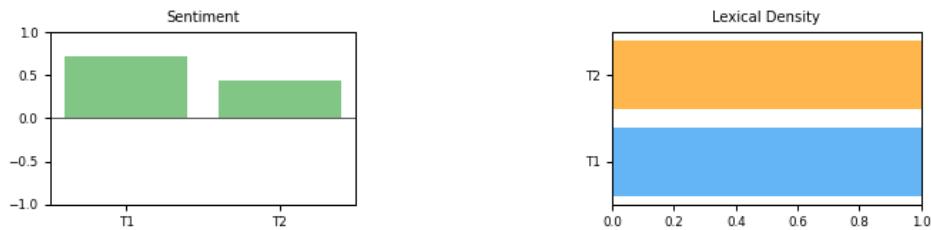
therefore assume  
this task

take up this charge  
with that courage and

with that courage and

those hopes which are inspired by a  
just cause,  
hope with  
which all just enterprises are undertaken,

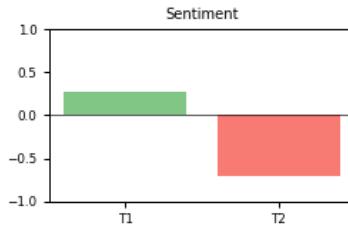
**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



so that under its  
banner our fatherland standard  
our native country  
may be  
raised up, ennobled,  
and under its auspices  
may  
be verified that saying of Petrarch  
:  
Valour against fell wrath Virtu contro al Furore  
Will take up arms; and be the combat Prendera l'arme, e fia il combatter corto:  
quickly sped! Che l'antico valore  
For, sure, the ancient worth, Negli italici cuor non e ancor morto.

That in Italians stirs the heart,  
 Virtue against fury shall advance the fight,  
 And it i' th' combat soon shall put to  
 flight:  
 For the old Roman valour

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Sentiment. The feature of greatest convergence is Lexical Density.



is not  
 yet dead.  
 dead,  
 Nor in th' Italians' breasts extinguished.

Edward Dacre, 1640

**NLP Analysis:** The feature of greatest divergence is Grammar. The feature of greatest convergence is Sentiment.

